

Abbey - Ashman
Two Colonial and Pioneering Families of North America

Volume Two
The Alden Ancestors

Peter Abbey and Hannah (Alden) Abbey
1759 – 1867

Their Generation of the Abbey Family
and
Six Generations of her Alden Ancestors and Allied Families
Back to the Mayflower and Origins in England.

Margaret Abbey (Ashman) Shannon

2023 Albuquerque, New Mexico

Abbey-Ashman: Two Colonial and Pioneering Families of North America Vol. 2
© 2023 by Margaret Abbey Ashman Shannon

LOC #2018908034

Hardback
ISBN: 9781949086829
Amazon ISBN: 9798369911587

Paperback
ISBN: 9781949086836
Amazon ISBN: 9798369909171

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the copyright owner.

Copper Ave Press
Aisle 929 Books

Albuquerque, New Mexico

Dedication

"If you don't recount your family history, it will be lost. Honor your own stories and tell them too. The tales may not seem very important, but they are what binds families and makes each of us who we are. " - Madeleine Engle

*To forget one's ancestors is to be a brook without a source,
a tree without a root. - Chinese Proverb*

In loving memory of my parents
Alfred and Julia (Abbey) Ashman

And in honor of my grandchildren
Wyatt, Hannah, Kate, Zoë and Elle

*Honor the history, remember the tales of these ancestors,
they are your source, your roots.*

Preface

There was always a library in my parents' home. I often turned the pages of two volumes, both published in 1916: *The Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, and *The Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*. I was fascinated by the lives of my ancestors. Over the years, my interest in genealogy continued to grow, and not long ago, I had my DNA tested. What a world opened up! I met distant cousins online through genealogical websites. I visited Ireland for my Ashman ancestors in 2002 and again in 2018. I visited Enfield, Connecticut in 2012 to see the statue of Thomas Abbey and again in 2019 to research these first two volumes. I also traveled through Massachusetts, Pennsylvania and New York researching this book as well as Volume Three – more on that to come. The impetus to write a book about my ancestors centered around sharing their history and stories with my grandchildren.

This second volume was, at first, part of Volume One. I soon realized I was working with a nearly 700-page book and divided it at this generation of my Abbey ancestors, the fifth in America, Peter and Hannah (Alden) Abbey. In reviewing and formatting work done in 2022, I have updated several genealogies and ancestor stories as new information was published. I have also added images and context material to enhance their stories.

Volume One was entered in the 2022 New Mexico Press Women's Communication Contest and won first place in the Nonfiction Book for Adult Readers - Biography or History and went on to win an Honorable Mention in the same category in the 2022 National Press Women's Communication Contest.

Peter and Hannah (Alden) Abbey are six generations from her/our Mayflower ancestors, who arrived in Massachusetts in 1620, some fifteen years prior to our Abbe immigrant ancestor, John Abbe, Peter's great-great-grandfather.

I plan to continue my chronicles. Volume Three will follow four generations of Abbeys from New England to New York State, then to the Great Western Reserve of Connecticut (Ohio), and beyond. Some eventually settled in California, Mexico and Arizona; military service took others around the globe. The women who married the Abbey men had origins in Northern Ireland, Pennsylvania and Maryland. Volume Four will cover my paternal Ashman ancestors, who lived primarily in California. One day, I hope to also publish a fifth volume with a focus on my parents, including stories and photographs from their lives traveling around the world.

Peter's ancestry from 1475 England to his father Capt. Thomas Abbey, Revolutionary War hero is covered in Volume One, available on Amazon.com.

I offer this volume as a piece of my history and yours; John and Priscilla Alden have more descendants in America (over one million) than any other two people!

Structure

As in Volume One, the material is presented in a common genealogical pattern. Only the Abbe/Abbey generation of Part One, Chapter One is numbered in Register Style – with an Arabic Number in front of the next generation (i.e. 6. for Seth Alden Abbey).

Part Two consists of seven chapters which trace our Alden ancestors back six generations to the *Mayflower*. These chapters each contain one generation of Alden ancestors as well as vast branches of the ancestral lines of the Allied families of that generation – the women who married into the Alden/Allied Family. Ancestral lines, such as these, going back in time, traditionally use a different numbering system (Ahnentafel). To avoid confusion using both patterns within the same book, the ancestors of the Alden and Allied families are listed in bold type, followed by each generation's spouse, children and finally, facts and stories of their lives.

I was fortunate to have a solid outline to follow in the *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, and in the “Silver books” covering *Mayflower* passengers, specifically John Alden, but the Allied families in between have provided challenges along with some fascinating stories! I have done my best to sort through information on line, in libraries and in the places they lived.

My information comes from documented primary and secondary sources. I have indicated which anecdotal excerpts may be hearsay only. Included are extensive in-text sources and footnotes, Wills and Inventories illustrate details about these ancestors. Images without source citations are either my own photographs, or are copyright free images from commons.wikimedia.org.

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS USED

b. born

d. died

m. married

bapt. baptized

bur. buried

abt. about

bef. before

ca. circa/about

unm. unmarried

Days: day/month/year

In Genealogical listings: Place precedes Date; Births and Deaths precede Marriage(s).

Currency in the British sterling system: 12p/d = one shilling; 20s (shillings) = one pound £.

Thanks to many who made this endeavor possible:

Among others, The Albuquerque Genealogical Society and the Writing and Publishing Special Interest Group; The *Mayflower* Society and Albuquerque representative Carl Malone; the Albuquerque Library System, for providing a wealth of genealogical material; the research librarians, especially Lisa Kendrick.

Ancestry.com, FamilySearch.org., AmericanAncestors.org, and other online genealogy sites; The New England Historic and Geological Society and Alden Kindred of America, as well as other local libraries and their individual experts; local historical societies, museums and their knowledgeable staffs.

Other helpful contributors I would like to thank are: Mara French, JT and Linda Bullock, Stephen Hinch, Nancy Bernard and Susan Anderson.

Thanks to my proof readers: Thomas Skinner, Sheri (Heath) Bradshaw, Suzy (Killebrew) Duncan, Ginger Glasser, Bobbie de los Santos, Mike Krueger and Elizabeth (Luedemann) Fitzgerald, all of whom helped edit this book through their individual eyes, and provided patient encouragement.

I walked through rain-soaked cemeteries and historic homes that are centuries old and lovingly preserved for posterity. I loved every minute of it.

The isolation from the world during Covid 19's most dangerous days gave me time to dedicate to my research and to writing. Following the publication of Volume One at the end of 2021, I turned to editing and formatting this volume. Mary P. MacArthur, *The Software Lady* and her course in Microsoft Word "Styles" was invaluable. Rose Marie Kern continued in her role as Publisher; I couldn't have done it without her. Our sweet Airedale Maggie passed away unexpectedly in 2021 and Mr. Oliver, a Lakeland Terrier, came into our home in January 2022, at 4 months of age. Sophie, our Lab crossed the rainbow bridge, just before Christmas 2022, and Ollie is now solely responsible for dropping a leash at my feet.

Any errors are my own and not those of any of the many helpful souls I met along this journey. I will always welcome information and input from you the reader.

And most importantly, apologies to my husband, Richard. There is still no fold-out family tree. It would have stretched across the sea and back, which is how much I love you.

Margaret A. (Molly) Shannon

Table of Contents

Section One

Generation V of the Abbe/Abbey Family in America

15	<i>Chapter One Peter Abbey & Hannah (Alden) Abbey (1769 – 1851)</i>
16	Maps: Enfield, CT to Watertown, NY to Cleveland, OH
17	Peter Abbey & Hannah (Alden) Abbey (1769 – 1851)
26	History and Inventions (1769-1851)
30	The Lives and Roles of Women (1769-1851)

Section Two

The Ancestors of Hannah (Alden) Abbey Six Generations of the Alden Ancestral Line

35	<i>Chapter Two Generation VI of Aldens in America</i>
36	Tiptoeing Through the Tombstones
37	Col. Amos Alden and Hannah (Bush) Alden (1745-1826)
41	Joshua and Experience (French) Bush (1711-1793)
43	French Family Ancestry
50	Visiting the French-Andrews House
55	Topsfield, Massachusetts
55	Keyes Family Ancestry
58	Swett Family Ancestry
60	French Family Ancestry Continued
66	French Ancestry in England
71	Riddlesdale Family Ancestry
75	Saint Mary's Church, Boxford
77	French Ancestry Continued
78	Warren Family Ancestry
79	French Ancestry Concluded
80	Bush Ancestry Continued
83	Kibbe Family Ancestry
89	Cook-Birdsall Family Ancestry
95	Birdsall Ancestry Continued
99	Kempe Family Ancestry
100	Kibbe Ancestry Continued/Concluded
104	Bush Ancestry Continued
106	Lamb Family Ancestry
110	Chapin Family Ancestry

113	Lamb Ancestry Concluded
122	Bush Ancestry Continued
126	Sanders/Saunders Family Ancestry
128	Bush Ancestry Concluded
135	<i>Chapter Three Generation V of Aldens in America</i>
136	Maps: Plymouth Colony & Rhode Island
137	Jonathan and Experience (Hayward) Alden (1721-1809)
140	Hayward Family Ancestry
142	Harvey Family Ancestry
147	Andrews Family Ancestry
148	Harvey Ancestry Continued
153	Hucker Family Ancestry
154	Hayward Ancestry Continued
156	Crossman Family Ancestry
163/164	Crossman Antiques & Taunton, Massachusetts
164	Kingsbury Family Ancestry
172	Joseph Kingsbury's Brothers
173	Kingsbury Ancestry Concluded
176	Crossman Ancestry Concluded
179	Hayward Family Ancestry Continued
181	Willis Family Ancestry
184	Hodgkins Family Ancestry
185	Hayward Ancestry Continued
190	Towne Family Ancestry
193	<i>Chapter Four Generation IV of Aldens in America</i>
194	Scolecite Crystal & Map: Northowran, Halifax, Yorkshire, England
195	Eleazar Alden and Martha (Shaw) Alden (1694-1773)
199	Shaw Family Ancestry
201	Whitmarsh Family Ancestry
206	Harding Family Ancestry
210	Shaw Ancestry Continued
212	Phillips Family Ancestry
216	Jewson-Kipping Family Ancestry
217	Shaw Ancestry Continued
223	Best-Swift Family Ancestry including Redenbeaugh & Ingle
227	Shaw Ancestry Continued
229	Longbotham-Mawd Ancestry
231	Shaw Ancestry Continued (1538-1575)

231	Mason Family Ancestry
233	Shaw Ancestry Concluded (1518-1545)
235	<i>Chapter Five Generation III of Aldens in America</i>
236	Leiden, the Netherlands
237	Deacon Joseph and Hannah (Dunham) Alden (1668-1747)
239	Dunham Family Ancestry
248	Baillou Family Ancestry
249	<i>Chapter Six Generation II of Aldens in America</i>
250	Map: Plymouth Colony
251	Joseph and Mary Rebecca (Simmons) Alden Sr. (1627-1697)
256	Simmons Family Ancestry (1604-1691)
261	<i>Chapter Seven Generation I of Aldens in America</i>
262	The Mayflower
263	John and Priscilla (Mullins) Alden (1598-1687)
286	Visiting the Alden House Historic Site (See also 276 for First Site)
291	Mullins Family Ancestry
299	<i>Ending Comments</i>
301	<i>Appendix 1- Lineage Societies</i>
302	Mayflower Society
304	Colonial Dames of the 17th Century
305	Daughters of the American Revolution
307	<i>Appendix 2 - Updates to Volume One – The American Colonists</i>
	National Press Women's Awards for Volume One; updates to Ebenezer and Samuel Terry; photo of St. Dunstan, Stephney, London and John Vassall's Will; Llandaff, Wales for Miles Morgan.
313	<i>Index</i>

Part I

Chapter One

The Fifth Generation of the Abbe/Abbey Family in America

Peter and Hannah (Alden) Abbey

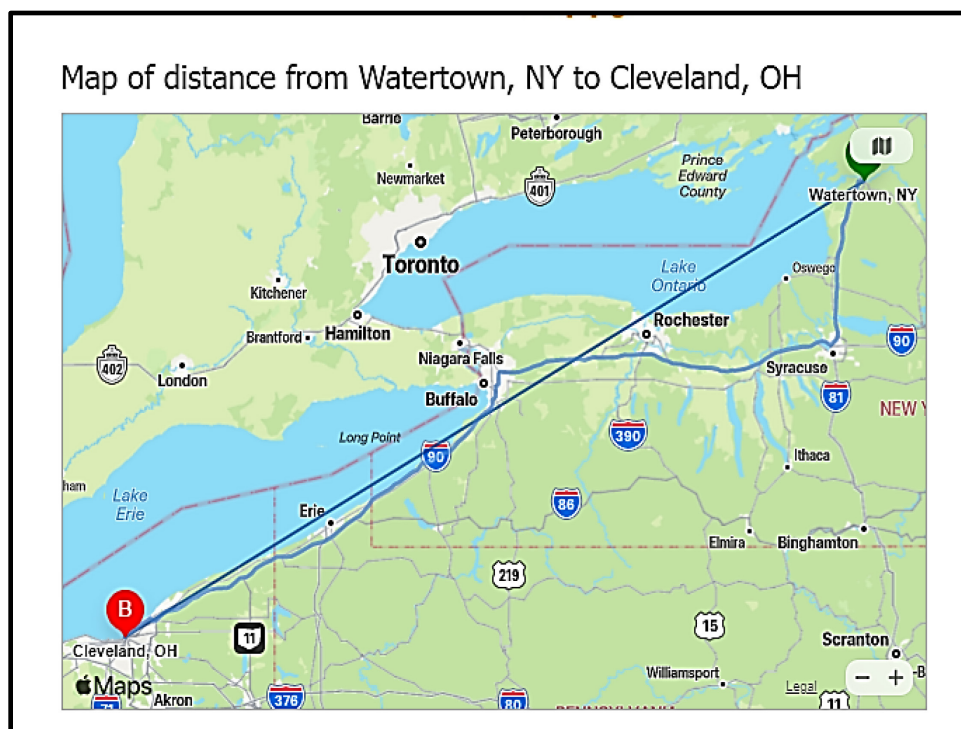
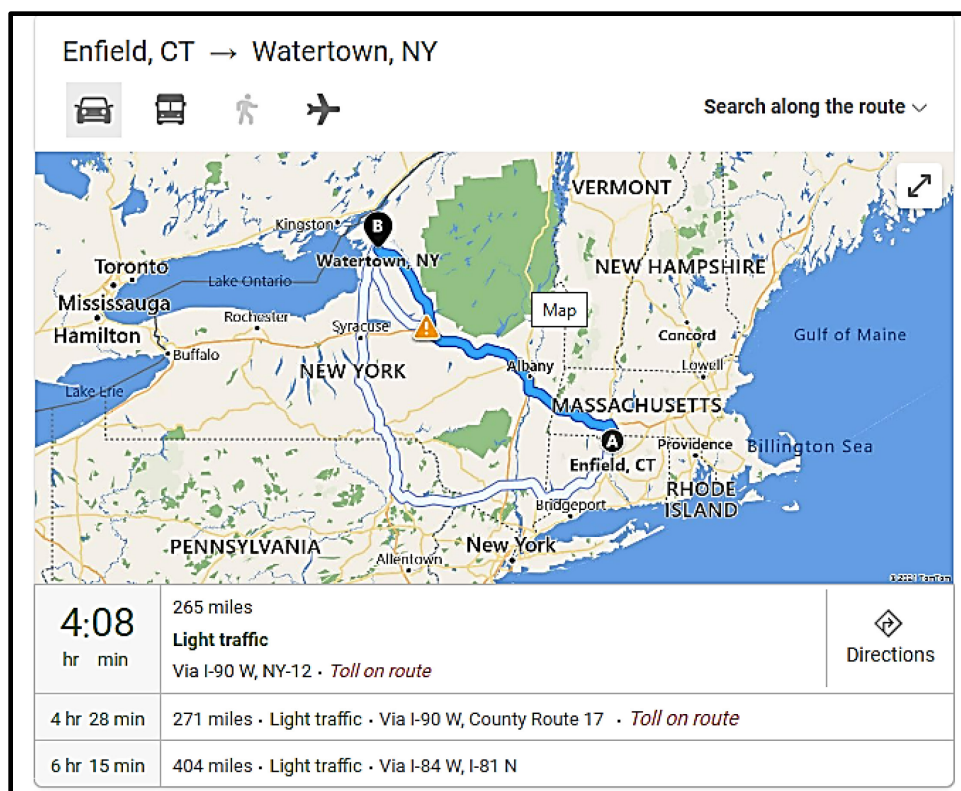
1769 - 1857

“When our hearts turn to our ancestors, something changes inside us. We feel part of something greater than ourselves. Our inborn yearnings for family connections are fulfilled when we are linked to our ancestors...”

Russell M. Nelson¹

“We are who we are because they were who they were. . .” Unknown

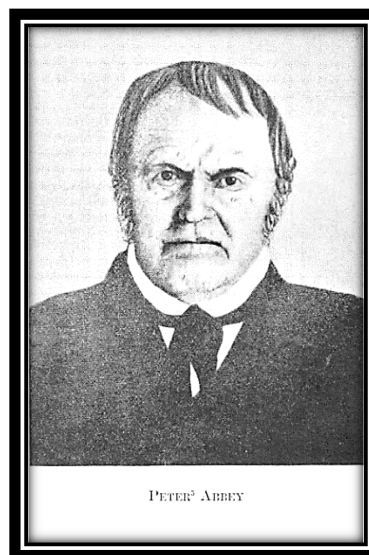
¹ <https://www.goodreads.com/author/show/655749>, Russell M. Nelson 17th president and prophet of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints (LDS Church). Prior to his service as head of the Church, President Nelson served as president of the Quorum of the Twelve Apostles. He is also a retired American physician and cardiothoracic surgeon.



Contemporary maps from Wikipedia.org

Peter Abbey and Hannah (Alden) Abbey
1769 – 1857

5. Peter Abbey, son of Thomas⁴ (Thomas Jr.³, Thomas², John¹) and Penelope (Terry) Abbey, born Enfield, Connecticut, British Colonial America 20 July 1769;² died Cleveland, Ohio 13 July 1857. He removed from Enfield to Watertown, New York, and in 1830 accompanied his son, Seth Alden Abbey, to Cleveland, Ohio. He is buried at the Woodland Cemetery, Cleveland, Ohio, Section 7, lot 17.³ He married Hannah Alden, daughter of Amos Alden and Hannah (Bush) Alden, born Enfield, Connecticut, British Colonial America 29 May 1771⁴ and died Watertown, New York 18 April 1821. On 23 June 1789, the Reverend Nehemiah Prudden married Peter Abbey and Hannah Alden.



Two accounts follow:

Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut, 23 June 1789 – Peter Abbey married Hannah Alden, b. 29 May 1771;⁵ d. Enfield 21 Apr 1821. She was the daughter of Colonel Amos and Hannah (Bush) Alden of Enfield and was sixth in descent from John and Priscilla (Mullins) Alden of the Mayflower; and a descendant of Miles and Prudence (Gilbert) Morgan. A statue of Miles Morgan is in Court Square, Springfield Massachusetts.⁶ Alden Ave. runs just north of the current Enfield Town Hall.

Peter Abbey, b. July 20, 1769, m. June 23, 1789, Hannah Alden, sixth in descent from John Alden and his Huguenot wife, Priscilla Molines, thus uniting two families whose

² *Connecticut Births and Christenings, 1649-1906*, <online database>, (FamilySearch.org), 4/19/2022.

³ Cleveland Abbe and Josephine Genung Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy, In Memory of John Abbe and his Descendants*, (New Haven, Connecticut, The Tuttle, Morehouse & Taylor Company, 1916), 53, 104 includes photo; *Daughters of the American Revolution, Lineage book National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution*, Vol 86, 128, #85331, (Washington, D.C., Daughters of the American Revolution, 1911), (hathitrust.org), (ancestry.com), 10/14/2020; Alden Freeman, *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey, his Ancestors and Descendants of the Abbey family, Pathfinders, soldiers and pioneer settlers of Connecticut, it's Western Reserve in Ohio and the Great West*, (The Abbey Print Shop, East Orange New Jersey, 1917) 38; *U.S. Find a Grave*, Memorial #69275597, d. 21 July 1857 (age 88), has bio, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2012), 10/14/2020.

⁴ *Connecticut Births and Christenings, 1649-1906*, (FamilySearch.org), 4/19/2022.

⁵ *Early Connecticut Marriages*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2012), Book 7: Enfield, 81, 10/15/2020.

⁶ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 104.

histories in the new world began with the equally romantic courtship and picturesque marriage of John Alden and Priscilla Mullins, and that of Miles Morgan and Prudence Gilbert, (the latter episode needing only the poetry of a Longfellow to make it equally familiar.) ⁷



The obelisk symbol has always been used to represent heaven, eternal lives, or even the sun shining on the deceased for all eternity.

Author's photo, Enfield Street Cemetery, June 2019

The house at 1370 Enfield Street, Enfield, Connecticut was built in 1783 as a wedding present from Capt. Ephraim Pease, for his daughter Agnes (1760-1799) who married the Rev. Nehemiah Prudden (1749-1815), minister at Enfield's Congregational Church. After Agnes died, Rev. Prudden married her sister Sybil (1754 - 1822) the widow of Prudden's ministerial predecessor, the Rev. Elam Potter (1742-1794). Potter had been dismissed following a 1776 religious controversy. In 1777, Potter wrote a volume titled *Second Warning to America*. In 1811, a volume by the Rev. Prudden was published in Hartford with the title, *To Marry Wife's Sister, Not Inconsistent with the Divine Law*. (If the reader is interested, both texts are available on Amazon.com)

The Rev. Nehemiah Prudden, b. Milford, New Haven Connecticut, ca. 29 Oct 1749; d. Enfield 7 Sept 1815 was a graduate of Yale, class of 1775, where he was a member of the Livonian literary and debating society. He died in the 33rd year of his Ministry & in the 66th of his age and is buried at the Enfield Street Cemetery. His headstone (pictured above) reads:

As a Husband and a Father, he was tender and affectionate; as a friend and neighbor, generous and sincere. The great and central doctrines of the Gospel he understandably believed and faithfully preached. Possessed of that wisdom which is at first pure, then peaceable, he was often employed by the Churches in council and by the Great Head of the Church as an instrument in turning many to righteousness.

⁷ Appleton Morgan, *A History of the family of Morgan, from the year 1089 to present times*, (New York, 1902), (archive.org), 218, 229, 10/15/2020.

Children of Peter and Hannah (Alden) Abbey:⁸

- i. FANNY ABBEY, b. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 7 Sept 1789; m. 26 Nov 1816 Orlo Steele, of Oswego, New York. He was the lighthouse keeper there; three sons who will be covered in Volume Three.
- ii. DORREPHUS ABBEY, b. Enfield or Suffield, Hartford, Connecticut 13 July 1792; d. 12 Dec 1838, hanged by the British in Fort Henry at Kingston, Ontario, Canada during the Patriot War;⁹ m. Suffield, Hartford, Connecticut abt. 1815 Catherine Clark, b. Suffield abt. 1794; d. 8 Apr 1837.¹⁰ More on his life and death in Volume Three.
- iii. ALTHEA ABBEY, b. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 5 July 1793; d. Rochester, Monroe, New York, Aug. 1875/6; m. Ballston, Saratoga, New York 30 Mar 1813 William Andrews Langworthy; nine children.
- iv. ARABELLA ABBEY, b. Suffield, Hartford, Connecticut abt. 1796; d. Oswego, Oswego, New York 1832; m. William Griffin Adkins M.D., b. 1795 Oswego, New York; d. 28 Nov. 1835; three children.¹¹
6. v. **SETH ALDEN ABBEY**, b. Franklin, Delaware, New York 3 Oct 1798; m. (1) Watertown, Jefferson, New York 8 Feb 1821 **Mercy Hunt** by the Reverend Daniel Banks;¹² Mercy, b. Western, Oneida, New York 22 Dec 1799; eight children; m. (2) Mary Lyons Goodwin; one daughter. At age 63, Seth Alden Abbey made 1st Lt. of 2nd Ohio Cavalry and served throughout the Civil War, part of the time as Brig. Quartermaster. Seth and Mercy (Hunt) Abbey and their descendants through my grandfather Henry Abbey Jr. will be covered in the Volume Three of this series.
- vi. CHAUNCEY ABBEY, b. Franklin, Delaware, New York 1800; d. Cleveland, Cuyahoga, Ohio 23 Mar 1850. He was a printer, lived in Watertown, New York, and was at one time the printer of the Mercury, in Hartford, Connecticut; m. Cassie Russell, d. 1828. A daughter, b. 1828; m. C.M. Shipman and was living in New Haven abt. 1897. (Various online trees confuse him with a Chauncy Abbey, b. in Connecticut.)
- v. WILLIAM ABBEY, b. Franklin, Delaware, New York abt. 1802; d. 1862; lived near Watertown New York; married; no children. He established the Oswego Republican newspaper in 1825, "To guard with zeal the people's rights: and stand firm bulwarks, against the tide of power; when rising to rushing to overwhelm them."¹³

⁸ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 104; <http://alden.org/aldengenealogy/database/pafg445.htm#5634>, Children of Peter and Hannah Alden, 10/1/5/2020.

⁹ Handwritten Family Record.

¹⁰ <http://jefferson.nygenweb.net/wills/dorephusabbywill.htm>. 10/15/2020.

¹¹ George K. (Kemp) Ward, *Andrew Warde and His Descendants, 1597-1910: Being a Compilation of Facts Relating to One of the Oldest New England Families and Embracing Many Families of Other Names, Descended from a Worthy Ancestor Even unto the Tenth and Eleventh Generations*, 154, (New York, A.T. De La Mare Printing and Publishing Company, 1910), (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/15/2020.

¹² Handwritten family record.

¹³ <https://www.loc.gov/item/sn85054266/>, re: the Oswego Republican, 10/15/2020.

- vi. MARY HANNAH ABBEY, b. Franklin, Delaware, New York 31 Jan 1814; d. Waukegan, Lake, Illinois, 17 Feb 1874; m. Oswego, 18 Nov 1834 John C. Huguenin. Minnie is the ancestor of my 5th cousin Thomas Skinner. Her lineage is found in Volume Three.

The 1790 Census finds Peter Abbey and his family in Suffield, Hartford, Connecticut:¹⁴

- 1 Free White Persons - Male - 16 and over
- 2 Free White Persons - Females
- 3 Number of Household Members

In the 1800 Census, Peter Abbey and family are listed in Franklin, Delaware, New York.¹⁵

And, in the 1810 Census, he and his family are listed in Milton, Saratoga, New York:¹⁶

- 2 Free White Persons - Male - under 10
- 2 Free White Persons - Male - 10 - 15
- 1 Free White Persons - Male - 45 and over
- 1 Free White Persons - Females - 10-15
- 1 Free White Persons - Females - 16-25
- 1 Free White Persons - Females - 45 and over
- 1 All other Free Persons
- 5 Number of Household Members under 16
- 2 Number of household Members over 25
- 9 Total number of Household Members.

Hannah (Alden) Abbey, dies in Watertown, Jefferson County, New York 18 April 1821.¹⁷

She is buried under the Abbey Family Memorial Obelisk in Brookside Cemetery, Watertown, New York, Plot J37 02R.

Photos by Chrissy and Cindy Gebo,
2011 *Find a Grave*, 6/24/2022.



¹⁴ 1790 U.S. Federal Census, <online database>, (Provo, Utah Ancestry.com, Operations Inc., 2010), 1790, Suffield, Hartford Connecticut, Series M637, Roll 1, pg. 433, image 620, FHL film# 0568141, 10/15/2020.

¹⁵ United States 1800 Census, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org. New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2015), (Original index: United States Census, 1800. FamilySearch, 2015.) Vol NARA Roll 22, (NY Vol 2), pg. 1308 Series M32, Image 00376, Film #193710, (index only), 10/15/2020.

¹⁶ 1810 US Federal Census, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2010), 1810, Milton, Saratoga, New York, Roll 35, pg. 797, Image 00233, FHL film # 0181389, 10/15/2020.

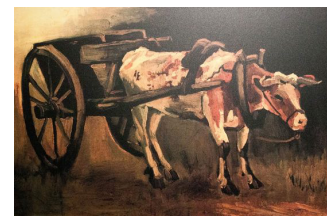
¹⁷ Connecticut, Deaths and Burials Index, 1650-1934, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2011), FHL film 3077, 10/15/2020; CSL, Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices, 1629-1934, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2012), Connecticut, Newspaper Notices, Vol 27: 485, 15 May 1821. Note: on the same date: Miss Esther F. Terry of Plymouth, daughter of Samuel Terry Jr.

Watertown, Jefferson County, New York

Watertown, located approximately 25 miles south of the Thousand Islands along the Black River about 5 miles east of where it flows into Lake Ontario, was settled in the late 18th century by pioneers, such as Hart Massey, Henry Coffeen, and Zachariah Butterfield, from New England, after the Revolutionary War. Peter Abbey arrived with his wife Hannah (Alden) and four children sometime before the beginning of October, 1798, when their fifth child, my ancestor Seth Alden Abbey was born. The pioneers chose this area with the foresight of creating an industrial center, which would draw its power from the mighty Black River. The Black River's elevation dropped 40 feet in the center of town and 120 feet over 2.5 miles which produced incredible waterpower. Though I have no sourced information on Peter Abbey's livelihood, it would seem likely he worked in the field of hydropower or in an occupation which would support those who did.

Watertown was named after the many waterfalls throughout the river. Its first church was erected in 1801, the first school in 1802, which was the year water power was first used. In 1804 Watertown was made a postal station. In 1806 a local Medicinal Association was organized. The first papermill began production in 1808 and the first newspaper in 1809. Two of Peter and Hannah's sons were in the newspaper business.

How did the family travel from Enfield, Connecticut to Watertown, New York a distance which Wikipedia tells me varies from 404 miles to 265 miles, depending on the route? (See maps at the beginning of this chapter.) Travel in the early 19th century was so much slower and more difficult than it is today that it is not easy to remember that it was also a time of significant change and improvement. In 1790 New England, vehicles were few, roads were generally rutted and rudimentary, and traveling any distance was both slow and difficult. But about that same time, and surely by 1798, a series of changes were beginning that historians have called "The Transportation Revolution." Americans—and New Englanders in particular—rebuilt and vastly extended their roads. Even so, Peter and his family most likely traveled by horse and wagon and moved their household goods in wagons pulled by oxen.



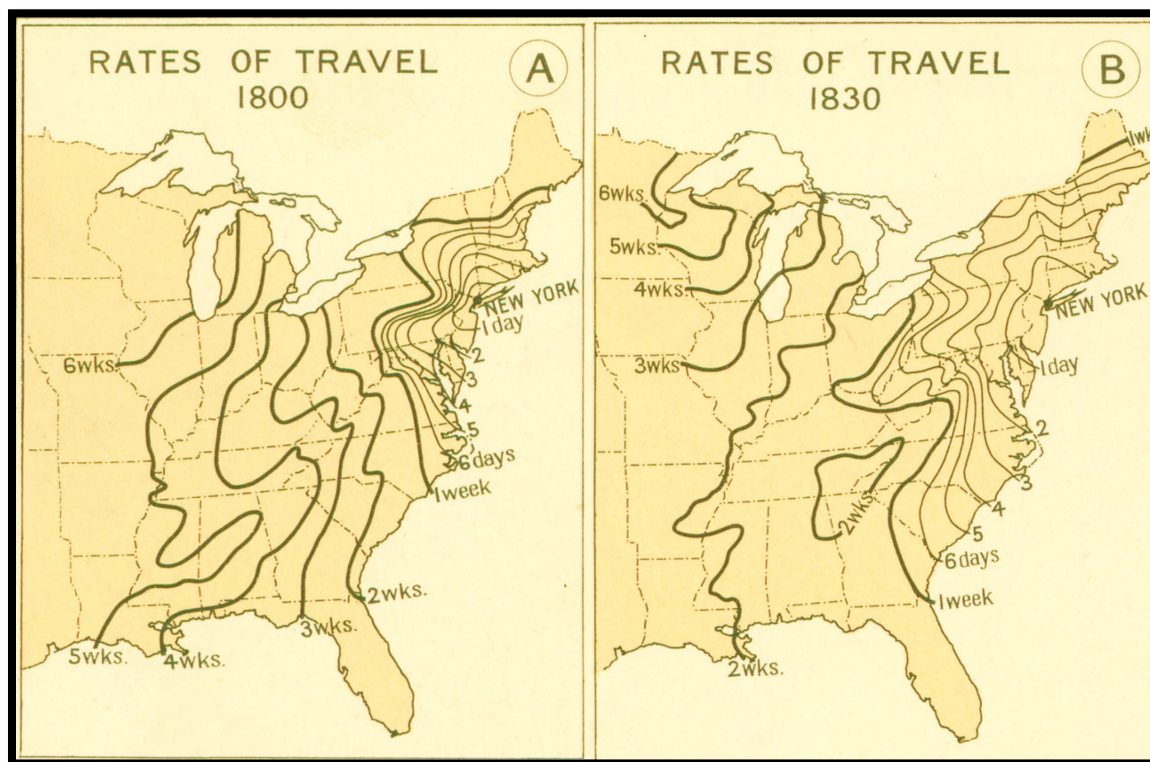
Cart with Red & White Ox by Van Gogh.

More than 3,700 miles of turnpikes, or toll roads, were built in New England between 1790 and 1820. By 1830, when Peter moved to Cleveland, Ohio with his son Seth, Americans were driving a "multitudinous generation of travelling vehicles" that had been "totally unknown" in the 1790s. Stagecoach lines and the railroad decreased travel times overland and, the steamboat, and the building of canals vastly expanded passenger travel on the lakes and rivers and could carried much higher value cargo upstream as well as down.¹⁸

of East Windsor, Connecticut died, age 19 (She would have been the niece of Peter's Mother Penelope (Terry) Abbey; *U.S. Find a Grave Index 1600's – Current*, Memorial #38758303: Hannah Abbey, maiden name Alden, b. 29 May 1771, Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut; Plot Block J, Lot 37, Space 2R, 2 photos, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020.

¹⁸ www.teachhistory.org – Historical Background on Traveling in the Early 19th Century, *Old Sturbridge Inc.* 6/29/2022.

I hope by the publication of Volume Three to visit Watertown and nearby Oswego and Lockport, New York where the next generations of my Abbey ancestors lived and married. I also hope to visit Cleveland, Ohio, where Seth Alden and his son Henry Gilbert and his son-in-law, Dr. Robert Johnstone were early settlers and men of influence. One of my Ashman ancestors, Col. Leander Ransome was instrumental in developing the Ohio and Erie canal system.



With the advent of the American Revolutionary War and the peace treaty of 1783, Britain relinquished all of Ohio to the United States, but British activity did not cease until the conclusion of the War of 1812. American leaders knew that the key to developing the continent's vast interior was in establishing a good transportation system. That meant a series of canals would be needed to link the Great Lakes with the nation's river systems. As early as 1784, George Washington espoused a plan to boost the fur trade and interior communications by utilizing the Great Lakes. His plan included the Cuyahoga River. In 1788, Washington formally proposed canals linking the Cuyahoga, Big Beaver, and Muskingum rivers to allow easy intercourse from the Great Lakes to the Ohio River. IN 1796, surveyors for the Connecticut Land Company laid out Connecticut's "Western Reserve" which included the town of Cleveland.

Building and repairing roads in early Ohio was largely the responsibility of supervisors appointed by township trustees. According to the Act of 1809, every able-bodied man of 21 years or more had to give two days per year to work on public roads in his community.

Some years after the death of his wife Hannah, Peter Abbey moved with their son, Seth Alden Abbey and his family to Cleveland, Ohio. Peter is listed in the 1845, the 1848, and the 1850 Cleveland City Directories.¹⁹

The 1850 US Federal Census has the following information:²⁰

Peter M. Abber, age 81, male (as spelled on Census, including incorrect middle initial M) b. abt. 1769, Connecticut. Home in 1850 Cleveland Ward 1, Cuyahoga, Ohio, USA Dwelling #382; family #413 (this is the family and children of Seth A and Mercy Abbey)
 Seth A Abbey age 50
 Mercy Abbey age 50
 Susan Fox of New York, (maid) age 45 Laura L Benedict age 41 (b. New York)21
 John Ingersoll age 25
 Hannah Ingersoll age 22
 Harriet A Abby age 19
 Charles Abby age 16
 Cornelia Benedict age 13 (b. Ohio)
 Peter M (Morton) Abby age 12
 Frances Abby age 10
 Loura Benedict age 7 (b. Ohio)

The following story is from *The Pioneer families of Cleveland, 1796-1840, Vol 1: "1830 Abbey:"*²²

On the Northwest corner of Ontario and Michigan street sat a picturesque country tavern facing the latter thoroughfare. It was set back a little from the street. Its long veranda was reached by a flight of steps its entire width. In front was a watering trough sheltered by an immense side-spreading elm. This tavern was renamed two or three times according to the taste or ambition of its changing landlords. Farmers' and Mechanics' Hotel was the one by which it was known when Seth A. Abbey and his wife had charge of it.

They came to Cleveland in 1830, and with them was Peter Abbey, 61 years of age, of Enfield, Connecticut, the father of Seth. Mrs. Peter Abbey had died in Watertown, New York in 1821. She was a Miss Hannah Alden, daughter of Col. Amos Alden of Enfield.

¹⁹ *General Business Directory of the City of Cleveland*, (Smead & Cowles, Cleveland, Ohio), 1845 – p.43; 1848 – p. 42; 1850 – p.60; *Ohio, City Directory Index, 1918 – 1850*, <findmypast.com>, 10/15/2020.

²⁰ *1850 US Federal Census*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2009), 1850 Census, Cleveland Ward 1, Cuyahoga, Ohio, Roll: M432-672, p.120 A, Image 67, lines 21-33. Spellings as found in record. Note: Peter Abbey (81) has no middle initial; the "M" belongs to his grandson Peter Morton Abbey.

²¹ I have yet to determine who Laura L Benedict and Cornelia and Loura Benedict might be. Perhaps a nurse for Peter and her two children?

²² *The Pioneer families of Cleveland, 1796-1840*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), Vol 1: *The Pioneer Families of Cleveland*, 359, "1830 Abbey," 10/15/2020.

Peter Abbey, died in Cleveland, Ohio 13 July 1857, at the age of 88 years.²³ His Will was probated 10 August 1857 in Ohio.²⁴ This is my transcript of a hand-written transcription:

The Will of Peter Abbey - 1853

I, Peter Abbey of Cleveland, Ohio, being of sound mind and memory (Blessed be God for the same) do make and publish this my Last Will and Testament.

Item 1st – I direct my house lot on Huron Street in the City of Cleveland, Ohio to be sold as soon as the same can be sold to good advantage after my decease; and if the proceeds of said sale amount to four thousand dollars, then said sum of four thousand dollars I give and bequeath as follows:

To my son Seth A. Abbey one thousand dollars; to Mercy H. Abbey, two hundred fifty dollars; to Henry G. Abbey five hundred dollars, to (?) (This appears to be Harriet Abbey, the daughter of Seth and Mercy Abbey, a granddaughter who died in 1854), two hundred fifty dollars.

The remaining two thousand dollars to be equally designated between my three daughters Elethea Longweather (Althea Langworthy) of Rochester New York, Arabella Adkins of Oswego, New York and Mary A. Huguenin also of Oswego, New York.

Item 2nd – In case any of the above-named persons should not be living at the time of my decease, then in that case, the sum of money that I have directed to be paid them, by this Will is to be paid to their heirs.

Item 3rd – If said lot should be sold for more or less than four thousand dollars, then in that case the proceeds of such sale is to be distributed in the same ratio and to the same persons heretofore named by me in the Will and Testament.

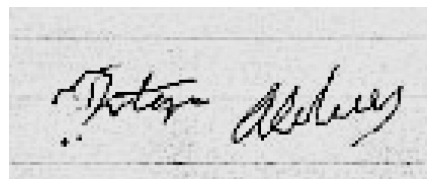
Item 4th – If at the time of my decease, I should be possessed of any other property personal or Real or money in hand or debts due me I will and direct that said property be sold, and the money remaining from such sale together with any money in hand be distributed among the person named in this Will heretofore and in the same ratio in proportion as is provided in the 1st section in this instrument.

Item 5th – I do hereby nominate and appoint John Barr and Henry G. Abbey, executors of this my Last Will and Testament authorizing and empowering them to compromise, adjust, release and discharge in such manner as they may deem (judges) ... the debts and claims due me. I do also authorize and empower them if it shall become necessary to sell by private sale in such manner as they may deem fit or proper my Real and personal estate, I may be ... (possessed) of at my decease to pay any debt or debts by me owing at the time of my death. I do hereby revoke all prior Wills by me made.

Said lot house hereby spoken of in this Will is in the city of Cleveland, Ohio and is, bounded Southerly by Huron Street, Northerly by High Street, Easterly by lands owned by Edward Weissmuller(?) and Westerly by land formerly belongs to Charles E. Tracey, deceased.

In testimony I have set my hand ...at Cleveland this...the 8th day of March in the year 1853.

Witnessed by Lambert White and Henry S. Smith



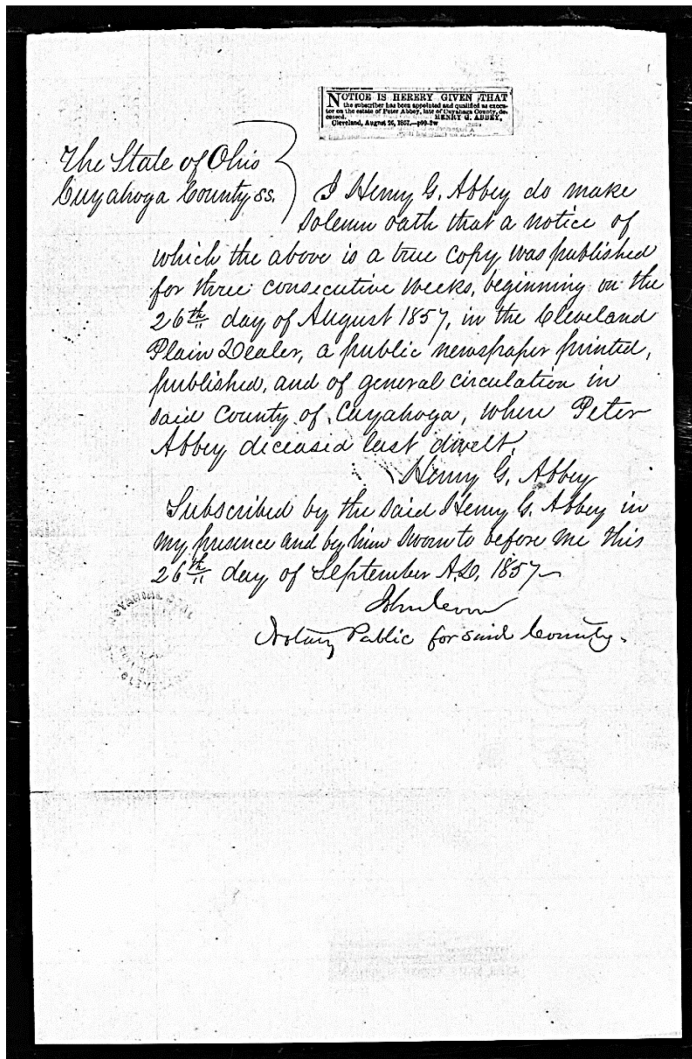
With this set of documents is a letter sent by E. C. Atwater, Attorney at Law, Batavia, New York, 14 April 1913 requesting information about the estate of Peter Abbey, died 13 July 1857 and has the following handwritten notes:

Doc. B, No. 925, Will probated 10 August 1857,
Henry G. Abbey qualified as Executor 19 August 1857

²³ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 104; Freeman, *The Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, 38 in reprint; U.S., *Find a Grave Index*, Memorial #69275597, Woodland Cemetery, Cleveland, Ohio, Section 7, Lot 17, 2 photos, has 21 July 1857 as date of death, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020.

²⁴ Ohio, U.S., *Wills and Probate Records 1786 – 1998*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2015), Estate Files, Docket B, Case # 780-1119a, 1700-1900, 14 pages in total, 10/15/2020.

A second letter by E.C. Atwater corrects the name of Elethea Longweather to Althea Langworthy of Rochester, New York. Mr. Atwater allows that the error may have been in transcribing from an illegible manuscript. The court does not concede this point and there is no further documentation that daughter Althea received her inheritance, except, in this author's opinion, her brother would have known she was the intended heir.



There is also a small newspaper clipping, of a Notice stating Henry G. Abbey's appointment and qualification as Executor of the estate of Peter Abbey.

The Notice began 26 August 1857 and ran for three consecutive weeks in the Cleveland Plains Dealer, a public newspaper printed, published and of general circulation in said County of Cuyahoga, where Peter Abbey, deceased last dwelt.

The clipping is attached to a notarized letter written by Henry G. Abbey regarding this Notice.²⁵

²⁵ Ohio, Wills and Probate Records, 1786 – 1998, <online database>, (Provo, UT, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2015), Estate Files, Docket B, Case No 789-1119a, 1700-1900, 14 pages in total, 10/19/2021.

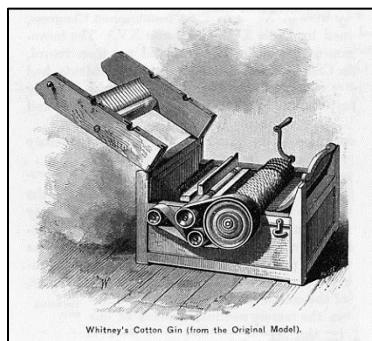
History and Inventions in this Generation 1769 – 1857

During the early lives of Peter Abbey and Hannah Alden, tensions were building in the American colonies. The American Revolution was at hand. By the end of their lives, American territorial expansion was at its height, and the question of the territorial expansion of slavery westward became explosive. The tensions around slavery eventually led to the American Civil War 1861-1865. Peter and Hannah's son, Seth Alden Abbey would play a small role in that war. I won't attempt to cover either of these wars as scholars have written vast numbers of books and essays about them. Instead, I have chosen to mention some well-known, and some frivolous events and inventions during their lifetime. I hope my grandson will enjoy the references to baseball; and my daughter-in-law, who is a cardiothoracic surgeon, will appreciate that the first woman in America received a medical degree during this generation.

The Abbeys in Connecticut would have known of their Colony's anti-Tory laws. These laws, and harassment from liberty-minded neighbors, forced many loyal to Britain to flee their homes or suffer imprisonment. Mostly free from British occupation and significant battles (except for raids on Danbury and New London and other coastal towns), Connecticut provided food, cannon, and other goods to the Continental Army and became known as the Provision State.

In 1769, Daniel Boone, a Morgan descendant, left North Carolina for Kentucky, opening up new trails. In 1775, he was the leader of a team that cleared a road from Virginia to central Kentucky, which became the primary route for westward migration. (Our Morgan ancestry is discussed in Volume One making Daniel Boone, a very distant relation to the Abbeys.)

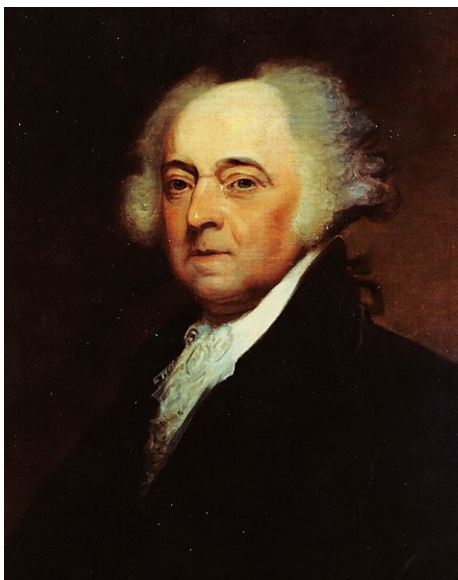
Peter and Hannah were married in 1789, some six years after the end of the Revolutionary War. In their lifetime, President George Washington delivered the first "State of the Union" address on 8 January 1790. Benjamin Franklin died 17 April that same year in Philadelphia. In 1791, Washington D.C. was named the United States capital, and the U.S. Post Office began its work on 20 February 1792.



On 14 March 1794, Eli Whitney's cotton gin, which cleans the seeds from Cotton, was patented.

The earliest reference to cupcakes can be traced as far back as 1796 when a recipe notation of "a cake to be baked in small cups" was written in *American Cookery* by Amelia Simms.



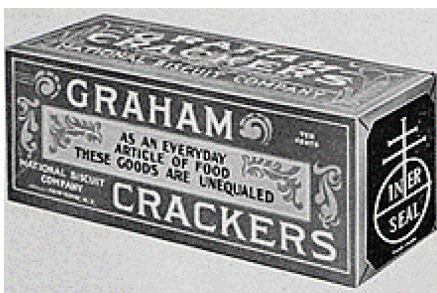


In 1789, construction began at Fort McHenry, Baltimore. Sixteen years later, during the War of 1812, Francis Scott Key penned The Star-Spangled Banner during Fort McHenry's bombardment by British forces. George Washington died on 14 December 1799 and in a controversial election, John Adams, Washington's vice-president, becomes the second President of the United States.²⁶



In 1800, John Chapman, aka Johnny Appleseed, began handing out apple seeds and seedlings to Ohio settlers. And on 14 May 1804, Lewis and Clark began their expedition to map the northwest United States.

In 1806, Benjamin Rumford invented the percolating coffee pot with a metal sieve to strain away the grounds. Other inventions of this time included the lobster trap, the circular saw, dental floss, and by accident, the detachable collar. Noah Webster published his Compendious Dictionary of the English Language. In 1809, Robert Fulton patented his steamboat and began offering services on major rivers and the Chesapeake Bay. That same year, future president Abraham Lincoln was born in Kentucky. On 28 September 1820, Colonel Robert Johnson proves tomatoes are not poisonous by eating one in public. One of my sons would disagree!

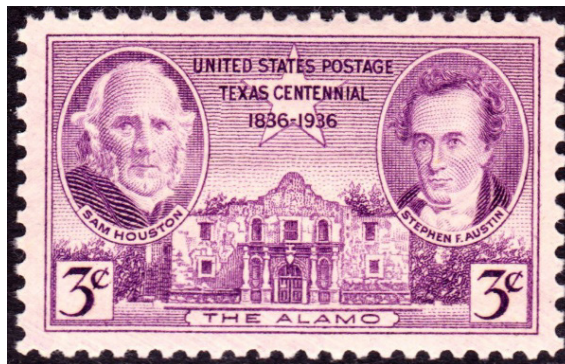


In 1829, Presbyterian minister Reverend Sylvester Graham developed "Dr. Graham's Honey biscuits," later known as Graham Crackers. In 1831, the invention of the electric doorbell was a sensation.

Numerous events relating to slavery and its prohibition occur during this time. Both President's John Adams (1797 - 1801) and Thomas Jefferson (1801 - 1809) died on 4 July 1826, the 50th anniversary of the signing of the Declaration of Independence.

²⁶ President John Adams (1735-1826), 2nd President of the United States, by Asher B. Durand, Naval Historical Center, Washington, D.C., (Wikimedia commons, copyright free image), 4/11/2022.

From 23 February - 6 March 1836, the battle for the Alamo takes place in San Antonio, Texas, my hometown for many years.



During 1838, the forced removal of 15,000 - 17,000 Cherokee Indians from Georgia on the "Trail of Tears" results in an estimated 4,000 - 8,000 deaths.²⁷



In 1838, the coronation of Queen Victoria²⁸ takes place in England, and America catches "Victoria Fever." An anonymous letter writer describes some of the physical trappings of the sickness: souvenir hairbrushes with Victoria's picture on them, Victoria soap, composed expressly for the coronation, and Victoria riding hats. Queen Victoria ruled during the reign of seventeen American Presidents, the last being William McKinley, who died by assassination in 1901.

²⁷ Trail of Tears sign on Hwy 71 through Fayetteville, Arkansas, <https://commons.wikimedia.org/>, 4/11/2022.

²⁸ Queen Victoria, by Alexander Bassano, <https://commons.wikimedia.org/>, 4/11/2022.

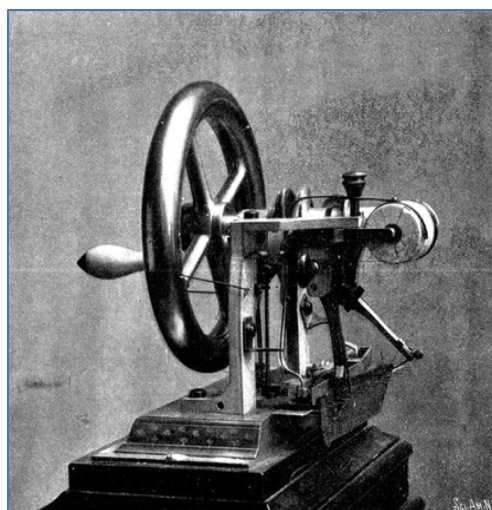
Charles Goodyear invented vulcanized rubber in 1839 and hand-cranked ice cream became popular in 1843.



In 1845, the New York Knickerbockers was the first team to play by the modern rules of Baseball.²⁹ Also, in 1845 the Irish potato famine resulted in a massive influx of Irish immigrants to the United States.



On 24 January 1848, gold is discovered near Sutter's Fort, California and the following year, the California Gold Rush begins.³⁰



During the lifetimes of Peter and Hannah (Alden) Abbey, other inventions include the gas mask, the donut, the jackhammer, safety pins, and the dishwasher. In 1851, a fire alarm box system, consisting of 40 miles of wire and forty-five boxes, was installed in Boston.

Of particular interest to me, was the 10 September 1846 patent of the sewing machine, followed by the invention of the feed-dogs and the rotary hook. One hundred nineteen years later, I learned to sew and for many years had a custom quilt making and finishing business.³¹

²⁹ <https://alchetron.com/New-York-Knickerbockers/>, 4/11/2022.

³⁰ Sailing card for the clipper ship California, depicting scenes from the California Gold Rush, ca. 1850. (In 1850 the author's great grandfather Richard Turner Ashman sailed on a similar ship from Brooklyn, NY to San Francisco, CA and worked in the rope manufacturing industry. Volume Four of this series will tell his story and that of other pioneering California ancestors.)

³¹ [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Timeline_of_United_States_inventions_\(before_1890\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Timeline_of_United_States_inventions_(before_1890)) and various Wikipedia articles, 10/15/2020; The Elias Howe sewing machine, 10 Sept 1846. Earliest model filed in Patent Office.

The Lives and Role of Women
1769 – 1851

Women's rights during this time are slow to change:

"By marriage, the husband and wife are one person in the law. The very being and legal existence of the woman are suspended during the marriage, or are at least, incorporated into that of her husband, under whose wing and protection she performs everything." As a result, women cannot own property in their name or keep their earnings.³²

In 1777, the original thirteen states pass laws that prohibit women from voting. Abigail (Smith) Adams, the wife of John Adams, the 2nd president, and mother of John Quincy Adams, the 6th president, writes: "women will not hold ourselves bound by any laws which we have no voice." It is not until 1839 that Mississippi becomes the first state to grant women the right to hold property in their name - with their husband's permission.

By the early 1800s, women were ready to branch out from their families and make an impression on the world. Numerous women's organizations were formed, some social, but many bound on doing social work. "Female associations . . . ran charity schools, and refuges for women in need."

One of the first movements in which women took an active hand was the female seminary movement which began its serious phase about 1815. The leaders were Emma Willard (an ancestor of this author's sons and grandchildren), Catherine E. Beecher, Zilpah P. Grant, Joseph and Mary Lyon Emerson. They intended to improve the quality of women's education so that they could be good citizens and "mothers of future statesmen." The seminary movement proved that women had minds capable of serious study and opened the way for women to teach and manage institutions. This was a small, though important, step toward equality for women.³³

In 1826, through the influence of the Reverend John Pierpont, the first high school for girls opened in Boston but was quickly closed because of a lack of support. Horace Mann, educational reformer, developed and established Normal Schools in 1839, as teacher training academies, to raise and ensure teachers' level of quality. In 1852, Girls' High School was established in Boston. One estimate says that, with the growth of public education in the northern tier of states, one-quarter of all native-born Massachusetts women in the years between 1825 and 1860 were schoolteachers at some point in their lives.³⁴ Women began to be admitted to some Midwestern universities in the 1850s and 1860s, but only when the universities were short of students.

³² <https://www.annenbergclassroom.org/resource/womens-rights/>, 10/15/2020.

³³ <http://people.loyno.edu/~history/journal/1984-5/donnaway.htm#2>, 10/22/2021.

³⁴ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cult_of_Domesticity, 10/15/2020.

The rise of industrialization in the 1830s and the increasing numbers of working women prompted women to become involved in the labor movement. The women's labor unions worked mostly for better pay and better working conditions. The "Mill Girls" who worked in the textile mills of Lowell, Massachusetts, protested their arduous working conditions and low wages.³⁵ Unlike the sisterhoods of religious benevolence or female seminaries, which complemented the efforts of male leaders, sisterhoods of labor threatened the authority and economic power of corporate leaders and investors.³⁶

In 1833, the American Anti-Slavery Society was formed. William Lloyd Garrison, one of the leaders of the society, was fervently for women's rights. Unfortunately, the other members were not. When women were not allowed to sign the Declaration of Purposes, they formed the Female Anti-Slavery Society as an answer. In 1836, Angelina Grimke wrote the pamphlet "An Appeal to the Christian Women of the Southern States" urging women to work for abolition. Though rejected in the South, the pamphlet was well received in the North. That same year Angelina and her sister Sarah arrived in New York as the first female abolitionist agents in the country. Sarah Grimke published a series of letters which drew a parallel between the conditions of women and slaves.³⁷ This quote, lately attributed to Ruth Bader Ginsburg is from Sarah's writings:

"All I ask our brethren is that they take their feet from off our neck and permit us to stand upright on the ground which God destined for us to occupy."

In 1840, Lucretia Mott and several other women delegates attended the World Anti-Slavery Convention in London but, as women, are forced to sit in the gallery and are not allowed to participate. In 1848, about 300 activists, including forty men, gather for a two-day convention in Seneca Falls, New York, to strategize how to obtain women's suffrage nationwide. Hannah (Alden) Abbey would have lived 110 miles to the north, and I wonder if she and her daughters knew of, or supported, this gathering?



The American Medical Association is founded on 7 May 1847 and less than four years later, on 23 January 1849, Elizabeth Blackwell graduated from the Geneva Medical School in Geneva, New York, the first woman to receive a medical degree in the United States. In 1957, she will help found the New York Infirmary for Women and Children to train other female physicians.³⁸ In 1848, anesthesia was used in childbirth for the first time

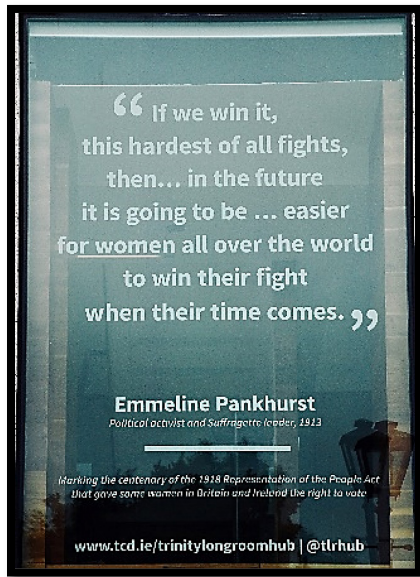
³⁵<https://www.afm47.org/press/womens-history-month-exploring-the-important-role-of-women-in-labor-history/>; I visited Lowell, Massachusetts on a quilt tour and purchased Benita' Eiseler's, *The Lowell Offering*, writings by New England Mill Women 1840-1845, which offers first-hand accounts of their lives and work, 10/22/2021.

³⁶ <http://people.loyno.edu/~history/journal/1984-5/donnaway.htm#6>, 10/22/2021.

³⁷ <http://people.loyno.edu/~history/journal/1984-5/donnaway.htm#15>, 10/22/2021; For a novel about the Grimke sisters, I recommend Sue Monk Kidd, *The Invention of Wings*, (2014).

³⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_women_in_the_United_States, 10/8/2020.

despite the clergy claiming that women and doctors were ignoring the decree of God who said that "in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children."³⁹



Elizabeth Cady Stanton and Lucretia Mott, along with sixty other women and thirty-two men, sign and issue the Declaration of Sentiments and Resolutions, modeled on the Declaration of Independence, which calls for equal treatment of women and men under the law and voting rights for women. Former slave Frederick Douglass addresses the crowd, showing unity between the anti-slavery and women's rights movements. Two years later, the first national Women's Rights convention is held in Worcester, Massachusetts, 63 miles northeast of Enfield, Connecticut, and attracts more than 1,000 participants.

Author's photo, Trinity College, Dublin, Ireland, August 2018

Despite seeming progress for women, I found an article that seemed to "put women back in their place" - the home:

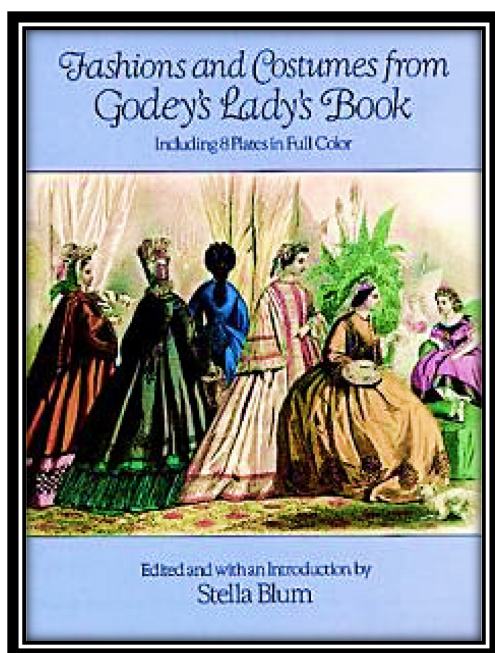
Chaos seemed to reign in the early 1800s. Cities swelled with immigrants and farmers' sons and daughters seeking their fortunes. Disease, poverty, and crime were rampant. Factory cities were being built almost overnight and the frontier reached the Pacific Coast. Public institutions: schools, hospitals, orphanages, almshouses, and prisons, were expected to handle these problems but were overwhelmed. Somewhere there must be a haven from the hubbub and confusion of business and industry, a private refuge. That place was the home.

Increased wealth and status opened doors of opportunity for the upwardly mobile. The home was the perfect location to display their success. The husband had to be out in the public sphere creating the wealth, but his wife was free to manage the private, the "women's sphere." Together, such a husband and wife created a picture of perfect harmony. As he developed skills for business, she cultivated a complementary role. This recipe for success was so popular that all who could, adopted it.

A true man was aggressive, competitive, rational, and channeled all of his time and energy into his work and climbing the social ladder. A true woman, on the other hand, was virtuous. Her four chief characteristics were piety, purity, submissiveness, and domesticity. She was the great civilizer who created order in the home in return for her husband's protection, financial security, and social status.

³⁹ <http://people.loyno.edu/~history/journal/1984-5/donnaway.htm#17>, 10/22/2021.

Women's virtue was as much a hallmark of Victorian society as materialism. As long as women functioned flawlessly within the domestic sphere and never ventured from it, women were held in reverence by their husbands and general society. But this was carried to ridiculous extremes. To protect women's purity, certain words could not be spoken in their presence. Undergarments were "unmentionables." A leg or an arm was called a "limb." Even tables had limbs, and in one incredibly delicate household, the "limbs" of a piano were covered in little trousers! ⁴⁰



Godey's Ladies Book was a magazine that promoted "the women's sphere," featuring a fashion plate and pattern, also poetry, articles, and manuscripts written by prominent American writers. Several issues were devoted to works by women artists and authors. Editor Sarah Hale,⁴¹ used her role to influence various causes, and advocate for women's education. In 1852, she created a regular section with the heading "Employment for Women" to discuss women in the workforce.⁴² While women often stayed at home during the years preceding the Industrial Revolution, the advent of factories made many of her household duties obsolete as manufactured products replaced goods produced at home.

These years were a fragile existence for a woman. One indiscretion, trivial by today's standards, would be her downfall, and there was no place in polite society for a fallen woman. But a fallen woman was not alone. The great majority of women never met the rigorous standard of true woman, set by the Victorian middle class, nor could they ever hope to. A freed slave, Sojourner Truth, drove that point home in 1851:

"That man over there says that women need to be helped into carriages, and lifted over ditches, and to have the best place everywhere. Nobody ever helps me into carriages, or over mud-puddles, or gives me any best place! And, ain't I a woman?"

Only white women of European descent, and very few of them, could be True Women. For immigrant women, the wives and daughters of farmers, and the women who followed their husbands to the frontier, daily life's necessities overshadowed the niceties. Nevertheless, the ideal of True Womanhood affected every facet of American culture in the 19th century.⁴³

⁴⁰ <https://www.ushistory.org/us/25e.asp>, 10/15/2020.

⁴¹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sarah_Josepha_Hale, 10/15/2020.

⁴² https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Godey%27s_Lady%27s_Book, 10/15/2020.

⁴³ <https://www.ushistory.org/us/25e.asp>, 10/15/2020.

How did the beginnings of feminism emerge from a generation of women who accepted such a seemingly submissive ideal? Some scholars have argued that The Cult of True Womanhood laid the groundwork for the later development of feminism by crediting women with a moral authority, which implicitly empowered them to extend their moral influence outside the home.⁴⁴

Others advocate that it was early feminist opposition to many of the values promoted by the Cult of Domesticity, especially concerning women's suffrage, political activism and legal independence, which culminated in the Seneca Falls Convention and the beginning of the Women's Right's Movement.⁴⁵



⁴⁴ https://scholarworks.bgsu.edu/gsw_pub/1/ link to article by Susan M Cruea: "Changing Ideals of Womanhood During the Nineteenth Century Woman Movement," 10/15/2020.

⁴⁵ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cult_of_Domesticity; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seneca_Falls_Convention, 10/15/2020.

Part II

Hannah (Alden) Abbey

*The Seventh Generation of the Alden Ancestral Line in America
and Her Ancestors*

Chapter Two - Her Parents

Col. Amos Alden and Hannah (Bush) Alden

1745 – 1826

*Including Her Bush Family Ancestry
back to 16th Century England*

*and the Allied Families of
French, Keyes, Riddlesdale & Warren
Kibbe, Cook & Birdsall
Lamb & Chapin
Saunders & Hall*

*We inherit from our ancestor's gifts so often taken for granted. Each of us
contains within this inheritance of soul. We are links between the ages,
containing past and present expectations, sacred memories, and future
promise.*

Edward Sellner⁴⁶

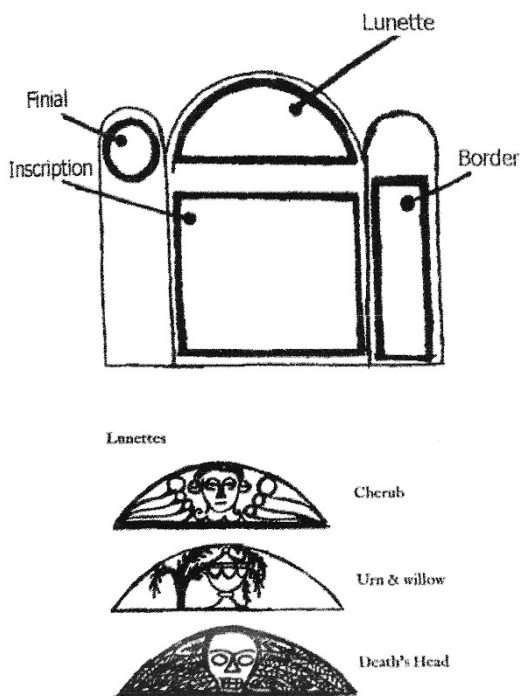
⁴⁶ Author of Christian and Spiritual works; quote found on thegenealogyguide.com

Tiptoeing Through the Tombstones

"In effect, the cemetery becomes a history laboratory where students can chart and graph gravestone styles and inscriptions according to the specific increments in time in which they first appear, reach the height of popularity, and finally fade out." Dean Eastman

In a course on local history, which Mr. Eastman teaches at Beverly High School in Massachusetts, he takes his students out of the classroom to a place where the past never fails to ignite their curiosity – the cemetery.

From their observations of four cemeteries and approximately seventy stones, they found that all of the early Puritan gravestones are facing east, many with two smaller stones (called "footstones") in front. These stones seem to represent a bed in which the deceased can more easily rise when God appears from the east on the Judgment Day to save the chosen ones from eternal damnation. Through *seriation* charts (a method of archaeological dating), they also determined that the stylistic evolution from *death head* to *cherub* reflects the exact time period in which the *Great Awakening* (1735-1750) brought about a change in Puritan attitudes toward life, death, and the afterlife. The change in inscription from "Here Lies ____" to "In memory of ____," during this same time period also suggests a connection between gravestone iconography and the larger cultural and religious context. And the later (1780-1820), more secular design, of the urn and willow, with its classical Greek symbols could be interpreted as representative of an emerging spirit of democracy and republic – a civic religion!



Additional questions he poses to his students include:

Are changes in style more likely to first occur in the larger cities that serve as the religious organizational centers or the hinterlands that would have less contact with urban cultural influences? Would the same style gravestone be somewhat uniform or reflect in some way the individual expression of the carver? How can the name of a carver be specifically identified? Were the wealthy Puritans more likely to have a more elaborate and different style from the working class? What would the gravestone of a slave, or free African American, look like? Can a broken or damaged stone that no longer displays a visible date be accurately dated by the seriation dating method?

For answers and to read more: commonplace.online/article/tiptoeing-through-the-tombstones, 6/29/2022.

Chapter Two
Generation Six of Aldens in America

Col. Amos Alden and Hannah (Bush) Alden
1745 – 1826

Alden as both a given name, and a surname originated in Old English. The name can derive from Ealdwine, meaning "old friend", but is better interpreted as "friend of the past." The first recorded spelling of the family name is shown to be that of Aelfwine or Aldine and was dated 1095, in the Feudal Documents from the Abbey of Bury St. Edmunds, Suffolk, during the reign of King William 2nd (1087 – 1100).

Hannah (Alden) Abbey, wife of Peter Abbey was the daughter of Amos Alden, b. Stafford, Tolland, Connecticut, 1 May 1745, son of Jonathan Alden and Experience Hayward; d. Ashfield, Franklin, Massachusetts 2 Mar 1826. He is the sixth generation of Aldens in the American Colonies.⁴⁷ At age 23, he m. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 29 Nov 1768 Hannah Bush, b. Enfield, 14 Sept 1744,⁴⁸ d. Enfield 10 Oct 1801.

Children:⁴⁹

- i. MARY ALDEN, b. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 12 May 1769; d. Enfield 13 Oct 1825; m. 1792 Ebenezer Metcalf.
- ii. HANNAH ALDEN, b. Enfield 29 May 1771; d. Watertown, Jefferson, New York 18 Apr 1821; bur. Brookside Cemetery, Watertown; m. **Peter Abbey**.
- iii. AMOS ALDEN JR., b. Enfield 25 Mar 1774; d. Enfield 11 Jan 1857; bur. Enfield Street Cemetery; m. Enfield 6 Mar 1803 Elizabeth Pitkin. Probably the Amos Alden living with the family of Seth Alden Jr. in Enfield 1850, insane, age 76.⁵⁰

⁴⁷ *Connecticut Town Birth Records, pre – 1870 (Barbour Collection)*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2006), *Stafford Vital Records 1719-1850*, 2; citing Vol 1: 42; *Mayflower Families Fifth Generation Descendants, 1700-1880*. <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2017), from "Mayflower Families Through Five Generations: Descendants of the Pilgrims who landed at Plymouth, Mass., December 1620, Vol 16 Part 3, 126," (Plymouth, MA: General Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1975-2015), 10/15/2020.

⁴⁸ <http://alden.org/aldengenealogy/database/pafg196.htm>, 10/15/2020.

⁴⁹ <http://alden.org/aldengenealogy/database/pafg196.htm#666>, 10/15/2020.

⁵⁰ *United States 1850 Census*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014) (Original index: *United States Census, 1850*, FamilySearch.org, 2014), NARA Roll 39 (Conn, V.3) Film # 3067, house 135, line 11; 25, 10/15/2020.

- iv. SETH ALDEN, b. Enfield 26 Sept 1779; d. 14 May 1832; m. Enfield 2 Jan 1804 Pinna Bement, b. Enfield 1780; d. 11 Apr 1832. Both died from a fever;⁵¹ son Seth Alden Jr., b. 1805.⁵²
- v. LOVICE (LOVISIE) ALDEN, b. Enfield 18 Aug 1781; d. Denmark, New York, 1815;⁵³ m. Ebenezer Patrick, of New York.⁵⁴

The first official US Census in 1790 places this family in Enfield, Hartford Connecticut:⁵⁵

Amos Alden

1 Free white person - male - under 16

2 Free white person - male - 16 and over

3 Free white person - female

6 Number of Household members

Hannah (Bush) Alden, d. Enfield, Connecticut, 10 Oct 1801.⁵⁶ Her headstone reads:



Sacred to the memory of the amiable consort of
Maj. Amos Alden
Who was born Septr 14 1744
And died Octr 10th 1801
Day presses on the heels of day
And moons increase to their decay;
But you with thoughtless pride elate.
Command the pillard dome to rise.
When lo, the tomb forgotten lies.

The "lunette," or top portion of her headstone,
bears the image of a cherub with a scroll work gracing the borders.
Author's photo, Enfield Street Cemetery, June 2019

⁵¹ [https://www.werelate.org/wiki/Person:Pina_Bement_\(1\)](https://www.werelate.org/wiki/Person:Pina_Bement_(1)), 10/15/2020.

⁵² Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe- Abbey Genealogy*, 98.

⁵³ CSL, *Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices 1629-1934, Connecticut Newspaper Notices, Vol 273 Nov 1815: 344*, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020.

⁵⁴ *Lineage Book of the Charter Members of the DAR, Vol 40, 1902: 57*, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020.

⁵⁵ 1790 US Federal Census, Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut; Series: M637; Roll: 1; Page: 421; Image: 613; FHL Film #0568141, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020.

⁵⁶ Francis Olcott Allen and John Chauncey Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut, Vol III: 2314* (Lancaster, Pennsylvania, Wickersham printing co., 1900), (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/15/2020; *Connecticut, Deaths and Burials Index, 1650-1934*, Enfield St. Cemetery, FHL Film #3333, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; CSL, *Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices, 1629-1934, Connecticut Headstone Inscriptions, Vol 15: 57, 1-110 Enfield Street Cemetery, Row 15*, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave, Memorial #26157522*, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; personal email from cousin Thomas Skinner, who cleaned this and other noted stones, 9/7/2021.

Consort: this term meant a wife, husband, or companion, (in particular the spouse of a reigning monarch). In this context, it is not used today. From the late Middle English, it denotes a companion or colleague: via French from Latin consors: sharing, partner, from con: together with + sors, sort: lot, destiny.

Amos Alden, m. (2) 3 Mar 1803 Elizabeth (Kingsbury) Pitkin, daughter of Lemuel Kingsbury, and Dorothy Roberts, widow of Elisha Pitkin Esq. of Hudson, New York.⁵⁷ Elizabeth Kingsbury is from the same Kingsbury family as Sarah (Kingsbury) Crossman and her father Joseph Kingsbury whom we will meet later in this Volume.⁵⁸

In the third Census of 1810, the family remains in Enfield, Connecticut:⁵⁹

Amos Alden
 1 Free White Persons - Males - Under 10
 1 Free White Persons - Males - 45 and over
 2 Free White Persons - females - 16 - 25
 1 Free White Persons - females - 45 and over
 1 Number of All Other Free Persons
 1 Number of Household Members Under 16
 2 Number of Household Members Over 25
 7 Number of Household Members

The fourth Census in 1820 still in Enfield, Connecticut:⁶⁰

Amos Alden
 Enumeration Date 7 August 1820
 1 Free White Persons - Males - 45 and over
 1 Free White Persons - Females - 45 and over
 2 Free White Persons - Over 25
 2 Total Free White Persons
 2 Total All Persons - White, Slaves, Colored, Other.

⁵⁷ Frederick John Kingsbury and Mary Kingsbury Talcott, *The Genealogy of the Descendants of Henry Kingsbury, of Ipswich and Haverhill, Mass.*, 274, (Hartford, Conn, Hartford Press 1905), (archive.org), 10/15/2020.

⁵⁸ *North America Family Histories, A Pendulous edition of Kingsbury Genealogy*, 56, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1026), 1/19/2021.

⁵⁹ *1810 US Federal Census*, 1810, Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut; Roll: 1; Page: 530; Image: 00530; FHL Film #0281229, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020.

⁶⁰ *1820 US Federal Census*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2010), 1820, Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut; Page: 247; NARA Roll: M33_2; Image: 251, 10/15/2020.

Col. Amos Alden d. Enfield, Connecticut 2 Mar 1826; age 81.⁶¹ His grave has no flag or government stone. "Aet. 81."⁶² According to the Connecticut State Register, in 1800 he was Captain of the Fifth Company, First Regiment, Connecticut Calvary; Major of the same, 1802-06, and Lieutenant Colonel of the First Regiment in 1807.⁶³ The U.S., Revolutionary War Rolls, 1775-1783, (ancestry.com) have:

Amos Alden, 1. 1778, Corporeal in the Connecticut "Regiment of Foot."

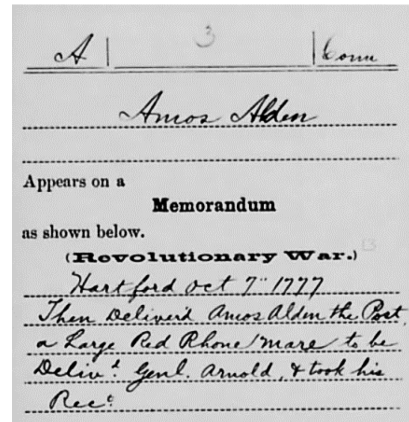
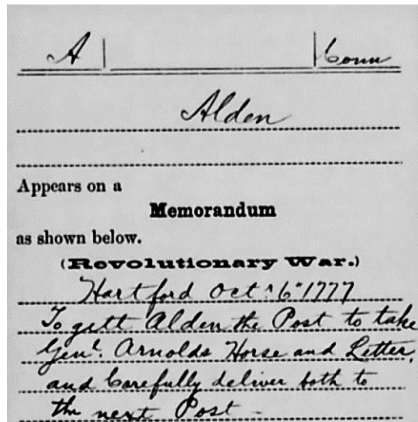
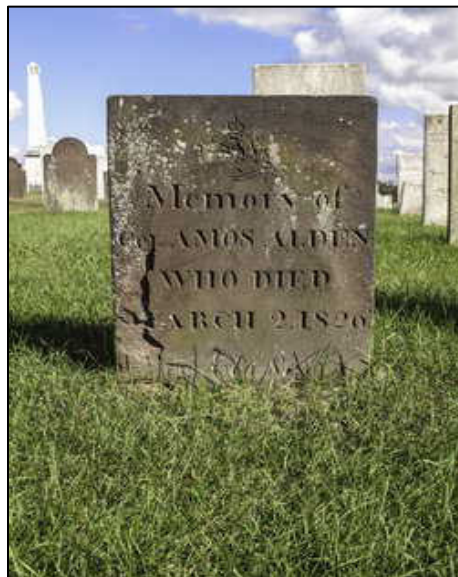


Photo used with permission
Find a Grave - M. Simonds
(2012)



⁶¹ Connecticut, Deaths and Burials Index, 1650-1934, Enfield St. Cemetery, FHL Film #3077, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; CSL, Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices, 1629-1934, Connecticut Headstone Inscriptions, Vol 15: 57, 1-110 Enfield Street Cemetery, row 15, d. 11 Jan 1857 (?) age 82, (ancestry.com) 10/15/2020; Connecticut: Marriages and Deaths, 1790-1833, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2016.) Typescript. John Elliot Bowman, Some Connecticut Marriages: 1820-1837, Items from the Norwich Courier, and other Connecticut newspapers, files from the Connecticut Observer, Connecticut Deaths 1792-1833, 14 vols., 1928-1933, (has 3 April), 10/15/2020; U.S., Find a Grave Index, Memorial #26159328, d. 2 Mar 1826, image of headstone, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020.

⁶² Allen & Pease, History of Enfield, Vol III: 2317, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/15/2020.

⁶³ Freeman, Memorial of Thomas Abbey, 97.

Joshua and Experience (French) Bush
1711 – 1793

The surname **Bush** is derived from either the Old English word *busc* or the Old Norse, *buskr*, both of which mean "bush, or shrub." It can also be a topographic name for someone who lived by a bushy area or thicket. The first recorded spelling of the family name is shown to be that of Richard de la Busce, which was dated 1181, in the Pipe Rolls of Yorkshire, during the reign of King Henry 2nd.

Hannah Bush, wife of Amos Alden and mother of Hannah Alden, was the daughter of Joshua Bush; b. Enfield 17 Aug 1711/12; d. Enfield, 20 Sept 1793, age 82; bur. Enfield Street Cemetery;⁶⁴ m. Enfield, 3 Mar 1737,⁶⁵ Experience French, b. Enfield 3 Aug 1710; d. Enfield 4 Mar 1791,⁶⁶ daughter of Richard and Elizabeth French; settled in "Terry Lane."

Children all born in Enfield:⁶⁷

- vii.
 - i. JOSHUA BUSH JR., b. 15 Dec 1737, d. Enfield 4 May 1803; m. 1737 Mary Ann Shurtleff, b. 1732; d. 1774.
 - ii. ABIEL BUSH, b. 7 Aug 1739; d. Ticonderoga, Essex, New York 6 Sept 1758 during the French and Indian War.
 - iii. ELI BUSH, b. 20 May 1741, d. Sherburne, Chenango County, New York 30 Aug 1829; m. 1768 Jemima Killam; m. (2) Enfield 1793 Abiah Gowdy; m. (3) Enfield 1796 Roxa Terry. Eli was a Constable and collector of provisions in the American Revolutionary War. Various census records place him in several New York locations.
 - iv. HANNAH BUSH, b. 14 Sept 1744; d. Enfield, 10 Oct 1801; bur. Enfield Street Cemetery;⁶⁸ m. **Amos Alden**.
 - v. EXPERIENCE BUSH, b. 16 Feb 1746; no further information.

⁶⁴ *Connecticut Deaths and Burials, Index 1650-1934*, Film #3099 (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; CSL, *Hale Collection of Connecticut Cemetery Inscriptions, Vol 15:57, 110-1, Section B, Row 15*, (ancestry.com) 10/15/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave, Memorial #25734143*, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020.

⁶⁵ *Descendants of William Shurtleff of Plymouth and Marshfield, Massachusetts, Vol 1*, the fourth generation: 60, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), 10/15/2020.

⁶⁶ CSL, *Hale Collection of Connecticut Cemetery Inscriptions, Vol 15: 57, 110-1 Enfield Cemetery Row 15*, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave, Memorial #25734170*, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020.

⁶⁷ Royal Ralph Hinman, *A catalogue of the names of the early Puritan settlers of the colony of Connecticut: with the time of their arrival in the country and colony, their standing in society, place of residence, condition in life, where from, business, etc. as far as is found on record*, (Salem, Mass., Higginson Book Co., 1993), 442 – 443, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/15/2020; Topsfield Historical Society, *The Historical Collections of the Topsfield Historical Society, Vol 13: 153-164*, Carrie C. Edgett, "John French of Topsfield Mass. and some of his Descendants," 161, (Topsfield, Topsfield Historical Society, 1908), (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/15/2020.

⁶⁸ *Connecticut Deaths and Burials, Index 1650-1934*, Film #3099, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; CSL, *Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices, 1629-1934, Vol 15:57, Enfield, 110-1, Section B, Row 15*, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave, Memorial #25734143*, (ancestry.com) 10/15/2020.

- vi. JONATHAN BUSH, b. 2 May 1747; d. Guilford, Chenango, New York 23 Feb 1816; bur. Ives Settlement, Chenango County, New York; m. Patience Killam, daughter of Lot and Jemima Killam; sister to Jemima (Killam) Bush, wife of Eli Bush.
- vii. DAVID BUSH, b. 4 Mar 1749; d. 8 May 1797.

Joshua Bush is listed in the 1790 Census. (No image available).⁶⁹ I could find no other records for him. It seems he was of age to fight in the American Revolution.

He died 20 September 1793 in the 83rd year of his age. His gravestone reads:

Why do we mourn departing friends?
Or shake at death's alarms?
Tis but the voice that Jesus sends
To oath them to his arms.⁷⁰

Experience (French) Bush died 4 Mar 1791 (age 80 or 83). Her gravestone bears these words:

“Why should we tremble to convey
Their bodies to the tomb?
There the dear flesh of Jesus lay,
And left a long perfume.”⁷¹



Photo used with permission by Irma,
Find a Grave, 2015
Joshua Bush, Memorial 25734143
Enfield Street Cemetery

⁶⁹ *United States 1790 Census*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), (Original index: *United States Census, 1790*, FamilySearch, 2014.), Series M637, archive roll 568141, line 8411, image 613, Connecticut, p. 421, 10/15/2020.

⁷⁰ Transcription thanks to cousin Thomas Skinner, personal email 9/7/2021.

⁷¹ Allen & Pease, *History of Enfield*, Vol 3: 2322, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/19/2020.

French Family Ancestry

French is an ancient surname is of Anglo-Saxon origin, and is from an ethnic name for someone from France, derived from the Middle English (1200 - 1500): *Frennsee*, *Frenche*, meaning “French.” Or, the surname French was originally de Freynes and was initially derived from the word *fraxinus*, which means an “ash tree.” However, residence in the country of France is a more obvious derivation.

Experience French wife of Joshua Bush, mother of Hannah (Bush) Alden, grandmother to Hannah (Alden) Abbey was the daughter of Richard French, b. 18 Aug 1676 Topsfield, Essex, Massachusetts,⁷² son of John French Sr. and Phoebe Keyes; d. Enfield 13 May 1757, bur. Enfield Street Cemetery;⁷³ m. by 1700 Elizabeth____.⁷⁴

Richard French was called a husbandman and a yeoman in deeds. He removed to Enfield, Connecticut as early as 1699. On 5 June 1699, Ephraim French conveyed by deed of gift to his cousin (nephew) Richard French, “all my housings and lands at Enfield after my death...He to live with me and maintain me.”⁷⁵ Ephraim French died in Enfield 1716.

Richard French held no office in Topsfield, but his name occurs frequently on the Enfield records. He was chosen fence viewer, surveyor of highways, tything-man, assessor, constable. The reader may recall, Miles Morgan, an ancestor of Captain Thomas Abbey was also a titthing-man. (See Volume One) On 12 May 1632, he was also appointed an Alower of Society debts.⁷⁶

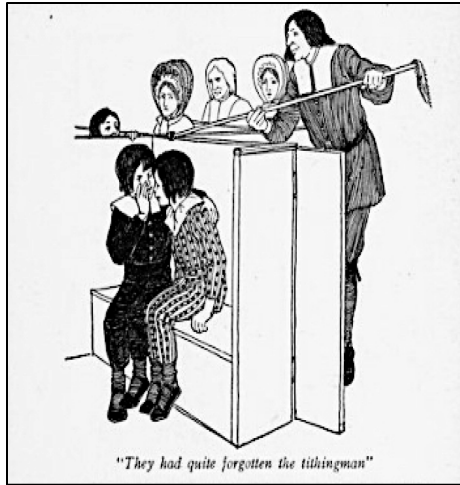
⁷² *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records 1620-1988*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2011), *Topsfield, Births, Marriages and Deaths*, 12-13, 10/15/2020; *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records 1620-1988, Topsfield Vital Record Transcripts*, “Topsfield Births,” 45, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020.

⁷³ *Connecticut Deaths and Burials, Index 1650-1934*, FHL film #3333, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; CSL, *Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices, 1629- 1934, Vol 15: 41, 110-1 Section A* (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial 26438012, citing Cousine Cousin, *Descendants of Thomas French of Ipswich Massachusetts and others*, (unable to locate this resource), (ancestry.com); however, <http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/CHARTS/Chart001/> is a valid website for information, 10/15/2020.

⁷⁴ *New England Marriages to 1700*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2008.), Originally published as: *New England Marriages Prior to 1700, Vol 1:581*, (Boston, Mass., New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2015), 10/15/ 2020.

⁷⁵ Allen & Pease, *History of Enfield, Vol III: 1973*, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/15/2020.

⁷⁶ Topsfield Historical Society, *The Historical Collections of the Topsfield Historical Society, Vol 13: 153-164*, Edgett, “John French of Topsfield Mass. and some of his Descendants,” 160, citing: *Enfield Church Records, Vol 2*, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/15/2020. This date does not make sense for Richard French, b. 1676, either the date is transcribed incorrectly, or the fact is for another French.



It was the **tithingman's** duty to detain and arrest Sabbath travelers, unless they were going to or from church, or to visit the sick and do charitable deeds. His job was also to keep the boys from playing in the meeting house and to wake up any who might fall asleep during the meeting, sometimes with a stave, some of which had brass on one end to hit sleeping men, and feathers on the other to brush the faces of sleeping women. Tithing men also collected taxes mandated for the support of the church and the minister of the gospel. They were expected to report an idle or disorderly person, profane swearers or cursers, and Sabbath-breakers.

cownehampshireblog.com

allower / alower – I could not find this phrase in google searches and so I asked at StackExchange.org: 1. An approver or abettor. 2. One who allows or permits. The position seems somewhat similar to a modern credit agency, for determining if a debt would be *allowed*. In light of the Middle English definition below, it is also possible that it refers to a type of *factor*, who would co-sign the debt for an additional fee. From the *Concise Dictionary of Middle English A-F*: **Alowen**, v. to assign, bestow, to give an allowance to.

By 1700, Richard French, m. Elizabeth _____. Online researchers ask, "Was Richard's wife Elizabeth Fearing?" Answer: "Probably not." Find a Grave suggests Fearing as her last name, but Allen's, *History of Enfield, Volume 3*, does not support this assertion; she is referred to only as Elizabeth in its pages. She is not the Elizabeth Fearing whose father was Israel Fearing; she married Mr. James Sprague.

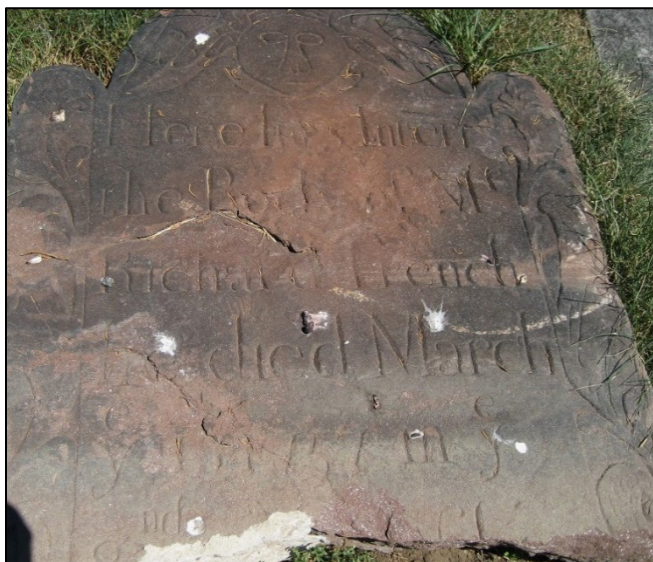
Children, all born in Enfield:

- i. AMEE/AMY FRENCH, b. 6 May 1700; d. 8 Mar 1757;⁷⁷
- ii. not mentioned in her father's Will; m. 8 Nov 1722 Isaac Pease Jr.; eight children.
- iii. ELIZABETH FRENCH, b. bef. 3 Aug 1702; d. Enfield aft. 1746; m. 22 Nov 1722 John Warner.
- iv. PHOEBE FRENCH (first of the name), b. 20 Dec 1704; d. 1 Apr 1705/6.
- v. PHOEBE FRENCH (second of the name), b. 1706; d. 1706.
- vi. EPHRAIM FRENCH, b. 15 May 1708; d. 1780; m. Enfield 9 Sept 1744 widow Rebecca Pomeroy.
- vii. **EXPERIENCE FRENCH**, b. 3 Aug 1710; d. 4 Mar 1791; m. 3 Mar 1786/7 **Joshua Bush**; seven children.

⁷⁷ *Ibid.*, 161, 10/15/2020

- viii. RICHARD FRENCH JR., b. 18 Sept 1712; d. Ticonderoga, Essex County, New York 29 Sept 1759 ⁷⁸; age 47. (The battle of Fort Ticonderoga was part of the French and Indian War); m. 16 June 1743 Miriam Bush; six children.
- ix. HEPZIBAH FRENCH, b. 9 Dec 1714; d. bef. 1745; not mentioned in her father's Will.
- x. JOHN FRENCH, b. 30 Mar 1716; d. Enfield 15 Apr 1775; age 59; m. 1751 Rachel Bush; six children.
- xi. ALICE/ELLICE FRENCH, b. 30 Apr 1720; d. 2 Dec 1778; bur. Enfield Street Cemetery; m. 21 Sept 1743 Aaron Bush; records name four to eleven children. Their home was on Terry Lane.

Richard French Sr. "is mentioned in the settlement and Inventory of his father, John French Sr.'s estate in Topsfield 1707."⁷⁹ Sometime after removing to Enfield, on 7 June 1711, he sold to Ebenezer Averill of Topsfield a tract of upland in Topsfield, twenty acres more or less, "a good perfect and Absolute Estate of Inheritance in fee Simple," for œ20. The records of 29 Aug 1720, state that Richard French is "possessed of a parcel of upland that came to him by right of his uncle Ephraim French." On 15 December 1730, he was called Corporal and by 10 March 1734/5, Sergeant. In 1731, Richard French conveyed to John Meacham 50 acres 'originally belonging to the grant of my uncle Ephraim French, decd.'



Richard French Sr., died 13 March 1757. His Will, dated 24 May 1745, presented 5 July 1757, mentions his wife (not named), children: Elizabeth, Experience, Alice, Ephraim, Richard and John, and makes his three sons, executors. I have been unable to locate this Will or any records of Probate.

He is buried in the Enfield Street Cemetery, row 26. An ancestry member writes of the broken stone: *Probably whole transcription*, "Here lies interr'd the Body of Mr. Richard French who died March ye 13th 1757 in ye 82nd year of his age."

This last phrase means he was 81 at the time of his death, this was a common expression of the time and considered that someone live a whole year before getting to be 1 year old.⁸⁰ Elisabeth (___) French, born about 1680, according to her age at death; died Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut 30 April 1752; buried Enfield Street Cemetery, Enfield, 26th row.

⁷⁸ *The History of Enfield, Connecticut in Three Volumes, Vol III, 1872*, "Richard French dyed at ticonderogue, Sept 29, 1759.", from notes gathered at the French-Andrews House, June 2019.

⁷⁹ *Ibid.*, 156 -157, citing: *Essex Probate Docket* 10,156, 10/15/2020.

⁸⁰ *U.S., Find a Grave*, Memorial #26438012, (ancestry.com), image by Kelly 2010, 6/24/2022.



"Here lies the Body of Mrs. Elizabeth French wife of Mr. Richard French " who departed this life April 30th 1752 in ye 73^d Year of her age."⁸¹

The lunette on her headstone bears the image of a cherub and the side vines appear to be stalks of wheat.

Richard French Sr. was the son of John French Sr., born Ipswich, Essex, Massachusetts February 1635/1637; married Topsfield, Essex, Massachusetts by 1663 Phoebe Keyes,⁸² born Watertown 17 June 1639, daughter of Robert and Sarah Keyes; died Topsfield, Massachusetts 13/14 May 1701.⁸³

Children:

- i. MARY FRENCH, b. Topsfield, Essex abt. 1662/3; d. Rowley, Essex, Massachusetts 27 Sept 1730; m. Rowley Stephen Pearson; nine children.
- ii. SARAH FRENCH, b. 1 Mar 1664/65; d. Topsfield 25 Apr 1718 (age 50); m. Topsfield 17 Mar 1684 Thomas Towne.
- iii. PHOEBE FRENCH, b. 8 May 1667; d. 25 Apr 1718; m. Topsfield 10 Nov 1684 John Gould.⁸⁴
- iv. MARTHA FRENCH, b. 9 Aug 1669; unmarried and living as of 1707.

⁸¹ Allen & Pease, *History of Enfield, Vol III*: 2334, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/15/2020; *Connecticut Deaths and Burials, Index 1650-1934*, Film #3333, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; *Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices, 1629-1934, Vol 15*: 41, (ancestry.com), 10/15/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #26437998, her headstone is correct, as are her children, but not her ancestry, (ancestry.com) 10/15/2020.

⁸² U.S. and International Marriage Records, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2004), source #23886.006, 8-page pedigree chart – no image, 10/17/2020; *New England Marriages to 1700, Vol 1*:580, (americanancestors.org), 10/17/2020.

⁸³ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Topsfield*, Vol 1: 221, (americanancestors.org), 10/17/2020; *North America Family Histories, History of the Town of Marlborough, Middlesex county, Massachusetts, from its first settlement...409, The Keyes family*, (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020; *Topsfield Historical Society, The Historical Collection of the Topsfield Historical Society, Vol 13*: 153-161, Edgett, "John French of Topsfield Mass." 161, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/17/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #40080647, (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020

⁸⁴ *North America Family Histories, The Ancestry and Posterity of Zaccheus Gould of Topsfield, A Condensed Abstract of the Family Record*, 12, (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020.

- v. JOHN FRENCH JR., b. 26 Aug 1671;⁸⁵ d. 30 Apr 1730.
- vi. LIDIAH (LYDIA) FRENCH, b. Topsfield 17 May 1674; d. 31 May 1746; living unmarried 1707; m. 17 June 1730 Nathaniel Averill,⁸⁶ as his second wife.⁸⁷
- vii. **RICHARD FRENCH**, b. 18 Aug 1676; d. 13 Mar 1757; m. by 1700 **Elizabeth** ____.
- viii. HEPHZIBAH FRENCH, b. 2 Feb 1678/9; recorded as Phebea; d. Windham County, Connecticut 1737; bur. West Thompson Cemetery; m. Topsfield 13 Nov 1704 David Shapley/Shaplin; two children.
- ix. PATIENCE FRENCH, b. 23 Aug 1681; she did not m. 1711 James Fairman, that was Patience French, daughter of Ephraim French.

John French, a tailor, moved to Topsfield, Massachusetts about 1664. He was living in Topsfield as early as 1 March 1664/5, when a daughter born there. He is first mentioned in Topsfield town records on 31 December 1667 when land was laid out to John How, "next to John ffrench,⁸⁸ bordering upon the Common. From this time until 1697, there are frequent references to his name. He was chosen surveyor of highways, or fences, or both, seven times; tythingman, three times; on the jury at Ipswich, three times; grand jurymen, three times, and commissioner on special errands to the "sheare Towne," twice.⁸⁹

I once again queried StackExchange.org and learned that a 'sheare' town may have been an archaic spelling for "shire" town, which Wikipedia states "is the statutory term for the Massachusetts town having a county court and administration offices."

<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shire>, 10/17/2020.

John French was admitted "Comenar" on 7 March 1675/76 and took the Oath of Allegiance and Fidelity on 18 December 1678. On 18 November 1668, he was assessed 8s 6d on county rate and 1£ 1s 11d on "rate for the minister" in 1681.⁹⁰ On 8 January 1672, he bought of John Wild, several parcels of land...containing thirty acres for 40£ (Ipswich deeds 4:376) and on this same date, he sold to William Perkins two acres for 42s. (Ipswich deeds 5:289)

In about 1675, he built a one-story house which, before 1798, was raised to two stories and enlarged. The house is still standing and is known as the "French-Andrews" house, located at 98 Howlett St., near the Dry Bridge in Topsfield, Massachusetts. In the spring of 1693, Howlett Street was laid out as a town way which passed "between Corpll French his house and barne."

⁸⁵ *Massachusetts Births and Christenings, 1639-1915*, John French in entry for John French, 26 Aug 1671; citing Topsfield, Essex, Massachusetts, FHL microfilm #877,468, (familysearch.org), 10/17/2020.

⁸⁶ Topsfield Historical Society, *The Historical Collections of the Topsfield Historical Society*, Vol 13: 153-161, Edgett, "John French of Topsfield Mass. ..." 157, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/17/2020.

⁸⁷ *Ibid.*

⁸⁸ A double ff is a way of writing a capital F.

⁸⁹ <https://www.genealogy.com/forum/surnames/topics/french/4550/>, information based on the Carrie Edgett article.

⁹⁰ Topsfield Historical Society, *The Historical Collections of the Topsfield Historical Society*, Vol 13: 154, Edgett, "John French of Topsfield Mass. ...", (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/17/2020.

The barn originally stood in the orchard on the westerly side of the road. (See *Hist Coll Vol VI*, 47, *Vol VII* 57, line 22). ⁹¹ The French-Andrews House is:

The oldest house owned by a French in the US. It is still standing near the Newburyport turnpike in Topsfield. John French was the son of Thomas French of Ipswich, the first person in the U.S. with the name French.⁹²

In 1684, John French and his wife were both listed as members of the 'old' church in Topsfield. And on 19 May 1685, he sold "one acre and Twenty Pole" for 31s to William Perkins (Ipswich deeds 5:290). There are records of his military service between 1691-1698. He served as a corporal 1691/92/94 and clerk of the local military company 1696/97/98.⁹³

In 1697, Isaac Peabody, the son of Lieutenant Francis Peabody brought suit against John Gould and John French of the Topsfield Foot Company, to recover five pewter plates which the latter had taken from Isaac's house as a fine for "not watching." Lieutenant Peabody testified that his son was the only miller for the grist mill and part-owner of it and men of such calling were exempted from watching, parading, and training. In the early days, men in specific trades were excused from military service by an act of the General Court.

(MA archives, Vol 70, 188) George Francis Dow, *The History of Topsfield, Massachusetts*, the Topsfield Historical Society, 1940, 134, archive.org

On 2 December 1701, a few years before his death, John French Sr. deeded his Topsfield homestead to his son John. In turn, John French Jr. was to give his father half the produce raised, pay the taxes on land and cattle, pay his father's debts and funeral charges, and if his mother should outlive his father:

Provide for her and keep for her one cow, four sheep and allow her to have one room, half the cellar and half the chamber and the produce from one ½ acres of land during her lifetime. She was to also have firewood, cut to length to be fit to lay in the chimney, 12 bushels of good apples, a barrel of cyder and two of malt; her taxes paid and honorable burial. (Essex Deeds 15: 257)

⁹¹ *Ibid.*, Vol 8: 22, Vol 6:47 (image), (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/17/2020.

⁹² <http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/ARCHITECTURE/Topsfield.htm>, 10/17/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2013), Vol 1 A-F: 703 – 706, Thomas French, 10/17/2020.

⁹³ *Colonial Soldiers and Officers in New England, 1620-1775*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2013), "Massachusetts Officers and Soldiers in the 17th Century Conflicts," 94, 10/17/2020.

As this is dated some six months after Phoebe French's death, either a date is incorrect, or the document was prepared sometime before its execution.⁹⁴ (Reminder – the double “ff” represents a capital F.)



There are two stories of Phoebe (Keyes) French's death:

"John French his wife drown'd herself 13 May 1701,"⁹⁵ and

"Phebe French dyed on ye 14th of May 1701," Topsfield, Massachusetts (age 61).⁹⁶

"John French, his wife drown'd herself 13 May 1701."

When I visited the French-Andrews house, the owner knew the story and suggested Phoebe must have been terminally ill and that her husband/family drowned her as a form of mercy killing. He was sure this was a known practice in Colonial America. I was unable to find any sort of reference to such a practice.

Topsfield is near the Ipswich River and if Phoebe could not swim, she might drown herself, either by filling her pockets with stones, or taking a boat out and jumping into the water. Of course, reasons for suicide are personal, but she could easily have had depression or have been ill.

I again asked StackExchange.org and got the answer that suicide or assisted suicide was extremely unlikely because of the strict Christian morals of the day. There was also this:

Massachusetts passed a statute in 1660 outlawing suicide and requiring contemptuous burial of a suicide's corpse on a public highway with a Cart-load of Stones laid upon the Grave as a Brand of Infamy, and as a warning to others to beware of the like Damnable practices. This statute was not repealed until 1823...

Perhaps this is why the wording of her death went from 'drown'd herself 13 May,' to 'dyed' on 14 May.' We will never know, but it seems a sad ending. From her husband's Will, he intended to provide well for her and perhaps in grief, didn't change his Will even after her death.

⁹⁴ Topsfield Historical Society, *The Historical Collections of the Topsfield Historical Society*, Vol 13: 154-55, (Topsfield, Mass, 1908), (books.google.com); signature from *The ancestry of Lieut. Amos Towne, 1737-1793, of Arundel (Kennebunkport), Maine*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2005), 49, 12/2/2020.

⁹⁵ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #40080853, "It has been reported that Phoebe committed suicide.", (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020.

⁹⁶ *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records 1620 – 1988, Topsfield, Vital Records Transcripts - Topsfield Deaths*, 221, (ancestry.com) 10/17/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Topsfield Vol 1:221*, (americanancestors.org), 10/17/2020.

Between 5 March 1705/6, the last date of record in Topsfield for John French Jr., and 25 January 1706/7, the date of his daughter Mary (French) Pearson's power of attorney, John French Sr. died.⁹⁷ He died intestate, and an agreement made between the heirs settled his estate on 25 Aug 1707. His eldest son John French Jr. was administrator and Richard French of Enfield, and John Gould of Topsfield were sureties on his bond (Essex Probate Docket 10,156). The documents on americanancestors.org also include a difficult to read Inventory of his estate.⁹⁸

An Agreement, Made and Concluded 25 August 1707 by the heirs of John French Sr. of Topsfield

This Agreement made & concluded upon this twenty fifth Day of August 1707 between John ffrench Admr & John ffrench as Attorney to Mary Pearson Widow – Richard ffrench – Thomas Towne & Sarah his Wife, Jno Gould and Pheebe his Wife, Martha ffrench, Lydia ffrench, David Shapin & Hephzibah his Wife and Patience ffrench all Children of Mr. Jno ffrench Late of Topsfield in ye County of Essex in N England Decd Intestate – with Respect to ye Estate of ye said Decd which he Left undisposed of is as followeth:

Wee Doe Agree ye our Brother John ffrench shall quietly & peaceably Enjoy all ye Estate of housing & land given him by our said ffather by Deed of gift – and also one-half Acre of Meadow Lyeing on ye northwardly first of a Brook Called Mile Brook below ye Bridge ... he being by Deed obliged to pay all Debts.

Wee Do Agree yet our Brother Richard ffrench shall have all ye Land upon ye plaine being about 40 acres – Excepting one Rod for a highway to ye said Jno to his Meadow as aforesaid.

3. Wee ye said above named Jno ffrench in Right of Mary – Thomas Town in Right of Sarah Jno Gould in Right of Pheebe Martha ffrench Lydia ffrench David Shaplin in Right of Hephzibah & Patience ffrench having each of us Received ye sum of fifteen pounds in Moveable Estate which is ye whole of ye personal or moveable Estate of ye said Dec'd – which we accept of In full of our Right title Interest & Demand. (note: Jno is an abbreviation for John.)

The Inventory of his estate contains:

A certain p'all of Upland & Meadow in ye plains" valued at 28£ and personal property amounting to 56£, 16, 00, including one Horse, three cows, one heifer, one steer, one ox, six sheep, one swine, pieces of cloth, box Iron goose and the usual articles of furniture, clothing, etc. His eldest son John French was administrator and Richard French of Enfield and John Gould of Topsfield were sureties on his bond. (Essex Probate Docket, 10,156.)⁹⁹

Visiting the French – Andrews House

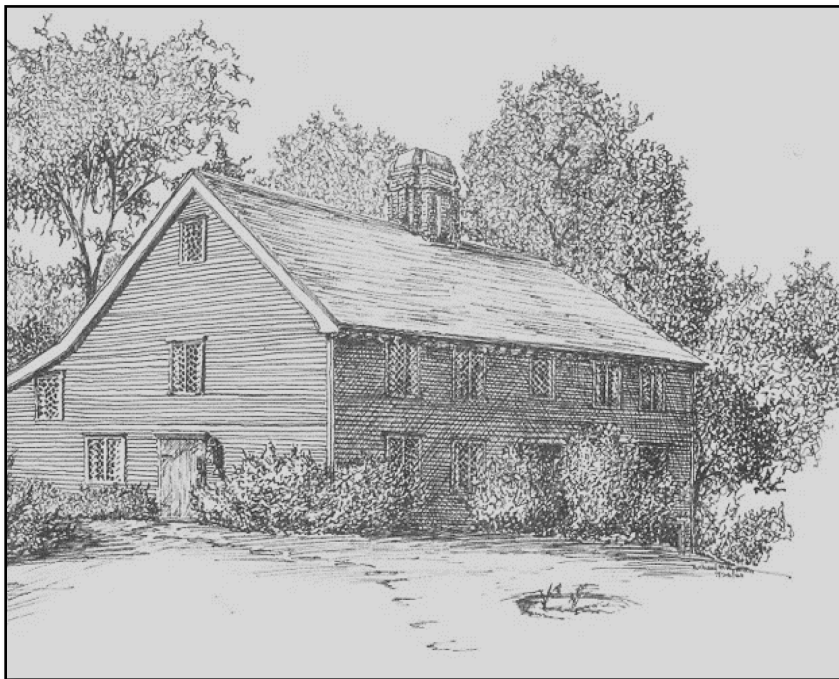
I arrived at the French Andrews house in Topsfield, Massachusetts, 22 miles north of Boston, one afternoon in June 2019. Before my visit, I had several conversations with then owner, Steven Hinch and he was gracious to show me the home and share a wealth of old photographs, antiques and stories about the house and her earliest owners. The home is situated on a private 4-acre lot and features over 2,900 square feet.

⁹⁷ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #40080647, (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020.

⁹⁸ *Essex County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1638-1881*, (AmericanAncestors.org, NEHGS, 2014). (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives), 1/19/2020; *Essex, Massachusetts Probate Records, 1648 – 1840, Topsfield*, intestate, File #10156, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1997), 10/17/2020; *Topsfield Historical Society, The Historical Collections of the Topsfield Historical Society, Vol 13: 156-157*, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/17/2020;

⁹⁹ *Topsfield Historical Society, The Historical Collections of the Topsfield Historical Society, Vol 13: 156-158*, (books.google.com), 11/2/2020.

The seven rooms include three bedrooms, four full and one partial bath, and a basement. Modern conveniences have been added to the carefully preserved home, such as central air conditioning and bathroom amenities. It is listed on the National Register of Historic places in Essex County, Massachusetts. It is a "First Period" home and features diamond leaded windows, five fireplaces, exposed beams and brick, wide pine floors and paneling.

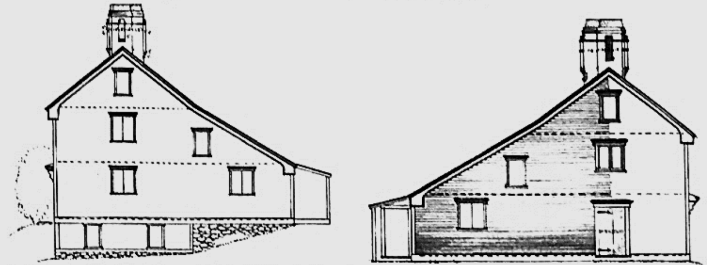


There are several web-sites which discuss the unique structural building features of this home, including: historicmassachusetts.org and jgrarchitect.com. The French family association site and Wikipedia also talk about the home and offer photos. The photos I have included are from these various sites, realty company fliers, Steven's images and my own. The house is in escrow as of this writing and the future owner plans to maintain the antique home and expand the barn for horses.

Image by John Phelan - Own work, CC BY 3.0, commons.wikimedia.org;

Line drawing provided by Stephen Hinch

According to the National Register of Historic Places database, a part of the National Park Service website, this house is located at 86 Howlett Road in Topsfield, but the database indicated that it was built in 1718, after the deaths of both John and Phoebe.



Called the Andrews House by the Historic American Buildings Survey in 1945, it was said to have been constructed in 1710 ^{BR14}. The East (left), West (right), and South (bottom) views of the house were drawn by Grank Chouteau Brown in May 1945 ^{BR14}.

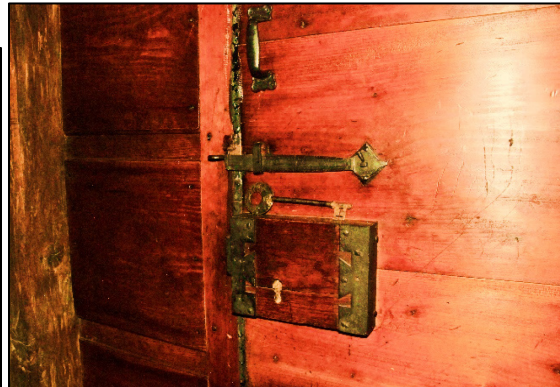
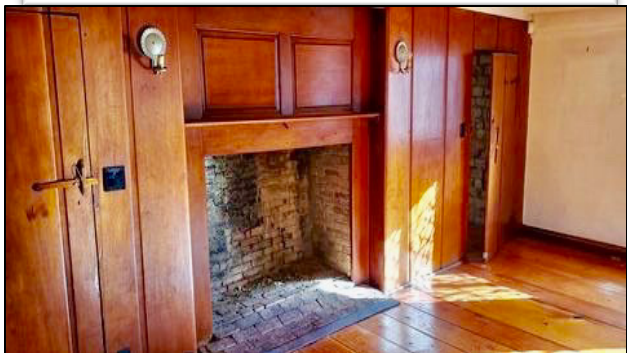


Lead paned windows

Author's photos June 2019



Painted detail from Kitchen Floor



Original Front Door Lock and Key



Several of the vintage photos of the French House shared by the owner in June 2019. The structure to the left seems to be in the top photo and the one to the right, but not in the others. It was no longer in existence when I visited.





French-Andrews House, circa 1675 Topsfield, Massachusetts

A rare opportunity to own this extraordinary antique Saltbox built by John Fre circa 1675 and situated on 4 private botanical acres. This restored First Period home exudes history and is tastefully integrated with modern luxuries. 4000 square foot home consists of nine generously sized rooms for this period with 3.5 baths. First period features include diamond leaded glass windows, five

es, wide pine floors, wood roof, exposed beams and bricks (originally the ballast in ships). Modern luxuries include central air, a security system, dream bathrooms including, steam showers and whirlpool tub. The property includes a two stall barn with



storage areas, a naturally heated pool and spa fed by a cascading waterfall with a large unique patio surrounded with lush landscaping and stereo surround sound creates your very own secret garden. The property has in-law potential, including a full second kitchen.



located 22 minutes north of Boston.

Shown by appointment.



Topsfield, Massachusetts

The Agawam tribe, of the Algonquian peoples, inhabited Topsfield prior to, and during, the British colonization in the early 17th century. The English had settled within the bounds of modern-day Topsfield by 1643. They originally named their settlement New Meadows. Tradition has long held that the Agawam called the place Shenewemedy, meaning "the pleasant place by the flowing waters."

The General Court of Massachusetts renamed the place Topsfield in 1648, undoubtedly after Toppesfield, England, a small parish in the county of Essex north of London. Topsfield was incorporated as a town in 1650. Clockwise to the North, Ipswich, Hamilton, Wenham, Danvers, Middleton and Boxford are the boundaries around Topsfield.

Up to and through the 19th century, Topsfield was principally an agrarian town, but one industry—the manufacture of shoes—flourished for a while, as it did across New England, especially during the Civil War. The farms eventually gave way to large estates which helped to preserve much open space. Both Wikipedia and the Topsfield Historical Society offer information on the town's history and changing character over the years.

Each year from its colonial period, Topsfield has grown more closely connected to the larger world. More than anything else, affordable automobiles and modern road systems changed Topsfield and made the town what it is today—a suburban bedroom community within the greater Boston metropolitan area. It is located approximately 10 miles north of Salem and 22 miles north of Boston. Topsfield is 8 miles from Massachusetts Bay and the Atlantic Ocean. Topsfield includes parts of the Ipswich River Wildlife Sanctuary, Bradley Palmer State Park, Willowdale State Forest and the entirety of the Topsfield Town Forest.¹⁰⁰

Keyes Family Ancestry

The middle English for quay and key was key(e). Thus, a likely meaning for **Keyes**, and its variations (Kay, Kaye, Key, Keys, etc.), is from a residence near or employment at a wharf, dock, or quay; the maker of keys or a ceremonial 'key bearer' is also a possible meaning for all variations.

¹⁰⁰ Wikipedia.org

Phoebe Keyes¹⁰¹ was the daughter of Robert Keyes,¹⁰² born about 1611. Some have Robert Keyes born as early as 1606, based on his first child's estimated birth, perhaps in Woburn, Central Bedfordshire, England. His parents are unknown. He married in England before 1631 or 1633, Sarah _____. She is named in the records of all their children born in Watertown, Massachusetts. There is some speculation she was a second wife and not the mother of his eldest son Solomon, however, researchers have found no records of a first wife.

Children: ¹⁰³

- i. SOLOMON KEYES, b. England abt. 1631; d. Chelmsford, Middlesex, Massachusetts 28 Mar 1702; m. 2 Oct 1653 Frances Grant.
- ii. SARAH KEYES, b. Watertown, Middlesex, Massachusetts 26 May 1633; d. Bradford (probably) 7 July 1707; m. 8 July 1656 Samuel Buswell.
- iii. PETER KEYES (prob.), b. ca 1635; m. by 1667 Elizabeth____; child b. Sudbury, 12 Feb 1667.
- iv. REBECCA KEYES, b. 17 Mar 1637/8; d. 1696; m. 6 July 1657 William Smith.
- v. **MARY (PHEBE) KEYES**, b. 17 June 1639; d. Topsfield, Massachusetts 14 May 1701;¹⁰⁴ m. abt. 1664 **John French Sr.** of Topsfield.
- vi. ELIAS KEYES, b. 20 May 1642/43; d. Sudbury, Middlesex, Massachusetts 29 June 1690; m. 11 Sept 1665 Sarah Blanford; five children.
- vii. MARY KEYES, b. Newbury, Massachusetts 16 June 1645; d. Bradford, Massachusetts 20 Dec 1668; m. Andover, Essex, Massachusetts 16 Feb 1663 Benjamin Gage.

Robert Keyes immigrated to New England during the Great Migration and settled in Watertown, Massachusetts, sometime before, or in, the year 1633.¹⁰⁵ His wife Sarah and son Solomon, are also in the records.¹⁰⁶

¹⁰¹ Massachusetts, Town Clerk, *Vital and Town Records, 1626-2001*, database with images, [¹⁰² *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III*, <online database>, \(AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2010\), \(Originally Published as: New England Historic Genealogical Society, Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III*, 1995\), Robert Keyes, pp 1128-1131, 10/17/2020,](https://familysearch.org/ark:/61903/1:1:F465-Y62:5 November 2017, Phebe Keyes, 17 Apr 1639; citing Birth, Watertown, Middlesex, Massachusetts, United States, town clerk offices, Massachusetts; FHL film #745,869, 10/17/2020.</p>
</div>
<div data-bbox=)

¹⁰³ *Ibid.*, 1129 - 1130, citing J. Gardner Bartlett, *The Ancestry of David Bushnell*, (Boston 1918), p. 31, 10/17/2020; *North America Family Histories, History of the Town of Marlborough, Middlesex County, Massachusetts, from its first settlement...409, The Keyes family*, (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020.

¹⁰⁴ *North America Family Histories, History of the Town of Marlborough, Middlesex County, Massachusetts, from its first settlement...409, The Keyes family*, (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave, Memorial #40080647*, (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020.

¹⁰⁵ U.S. and Canada, *Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s-1900s*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2010), Watertown, Massachusetts, 1633, pg. 168, referencing Anderson, *The Great Migration Begins...and Farmer, A Genealogical Register of the First Settlers of New England*, 10/17/2020.

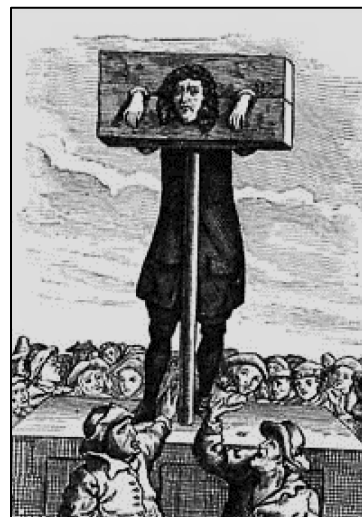
¹⁰⁶ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635, Vol 2 G-O*, 1128 - 1131, (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020.

Some believe he may have come as part of Winthrop's Fleet in 1630 as part of the group of people led by Sir Richard Saltonstall that settled in Watertown. Robert and Sarah Keyes settled on a three-acre "homestall" at Watertown, land which he had purchased from William Wilcox/Woolcocks, adjoining the lands of Sir Richard Saltonstall.¹⁰⁷

He also held 22 acres of Remote Meadows, which he sold to Nicholas Guy. Robert's "homestall" is in the vicinity of Brattle St. at Harvard Square, Cambridge. Much of the original Watertown was ceded to Cambridge in 1754. The earliest record of Robert Keyes in Massachusetts was the birth of his eldest daughter in Watertown.

On 26 June 1638, "Robt. Key (is sentenced) for unseemly behavior toward Goody Newell, to sit in stocks at Lynn one hour with her, and one hour at Cambridge before Lecture on the 4th day of next month."¹⁰⁸

His history seems to be that he was in Watertown in 1633, if not earlier, removed to Newbury between 1643 and 1645, and Sudbury during the latter year. His death is recorded at Watertown, Newbury, Plymouth, and Sudbury, Massachusetts. Newbury Records indicate that he removed to Newbury, Massachusetts, where he died 16 July 1647. The Watertown record says: "Robert removed to Sudbury, Massachusetts, 16 June 1645, where he died 1647." He is buried in Newberry Neck Cemetery.¹⁰⁹



In many ways Robert Keyes was a mystery; he did not become a freeman, he was not a proprietor of the town, nor did he leave any estate. His name ("Robert Keies") is found at the monument's base to Sir Richard Saltonstall at Watertown.

His widow Sarah, married (2) Ipswich 7 November 1658 John Gage.¹¹⁰ There were no children of this marriage. John Gage, died in Bradford, Massachusetts 24 March 1672/3, and his Will was proven 25 March 1673. John left the majority of his estate to the children of his first marriage.

¹⁰⁷ *Ancestry and descendants of Sir Richard Saltonstall*, 70, 111, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), search Card Catalogue, 10/17/2020.

¹⁰⁸ Image from fairfieldfamily.org

¹⁰⁹ *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Newberry Births, Marriage, Death*, 2, (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020; *Vital Records of Newbury, Massachusetts, to the end of the year 1849*, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), Vol II, *Marriages and Deaths, Newbury Deaths*, 633, 10/17/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Newbury, Vol 2*: 633, (americanancestors.org); U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #21421031, (ancestry.com), has an extensive study of his ancestry posted by Ronald Keyes in 2007, 10/17/2020.

¹¹⁰ *Massachusetts Compiled Marriages, 1633 – 1850, Ipswich, Essex County*, FHL film #0777636, (ancestry.com), 10/18/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Ipswich Marriages*, 249, (americanancestors.org); *New England Marriages to 1700*, 593, (amerianancestors.org), 10/18/2020.

He left his wife Sarah:

One cow and household goods that were her own, during her life, to dispose of at her death, the residue of the household goods to Sarah until her death and then to my children, one-third part of the corn that is mine at my decease, 20s annually from each of my five sons, payable half in grain and a half in corn in exchange for her 1/3 dower right.¹¹¹

Sarah (___) (Keyes) Gage, died Newbury 7 July 1681.¹¹² Administration of her estate was granted on 29 March 1681 to John French and William Smith, two of her sons-in-law. The Inventory was taken 14 July 1681 and totaled 28£ 2s, consisting entirely of household goods. The Inventory of her estate included a bible (from Keyes) valued at 3s.¹¹³

On 27 September 1681, the court ordered "that the estate be equally divided to the three daughters, namely, the wives of William Smith, John French, and Samuel Buswell."¹¹⁴ (EPR 3:412-13)

As sometimes happens when reviewing what I have written, new material comes to light. The following appeared on the *Find a Grave*, Memorial 35622981 for Sarah (___) Keyes Gage. I had a copy of the Journal referenced, a perk of belonging to American Ancestors!

Swett Family Ancestry

Swett – The origins of this surname date back to the Anglo-Saxon tribes of Britain. It comes from the word *swete*, used to describe a "sweet or gentle person."

"Baptisms ... 1610 May 6 ... Sarah the daughter of **John Swett**"¹¹⁵

The lead article of *The Journal of American Genealogy* Volume 176 Whole Number 701 Winter 2022, is "The English Connection of Robert Keyes of Watertown and Newbury, Massachusetts, and John Swett of Newbury," by Randy A. West, Robert Battle, and Robert Charles Anderson.

¹¹¹ *Essex County, MA: Early Probate Records, 1635-1681, Vol 2: 333-334*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2015)10/18/2020; *Essex County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1638-188, Case 10483: p.1-6*, if you want to see the original document, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives), 10/18/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635, Vol 2 G-O, 719-722*, John Gage, (ancestry.com), 10/17/2020.

¹¹² *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, 1620 – 1988, Newbury Vital Record Transcripts, 596*, (ancestry.com), 10/18/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #35622981*, (ancestry.com), has a 2022 study of her possible maiden name of Swett, 10/18/2020.

¹¹³ *Essex County Massachusetts Probate Records Supplement, 1644-1691*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 1998), from: the Essex Institute, 1911-1975, Salem, Massachusetts, *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts, Vol 1-9: Vol VIII: 101, Inventory*; *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635, Vol 2 G-O, 1128*, (ancestry.com), 10/18/2020.

¹¹⁴ *Essex County Massachusetts Probate Records Supplement, 1644-169, Vol VIII: 101*, (ancestry.com), 10/18/2020.

¹¹⁵ New England Historic Genealogical Society, AmericanAncestors.org, *The Journal of American Genealogy, Volume 176 Whole Number 701 Winter 2022*, pg 5 ff.

The authors' analysis of parish registers of New Buckenham, Norfolk, and other records show that Robert Keyes arrived in Massachusetts in 1637. This conflicts with Watertown records, which assigns an erroneous birth date of 26 May 1633 to his daughter Sarah. (Editorial, p.3) The probable baptisms of several of the children of John Swett of Newbury, Massachusetts, in the parish registers of Wymondham, Norfolk, were mentioned in *The Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* in 1939¹¹⁶ and (re)discovered a number of years ago by Col. Ben Swett and published online.¹¹⁷ Col. Swett hired an investigator to look at the Wymondham parish registers.

The following baptisms were confirmed:

1618 May 31	Dorcas Swett, the daughter of John Swett
1620 April 18	Stephen Swett the sonne of John Swett
1621/2 Jan 21	Joseph Swett the sonne of John Swett
1624 May 12	Benjamin Swett the sonne of John Swett

According to Stackpole's, *Swett Genealogy*, John Swett "had wife, Sarah, who died 11 Dec. 1650. He may have had a second wife, Phebe, who died, a widow, 6 May 1665."¹¹⁸ Ben Swett argues convincingly that Phebe was, in fact, John Swett's only known wife.¹¹⁹

In an unrelated search through the records of New Buckenham, Norfolk, a parish about 2 -3 miles southwest of Wymondham, the following Swett and Keyes entries were discovered.¹²⁰

Baptisms

1604 Dec 30	Phoebe Swett the daughter of John Swett
1608 Jun 19	John the son of John Swett
1610 May 6	Sarah the daughter of John Swett
1632/3 Mar 23	Solomon the sonne of Robert Keyes & Sara his wife
1634 Jun 29	Sara the daughter of Robert Keyes & Sara his wife

Marriages

1604 Apr 24	John Swett & Phoebe Benton
1632 Apr 8	Robert Keyes & Sara Swett

¹¹⁶ Sybil Noyes, Charles Thornton Libby, and Walter Godwin Davis, *Genealogical Dictionary of Main and New Hampshire*, (Portland, Main: Southworth-Anthoensen Press 1928-1939, rep. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing co, 1972), 670.

¹¹⁷ Ben H. Swett (swett-genealogy.com/01John1.html, dated 6 April 2018),

¹¹⁸ Everett S. Stackpole, *Swett Genealogy: Descendants of John Swett of Newbury Mass.*, (Lewiston, Main, The Journal Printshop, n.d. (prob. 1914), 7.

¹¹⁹ Sweet-genealogy.com/01John1.html. the gist of the argument was that there is no indication in original records that Sarah (?) Swett who died 1650 in Newbury was John Swett's wife, while Phebe's deceased husband must have been John Swett, as there were no other candidates.

¹²⁰ Registers of New Buckenham, Norfolk (images on findmypast.co.uk); extant from 1538, check thorough 1640.

Genealogical Summary:

John Swett, b. ca. 1579, England; d. Newbury, Massachusetts 13 Jan 1651/2¹²¹; m. Buckenham, Norfolk, 24 Apr. 1604 Phebe Benton, who d. Newbury 6 May 1665.¹²² John Swett settled in Newbury in 1642.¹²³ Of their eight known children:

iv. Sarah Swett, bapt. New Buckenham 6 May 1610; d. Newbury 7 July 1681;¹²⁴ m. New Buckenham 8 April 1632, Robert Keyes, who d. Newbury 16 July 1647.¹²⁵ Sarah (Swett) Keyes m. (2), as his second wife, Ipswich, Mass., 7 Nov. 1658, John Gage.¹²⁶

The estate of Sarah (Swett) (Keyes) Gage of Newbury was inventoried 27 Sept. 1681; it consisted of personal property with an estimated total value of £28 2s., which was to be "devided to the three daughters viz the wives of Wm Smith, John French & Samuell Buswell."¹²⁷

French Family Ancestry Continued

John French Sr. was the son of Thomas French Jr.¹²⁸, bapt. Assington, Suffolk, England 27 Nov 1608; d. Ipswich 8 Aug 1680; m. by 1632 Mary ____;¹²⁹ d. Ipswich 6 May 1681.¹³⁰

¹²¹ *Great Migration Newsletter 1* (1990), 3.

¹²² *Vital Records of Newbury, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 2 Vols in 3 (Salem, Mass: Essex Institute, 1911), 2:2:732, "old."

¹²³ *Great Migration Newsletter 19* (2010): 13, John Swett a freeholder at Newbury, 7 Dec 1642 (admitted freeman of Massachusetts Bay Colony 18/19 May 1642).

¹²⁴ *Vital Records of Newbury*, 2:2:596, Sarah Gage, widow.

¹²⁵ *Ibid.*, 2:2:633, Robert Keyes.

¹²⁶ Anderson, *Great Migration Begins* 2: 719-722,

¹²⁷ Essex County, Massachusetts, probate records, case # 10506, (images on americanancestors.org)

¹²⁸ *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 2 G-O, 703-706, (ancestry.com), 10/18/2020.

¹²⁹ https://www.geni.com/people/Thomas_French has a lengthy discussion of her ancestry as does, <https://www.wikitree.com/g2g/131315/how-shall-represent-questionableness-mary-scudamore-french>, 10/18/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #35789950 for Thomas French Jr., (ancestry.com), lists Mary Scudamore French. The Scudamore marriage has not been proven. 10/18/2020.

¹²⁹ Melinda Lutz Byrne & John Edward Hardy, "Three French Daughters and their Husbands: Three Unrecorded Marriages from Early Ipswich, Massachusetts, Amy (French) Gage, Susan (French) Kingsbury and Anne (French) Hardy," *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* Vol 175 (Spring 2021): 106: allows that Mary's surname might have been Mary (Howlen) Gosnall, a widow, or Mary Morton, who joined the First Church Boston in 1631.

¹³⁰ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633*, (americanancestors.org), 704, 10/18/2020.

Children:¹³¹

- i. MARY FRENCH (first of the name), bapt. Boston 23 Sept 1631/2; d. soon.
- ii. MARY FRENCH (second of the name), bapt. Boston 2 Mar 1633/4;¹³² d. Topsfield 1719; m. by 1657 Robert Smith of Ipswich, b. abt. 1626; d. 30 Aug 1693.
- iii. JOHN FRENCH, b. abt. 1635, m. by 1657 **Phoebe Keyes**, daughter of Robert Keyes.
- iv. THOMAS FRENCH (III), b. abt. 1636, d. Ipswich, Massachusetts 1711; m. Ipswich 29 Feb 1659 Mary Adams, daughter of William Adams of Ipswich. Thomas served under Major Appleton in the Narragansett campaign 1675/76; and took part in the tax rebellion against Gov. Andros for which he was fined 15£, and was ineligible to hold further office. Readers of Volume One, may recall ancestor Thomas Abbe also served under Major Appleton at Narragansett, during King Phillips War.
- v. SARAH FRENCH, b. abt. 1638; on 30 Sept 1656 "Hackaliah Bridges was accused by Sarah French of his getting her with child." Mr. Bridges was discharged. (EQC 2:2) Later, she and John Fargison were sentenced to be whipped for 'uncleanness together.' She died without issue before 1680, as she is not named in her father's Will.
- vi. SAMUEL FRENCH, b. abt. 1641, may have been convicted for fornication 26 Mar 1667 (EQC 3:398); d. Ipswich 1688. Most records indicate he was unmarried, others that he m. Susanna Stacy.
- vii. EPHRAIM FRENCH, b. 1645; deposed 1658 age 15 (EQC 2:139); d. Enfield, Connecticut Sept 1716. He may have been unmarried or he may have had a son Richard and/or a daughter Patience. There is much conflicting information.

Thomas French Jr., along with his parents, Thomas French Sr. and Susan (Riddlesdale) French and siblings; John, Alice, Dorcas, Susan, Anne, and Mary, emigrated from England to the Massachusetts Bay Colony in the Winthrop Fleet in 1630/31.¹³³ *The Great Migration Begins*, recounts Thomas French Jr. and his sister Alice, who later married Thomas Howlett, arrived in New England in 1632, and their next two younger sisters: Dorcas, who married (1) Christopher Peake, (2) Griffin Crafts, and Susan, arrived in 1633. Their parents and younger siblings sailed after 1633 and are not included in these volumes.¹³⁴

¹³¹ John William Linzee, *The History of Peter Parker and Sarah Ruggles of Roxbury, Mass. and Their Ancestors and Descendants*, (Boston, Mass., JW Linzee, Boston, 1913); *Vital Records of Topsfield Historical Collections* 13:154; *Savage Ancestry of Lieut. Amos Towne* by A.G. Davis, from notes photocopied at the French House June 2019.

¹³² Boston, MA: *Inhabitants and Estates of the Town of Boston, 1630-1822*, (Thwing Collection), *Inhabitants and Estates of the Town of Boston, 1630-1800 and The Crooked and Narrow Streets of Boston, 1630-1822*, <CD-ROM>, (Boston, Mass.: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2001), <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), 8556, 10/18/2020.

¹³³ Frederick A. Virkus, editor, *Immigrant Ancestors: A List of 2,500 Immigrants to America before 1750*, (Baltimore, Genealogical Publishing Co., 1964), 32; Charles Edwards Banks, *The Winthrop Fleet of 1630*, (reprint: Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., 1999), *Appendix A, Alphabetical list of Passengers*, 71, (ancestry.com), 10/18/2020.

¹³⁴ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633*, (americanancestors.org), 705, 10/18/2020.

Thomas French Jr. and his sister Alice were among the earliest members of the Boston church and were followers of John Winthrop. John Bluet wrote to John Winthrop Jr. from Groton, Suffolk, on 4 March 1632/3 and sent his loving commendations to "my schollers Thomas French and John Clarke." Thomas Gostlin wrote to John Winthrop Jr. from Groton, on 11 June 1633 about sending over a maid:

She is one of the goodman Frenches daughters of Assington. I have sent two of them, one for your father and the other for you. Your father must take his choice. The eldest must serve 3 yeeres, & the youngest 4... pray let them be dealt as well with all as any of the same quality.

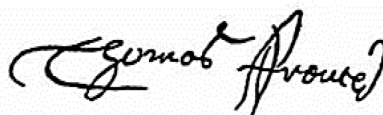
Thomas French Jr., a tailor like his father, initially settled at Boston and was admitted to the Boston church as member #128, no later than mid-1632.¹³⁵ On 6 November 1632, he was made Freeman. (MBCR 1:367)¹³⁶ John Stratton writes from Boston under date of 17 March 1633/4:

I have put my sister a suit of mohair to making at Goodman French's. She were best get the tailor to take her measure and send per Jno. (John) Gallop. (WP 3:157)

Thomas French's Inventory included eleven yards of homemade cloth.¹³⁷

By 1635, Thomas French Jr. moved from Boston to Ipswich, Essex County, Massachusetts. (Winthrop's Papers 3:15) Church records indicate that on 27 January 1638/9, the Boston church dismissed Thomas French to the Ipswich church.¹³⁸ "On 27 January 1638/9 "our brother Thomas French was with the consent of the congregation dismissed to the church of Ipswich" (BChR 22).¹³⁹ With most of the adult male population of Ipswich, he signed the petition of 21 June 1637, to keep Mr. John Winthrop Jr. in town. (WP 3:433)¹⁴⁰

Between July 1636 and September 1638, Thomas French Jr. served as Sergeant in the Pequot War. In 1672, he petitioned the colonial government for a grant of land northwest of Salisbury in behalf of himself and eight other Ipswich men who had seen service in that campaign. His signature on that document is reproduced here.¹⁴¹



¹³⁵ *Boston, MA: Church Records, 1630-1895, The Records of the Churches of Boston*, <CD_ROM>, (Boston, Mass.: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2002.), <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2008), First Church: 3, 10/18/2020.

¹³⁶ *Massachusetts: Miscellaneous Census Substitutes, 1630-1788, 1840, 1890*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2013), From records supplied by Ancestry.com: S1a line 1167306, p. 359;

Line 1167329, p. 360, (no images), 10/18/2020.

¹³⁷ <http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/CHARTS/Chart001/Migration.htm>, 10/18/2020.

¹³⁸ *Boston, MA: Church Records, 1630-1895*, (americanancestors.org), First Church: 13, 10/18/2020.

¹³⁹ <http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/CHARTS/Chart001/Migration.htm>, 10/18/2020.

¹⁴⁰ *Ibid*, 10/18/2020.

¹⁴¹ <https://minerdescent.com/2011/08/22/thomas-french-immigrant/>, 10/18/2020.

He was a member of the Artillery Company in 1638. He was proposed for Lieutenant on 25 March 1639. In a letter of that date Daniel Dennison writes to John Winthrop:

Our company wanting some officers, have according to their liberty, made choice of some, whom they desired me to propound to the Court or Council. They were willing to express their love and liking to Sergeant French and Sergeant Howlett proposing the former for Lieutenant, the other for Ensign. (WP 4:106) ¹⁴² He was not confirmed at that time.

On 20 February 1636/7, there was granted to:

Serjent French ten acres of upland at the hither end of a Neck lying beyond Reedy marsh, to be laid out by the lott layers. Grande to Serjent French, a percell of upland and medoa containing about three acres on the South side of the River, adjoining to his planning lott.

His house was on Bridge Street just off Mill Street between Robert Muzzey and Thomas Scott, his lot covering the site of what was later the pumping station, and land adjacent. It was inherited by his son, Thomas, the constable. (Ipswich in The Massachusetts Bay Colony, 321) ¹⁴³

Thomas French Jr. was active in his community in the years between 1651 – 1678, serving on an Essex Grand jury, on numerous petit juries, and on 30 September 1676, a Coroner's jury on the body of Samuel Adams Jr. On 31 January 1660/61, at a selectman's meeting, eight men, including Thomas French Jr. were granted liberty to clear and break up a parcel of land at Scotts Hill, given two acres each for six years:

Upon condition that they sow four bushels of good hay seed on every acre, to keep up the fence a year so that the English grass should get head, the hay seed to be sown with the last crop." (EQC 3:271) ¹⁴⁴

On 18 May 1664, Sergt. Thomas French deposed that being ordered by Major Genll. Denison to carry two soldiers who were stubborn off the field to prison, he went to them and persuaded them to submit themselves, promising to mediate for them. (EQC 3:140) He was appointed Ensign at Ipswich 18 May 1664. (MBCR 4:2:106) ¹⁴⁵

Ensign Thomas French Jr. and his son, Thomas French (III) were sureties on the bond of Samuel French when young Samuel was charged with a misdemeanor with Lydia Browne, at court 26 March 1667. (EQC 3:398) ¹⁴⁶

¹⁴² *Ibid*, 10/18/2020.

¹⁴³ *Ibid*, 10/18/2020.

¹⁴⁴ *Ibid*, 10/18/2020.

¹⁴⁵ *Ibid*, 10/18/2020.

¹⁴⁶ *Ibid*, 10/18/2020.

Ensign Thomas French Jr., died on 8 August 1680.¹⁴⁷ His Will was dated 3 August 1680¹⁴⁸ and signed by name; proved 28 September 1680; Inventory: 25 August 1680.

To Mary my beloved wife...to my son Thomas French...to my son John French...to my daughter Mary Smith ...to my son Samuel French ...to my son Ephraim French. His Inventory total 217£, 15s, 6d including 150£ in real estate. (EPR 3:380-1)¹⁴⁹

Mary (___) French, died in Ipswich, Essex County, Massachusetts, 6 May 1681, nine months after her husband's death.

The Abstracted Will of Thomas French (Jr.) Written 3 August 1680 – Proved 28 September 1680

The Will of Thomas French, senior,¹⁵⁰ of Ipswich, being weak of body - bequeathed to Mary my beloved wife the bed whereon I used to lie, with all the appurtenances and furniture belonging thereto;

to my son Thomas French my cloak and closecoat;

to my son John French one cow, which is to make up the full sum of thirty pounds which I formerly promised him for his portion;

to my daughter Mary Smith one cow;

to my son Samuel French, the bed whereon he usually lieth, together with the Bedding and Bead-stead belonging to the same;

to my sons Samuel and Thomas French in consideration of 20£ paid to my son Ephraim French as the remaining part of his portion, my two sons Thomas and Samuel shall receive the Pequod lands and, and my division Lot of marsh at Plum-Island to be equally divided betwixt them;

to my son Thomas French my dwelling house and homestead, also my lot lying in Labour in-vain fields containing 12 acres more or less, with all the rest of my cattle, stock of all sorts and moveable goods;

to my son Samuel 2 acres of upland joining to Joseph Quilter's and 2 acres of meadow ground at Reedy marsh;

my son Thomas French to give free liberty to Mary my wife his mother to abide and dwell in the said house and to make use of any room or rooms thereof for her convenient accommodation therein, and likewise to make use of all or any such moveables as I do now leave in the hands of my son Thomas as may be necessary and convenient for her use during the term of her natural life;

After her decease, my son Thomas shall deliver to my three children John, Samuel and Mary three of the biggest pewter dishes, which shall them be left and remain, that is to say, to each of them one;

my two sons Thomas and Samuel to provide for their mother's comfortable maintenance and if she is not satisfied, they to allow her 9£ paid by Thomas and 20s paid by Samuel annually; and if she suffers sickness and the aforesaid 10£ does not suffice;

my two sons Thomas and Samuel shall supply her with necessaries and my lot in Labour-in-vain fields and two acres of meadow at Reedy Marsh shall stand bound respectively to my said wife during her natural life as security for the true performance of this my Will as respecting her maintenance by my two sons;

my son Thomas French sole executor (EPR 3:379-81) ... Thomas French Sen. ...

Proved in Ipswich court 28 September 1680 by Mary French and Samuel French.

¹⁴⁷ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850*, (americanancestors.org), *Ipswich Vol 2*: 561, 10/18/2020.

¹⁴⁸ *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register, Vol 6*: 254, (americanancestors.org), 10/18/2020.

¹⁴⁹ *Essex County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1638-1881*, Case #10190, 5 pages, (americanancestors.org), 10/18/2020.
Essex County, MA: Early Probate Records, 1635-1681, Vol 3:379, (americanancestors.org), 10/18/2020.

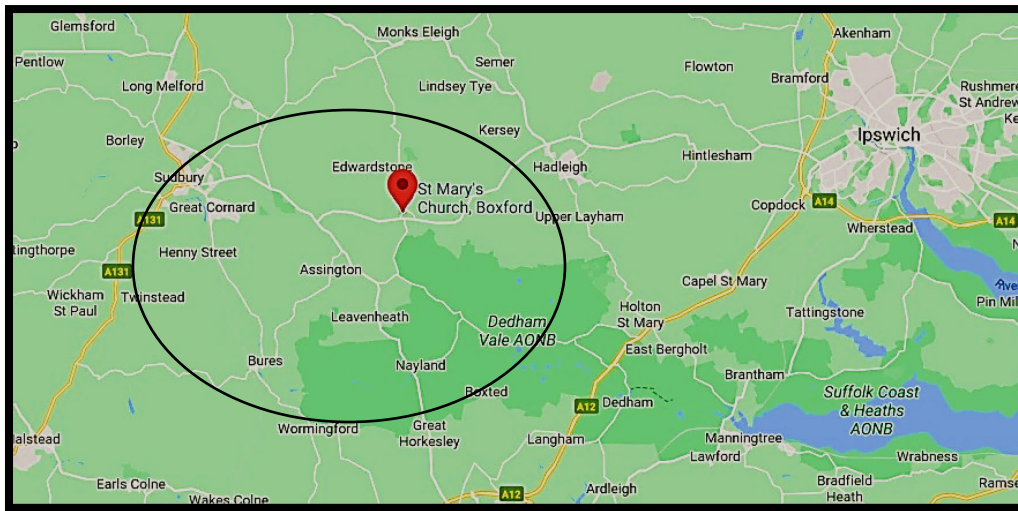
¹⁵⁰ In America, Thomas French referred to himself as Senior, though as the son of a Thomas French Sr. in England, I have given him the suffix of Jr.

**Inventory of the Estate of Ensign Thomas French
taken 25 August 1680 by Jonathan Wade and John Whipple**

	£	s	d
His wearing apparel, Linon & woolin	4.	10.	
The grat beed in the parler with what belongs toe it	7.	10.	
A trundle bed with what belongs toe it	3.		
Thre chests 20s, 7 cushins 20s	2.		
4 payer of sheets 40s, 4 pilowbesrs 8s	2.	8.	
22 nakcines 30s, 3 tablecloths 20s	2.	10.	
11 yards of homemade cloth	1.	13.	
Warming pann 8s, yd & halfe of serge 6s	14.		
A cutlach & belt 6s, 3 small baskets 2s		8.	
2 bruches 2s, small looking glass 1s	3.		
6 chayers 6s, table & foorme 7s	13.		
One spitt, fire pan, tonges, gridione, tramell	18.		
9 pewter dishes, 2-pint pot & a half pint,			
Two porengers, one beacer cup, 2 poringer	1.	17.	
Two bras Ketls	2.	15.	
One Irone potts, 3 scilits, a scrimer	14.		
Tine ware 6s, 9 spones 18d	7.	6.	
Barrels, payels, trayes, kellers		14.	
Earthen ware		8.	
Old axe & howe 3s, books 10s	13.		
3 loads of haye 30s	1.	10.	
A bed given to Samuel French with what belongs to it	4.	15.	
A meane bed with what belongs tow it	2.		
Doz. Halfe of trenchers 18d, sithes 2s	3.	6.	
5 sheep & 3 Lames	2.	13.	
4 cowes	12.		
8 swine	3.	11.	
His dwelling hous & barne & homestead with the Privelidg belongin	70.		
2 accers of Land by Scotcs Lane	10.		
12 accres of land at Labor-in-Vain	60.		
2 acers of march in the common field	10.		
Debts due by booke	7.	7.	6.
Total	217.	15.	6.
Debts he oweth	34.	8.	5.
Making Total	183.	7.	1.
(EPR 3:380-381) ¹⁵¹			

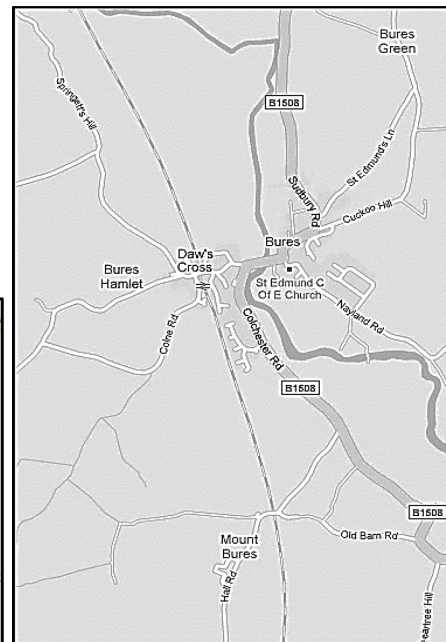
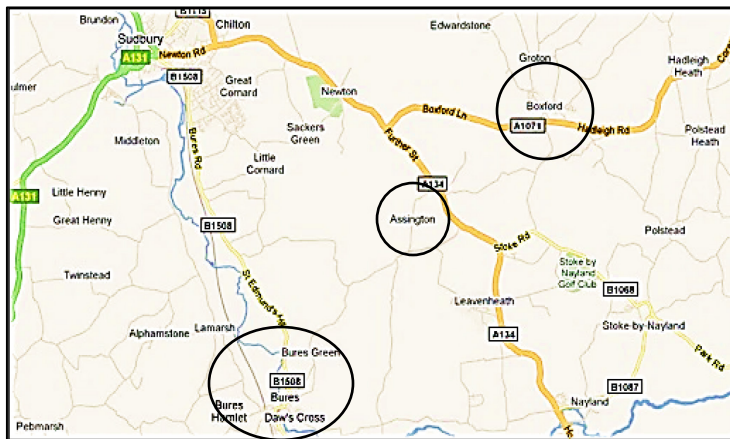
¹⁵¹ Linzee, *Ancestry of Peter Parker*; Savage, V.R., *Topsfield Historical Collections Vol 13:154*; A.G. Davis, "Ancestry of Lieut. Amos Towne:" notes gathered at my 2019 visit to the French House in Topsfield; <http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/CHARTS/Chart001/Migration.htm>, 12/3/2020.

French Ancestry in England



This map shows the close proximity of the villages of Boxford (where Thomas French's wife resided), Assington and Bures (where the French family lived before Assington).
maps.google.com

The Stour River (the darker grey line) on the map on the right, divides the counties of Essex and Suffolk, but one can see that Bures existed on both sides of the Stour River. The parish must have been on the Suffolk side because no records were found on the Essex side for the French family, unless they are from Mount Bures.

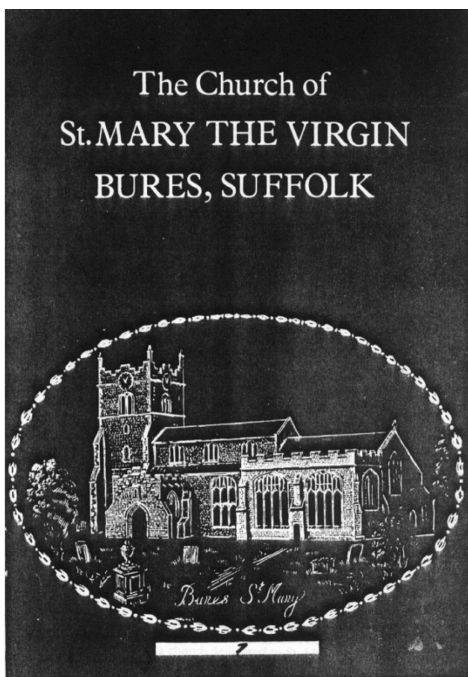


The map (above left) again shows the close proximity of the villages of Assington (in the center) and Groton (where Governor Winthrop of Boston resided), Boxford (where Thomas French's wife resided), Bures (where the French family lived before Assington), Twinstead (where William French's two sons were born), and other outlying villages (Lamarsh, Pebmarsh, and Polstead) where other French family members lived.



St. Mary's Church,
Boxford, Suffolk

By Robert Edwards, CC BY-SA 2.0,
commons.wikimedia.org



Bures St. Mary Church



Saint Edmund's Church in Assington,
County Suffolk, England
Most Frenches of this line were baptized here.

Photo by Mara French, 1994.¹⁵²

Thomas French Jr. (immigrant) was baptized in St. Mary's Church (above left), a 14th century building in the center of the village of Bures.¹⁵³

¹⁵² The photo of St. Edmund's and maps on previous page:

<http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/CHARTSWEB/ChartE001.htm>, 10/18/2020.

¹⁵³ http://homepages.rootsweb.com/~nvjack/fylbrigg/church_of_st_mary.htm, 10/18/2020.

Thomas French Jr. was the son of Thomas French Sr., baptized in Assington, county Suffolk, England or Bures St. Mary, Suffolk 11 October 1584;¹⁵⁴ died Ipswich before 5 November 1639; married in Assington 5 September 1608 Susan Riddlesdale,¹⁵⁵ baptized at Boxford, county Suffolk, England 20 Apr 1584,¹⁵⁶ daughter of John and Dorcas Riddlesdale; died Ipswich August 1658.

Susan and Thomas were both twenty-four when they married in Assington, Suffolk on 5 September 1608. The baptism of their son Thomas occurred two months later. Six daughters and one more son were baptized in Assington between 1608 and 1625.¹⁵⁷

The parish of Assington is adjacent to the parish of Bures Saint Mary, which straddles the River Stour, and lies partly in county Suffolk and partly in county Essex. Boxford adjoins the parish of Assington on the northeast. The reader may refer to the maps on the previous pages. The only French records in the Parish of St. Mary's are:

- Jacob Frenche, m. Susann Warren 27 Sept 1579.
- William French, bapt. 25 July 1580 (parents not named).
- Jacob French, bapt. 12 Aug 1582 (parents not named).
- Thomas French, son of Jacob, bapt. 11 Oct 1584.

"These are surely the baptisms of Thomas of Assington and his two elder brothers."¹⁵⁸

Children of Thomas French Sr. and Susan (Riddlesdale) French all born or baptized at Assington: ¹⁵⁹

- i. **THOMAS FRENCH JR. (ENSIGN)**, bapt. 27 Nov 1608; d. Ipswich, Massachusetts 8 Aug 1680; m. by 1632 **Mary** ____;¹⁶⁰ d. 6 May 1681; immigrated 1630 with the Winthrop Fleet to New England.

¹⁵⁴ *The Bures St Mary Parish Register* began in 1538,

https://www.familysearch.org/wiki/en/Bures_St_Mary,_Essex_Genealogy, 10/18/2020.

¹⁵⁵ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 143: 213 – 220: 217, J.B. Threlfall, "John Wyatt of Ipswich, Massachusetts and his wife Mary (____) Riddlesdale," (americanancestors.org), 10/18/2020; Vol 142: 250 – 252: 250, J.B. Threlfall, "Thomas French of Assington, Suffolk, England and Ipswich, Massachusetts," (americanancestors.org), 10/18, 2020.

¹⁵⁶ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 142: 393, "Corrections to the Current Volume," 10/18/2020.

¹⁵⁷ Byrne & Hardy, "Three French Daughters and their Husbands: ...", *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* #175, Spring 2021: 104-119.

¹⁵⁸ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 142: 250, (americanancestors.org), 10/18/2020.

¹⁵⁹ Walter Goodwin Davis, *The Ancestry of Dudley Wildes, 1759-1820, of Topsfield, Massachusetts*, (Portland, Maine, Anthoensen Press, 1959), 63-64, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/18/2020; Linzee, *Ancestry of Peter Parker, Topsfield Historical Collections* 13:153; *Essex Quarterly Court Files*; Pope, *Pioneers of Mass: Vital Records*, photocopy of notes received at The French House June 2019.

¹⁶⁰ Many sources listed Mary's surname as Scudamore, without proof. *The NEGHR Register* Vol 175:106, Byrne & Hardy article allows that Mary's surname might have been Mary (Howlen) Gosnall, a widow or Mary Morton, who joined the First Church Boston in 1631.

- ii. ALICE FRENCH, bapt. 9 Oct 1610; d. Ipswich, Massachusetts 26 June 1666; immigrated 1630 with brother Thomas, m. Boston Massachusetts 1634 Thomas Howlett; seven children. Alice was a member of the Boston Church 1634, dismissed to Ipswich church 16 June 1644, being "now the wife of Thomas Howlett, he being among the 1st planters of Ipswich and b. abt. 1606." Howlett, m. (2) Rebecca (___) Smith, widow of Thomas Smith. He, d. 22 Dec 1677, testate.
- iii. DORCAS FRENCH, bapt. 31 July 1614; d. Roxbury, Massachusetts 30 Dec 1697; immigrated 1633 with her sister Susan on three years' service to John Winthrop as a maidservant; was admitted to Boston Church 10 Aug 1634; m. Roxbury, Massachusetts 3 Jan 1636 (1) Christopher Peake; eight children; m. (2) Roxbury, Massachusetts bef. 4 Oct 1689 Griffin Craft as his third wife.
- iv. SUSAN FRENCH, b. 25 Apr 1616; immigrated 1633 with her sister Dorcas; to serve four years in the family of John Winthrop, Jr. Ipswich, Massachusetts; no further information.
- v. ANNE FRENCH, bapt. Assington 15 Mar 1617; no further information, though she probably immigrated in 1637.
- vi. MARGARET FRENCH, bapt. 12 Mar 1619; bur. Assington 25 Nov 1635; she was the only child not listed on the immigration records.
- vii. JOHN FRENCH, bapt. 26 May 1622; d. Northampton, Hampshire, Massachusetts 1 Feb 1696/97; testate; immigrated 1635; bur. Bridge Street Cemetery; m. Dorchester, Suffolk, Massachusetts bef. 1654 Freedom Kingsley, b. abt. 1630, daughter of John & Elizabeth (___) Kinglsey; d. Northampton, Massachusetts 26 July 1689; seven or eight children. He was a tailor of Ipswich. He was granted administration of his mother's estate in 1658.
- viii. MARY FRENCH, bapt. 6 Jan 1624; d. Ipswich 1 Feb 1697; immigrated 1635, m. Ipswich, Massachusetts 1644 George Smith; five or six children; he, d. Ipswich 15 Dec 1674, testate.
- ix. RICHARD FRENCH, b. 8 Dec 1625, died that same day (not listed in several books).

From the discussion in a *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* article by John Threlfall, it seems Thomas Sr.'s father, Jacob French had moved his family to Assington ca. 1585/86 or transferred church affiliation there at this time. At the time, Bury St. Mary was part of Assington, owned mostly by the Gurdon family. Thomas Sr. occupied a farm located in Assington called Garlands. John Gurdon owned it.

The Will of John Gurdon, Esq., of Assington, made 6 December 1621, left to his grandson John Gurdon, "the messuage or farmhouse wherein one Thomas French doth now inhabit, called Garlands."¹⁶¹ Groton, Suffolk was also the Winthrop family seat. John Winthrop Sr. was the founding Governor of the Massachusetts Bay colony and his son John Winthrop Jr. was early governor of Connecticut, which at the time included Ipswich.

¹⁶¹ Davis, *The Ancestry of Dudley Wildes, 1759-1820, of Topsfield, Massachusetts* 63-64, 10/18/2020.

John Gurdon Esq., was an English county gentleman, landowner, and politician, who sat in the House of Commons in 1571, serving as High Sheriff of Suffolk, an office later held by his son Brampton Gurdon Esq. who was also a member of Parliament for Sudbury. Brampton Gurdon was a friend and neighbor of Massachusetts first Gov. Winthrop.

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Gurdon_\(died_1623\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Gurdon_(died_1623)); Francis J. Bremer, *John Winthrop; America's Forgotten Founding Father*, (Oxford Univ. Press, Oxford, 2005), 111.

In late 1636, Reverend Nathaniel Rogers, the Vicar of Assington, also immigrated to New England, where he became the pastor at Ipswich, Massachusetts, until he died in 1665. Four other Assington families also came with Rogers. Over the next year, Thomas French Sr., his wife Susan and remaining children, also crossed the Atlantic to settle in Ipswich, where he first appears on record in New England in 1638 with a land grant.¹⁶²

Thomas French Sr., removed to Ipswich before 25 July 1638 when a lot of his is mentioned as a boundary to land at the Reedy Marsh. He lived but a couple of years in New England, dying in Ipswich, Massachusetts before 5 November 1639 when the administration of his estate was granted to his wife. The land which he left, was to be disposed of by sale or otherwise, by the advice of the Magistrates of Ipswich, for the maintenance of his wife and education of his children which 'are not yet able to provide for themselves,' nor were disposed of in their father's life.¹⁶³

His administration indicates that he had children over the age of 21 years in 1639, and also children who were minors and under the care of their mother.¹⁶⁴ His burial location is unknown.¹⁶⁵

"Widow French" is enumerated in a listing of Ipswich commoners in 1641.¹⁶⁶ Susan (Riddlesdale) French dies in August 1658.¹⁶⁷ One source mentioned a Dorcas Riddlesdale,

¹⁶² Donald Lines Jacobus, Edgar Francis Waterman, *The Granberry family and allied families*, (Hartford, Connecticut, Edgar F. Waterman, 1945), *Ipswich: Thomas French*, 218-220: 219, (books.google.com), 10/18/2020; <http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/CHARTSWEB/ChartE001.htm>, 10/18/2020.

¹⁶³ Nathaniel Bradstreet Shurtleff, *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England*, (Boston, Press of W. White, 1855-61), Vol 1: 278-279, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/18/2020.

¹⁶⁴ <https://minerdescent.com/2011/08/22/thomas-french-immigrant/>, 10/18/2020.

¹⁶⁵ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #152005281, (ancestry.com), 10/18/2020.

¹⁶⁶ Linzee, *The History of Peter Parker ...*, 412-429 for the family of Thomas French and Susan Riddlesdale and their descendants, 419, "widow French," <archive.org>, 10/19/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 47:362, A.D. Weld French, of Boston, "The Frenches of Ipswich," 10/19/2020.

¹⁶⁷ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850*, Vol 2: 591, *Ipswich Deaths*, (americanancestors.org), 10/19/2020; *The Probate Records of Essex County, Massachusetts*, Vol I: 1635-1664, (Salem, Massachusetts, Essex Institute, 1916), 272: Essex County Registry of Probate - Docket No. 10189, *Probate Records of Essex Co.*, (archive.org), 10/19/2020; *Vital Records of Ipswich Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849*, (Salem, Massachusetts, The Essex Institute, Salem,

who had been a witness in a case in Ipswich court March 1647. She may have been a niece of Susan (Riddlesdale) French, as her sister Dorcas was buried Assington 15 December 1610.¹⁶⁸

Administration of the estate of Susan French, deceased, was granted to her son John French, in September 1658 by the Ipswich Court.¹⁶⁹ Inventory was taken by Robert Lord and Phillip (his (l) mark) ffowler on 10 March 1659: received in Ipswich court 29 March 1659 (Essex Co. Probate Files, Doceket 10, 189) and follows:

**An Inventory of the goods of Susan ffrench widdow of Ipswich deceased
taken the 10th of March 1658
by Robert Lord and Phillip Fowler; the total being 12£, 11, 6
(Ipswich Quarterly Court Records V1: 71)¹⁷⁰**

	£	s	d
Imprimus a fether bed old and two small fether pillows			
One old coverlet & blanket	2	10	0
It. her weareing apparel	4	0	0
It. one old chest & box without a lid an old Hogshead	0	8	0
It. a linen wheele & 2 chaires	0	5	0
It. an old brase pot & a little ould skillet & little Iron pot	0	10	0
It. two pewter dishes porringer & skim[m]er	0	8	0
It. two paire of old shirs [sheers] ould brase & other small things	0	6	0
It. a spit tongs gridiron & other small things	0	12	0
It. an old warmeing pan & frying	0	6	0
It. two small trayes earthenware, other lumbar	0	5	0
It. a cowe old	3	0	0

Riddlesdale Family Ancestry

Though I was unable to find information on the origins or meaning of the surname Riddlesdale, research revealed Susan Riddlesdale as the 8th great grandmother of Walt Disney.

<https://famouskin.com>

Susan Riddlesdale was the daughter of John Riddlesdale, bapt. Boxford 26 Sept 1557; bur. Bures St. Mary, Assington, Suffolk 4 June 1629, son of Henry Riddlesdale and Joan ____; m. probably Assington, abt. 1583 Dorcas ____, b. Assington 1571; bur Assington 24 Sept 1624.

1910), www.ma-vitalrecords.org, deaths: citing Court Records (p. 561), 'Susan, wid., Aug —, 1658, CTR, 10/19/2020.

¹⁶⁸ <https://minerdescent.com/2011/08/22/thomas-french-immigrant/>, 10/19/2020.

¹⁶⁹ *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts, Volume II: 1656-1662*, (Salem, Mass., Essex Institute, 1912), Vol II p. 118 administration given to son John, (<http://salem.lib.virginia.edu/Essex/vol2/images/essex118.html>), 10/19/2020.

¹⁷⁰ *Essex County, MA: Early Probate Records, 1635-1681*, (americanancestors.org), *Ipswich Quarterly Court Records Vol 1: 272*, 10/19/2020.

Dorcas is named as John's wife in the baptismal records of daughters Susan and Sarah and on land records of January 1613/14.¹⁷¹ The Assington Parish records start in 1598 and there are no Bishop's Transcripts for 1583, hence the 'about 1583' date of marriage.

Children:

- i. **SUSAN RIDDLESDALE**, bapt. Boxford 20 Apr 1584, "dau. of John Riddlesdale & Dorcas his wife"; d. Ipswich, Massachusetts Aug 1658; m. 5 Sept 1608 **Thomas French**, son of Jacob and Susan (Warren) French, bapt. 11 Oct 1584 Bures St. Mary; d. late 1639. Susan d. Ipswich Aug 1658. They went to New England, where they settled in Ipswich, Mass., nine children.
- ii. **RICHARD RIDDLESDALE**, b. abt. 1586, bur. Assington 6 Nov. 1610; probably unmarried, the administration of his estate was granted 28 Feb 1610/11 to his sisters Susan and Joan.
- iii. **THOMAS RIDDLESDALE**, b. abt. 1588; named in the Will of his grandfather Henry Riddlesdale.
- iv. **JOAN RIDDLESDALE**, b. abt. 1590; m. Assington, Suffolk 11 Oct 1610 Richard Mather, in a double wedding with her sister Dorcas. Joan and Dorcas may have been twins.
- v. **DORCAS RIDDLESDALE**, b. abt. 1590; bur. Assington, Suffolk 15 Dec 1610; m. Assington, Suffolk 11 Oct 1610 Thomas Dynes, yeoman, in a double wedding with her sister Joan. Dorcas and Joan may have been twins. The administration of her estate was granted to her sisters Susan and Joan. No children. I have to wonder about her cause of death only two months after her wedding.
- vi. **EDWARD RIDDLESDALE**, b. abt. 1592; bur. Assington, Suffolk 9 Feb 1630; m. Mary __; she m. (2) Assington, Suffolk 27 June 1632 John Wyatt, b. abt. 1594; d. Ipswich Dec. 1665, who m. (1) Martha Sheldrake, daughter of John and Joan Sheldrake. Mary and John settled at Ipswich, Massachusetts probably with Mary's daughters Mary, Sarah, and Dorcas Riddlesdale. This is the Dorcas mentioned at the death of her aunt Susan (Riddlesdale) French.
- vii. **JOHN RIDDLESDALE**, b. Assington, Suffolk abt. 1594/8; bur. Assington, Suffolk 10 Dec 1602.
- viii. **SARAH RIDDLESDALE**, bapt. Assington, Suffolk 1 Mar 1599; m. Assington 30 May 1620 Marke Gryme.

On 3 January 1613/14, John & Dorcas Riddlesdale sold a 10-acre close, two others of 5 acres, and one of 2 acres to John Gryme the elder of Assington and his wife Faith for 120£. All were pasture lands in Assington. On the same day, Dorcas Riddlesdale released her interest in land leased in June 1555 by John and Robert Gurdon for 500 years to John Vigorus, the younger, clothier of Langham, Essex, England. (Gurdon papers at Ipswich – HD 22/1/4) John Vigorus was perhaps Dorcas' grandfather.

¹⁷¹ http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/CHARTSWEB/ChartE001.htm#_Riddlesdale_Family_in_1 for this and much of the Riddlesdale information, 10/19/2020.

Dorcas Riddlesdale was buried in Assington 24 September 1624. John Riddlesdale's burial record at Assington 4 June 1629, states that he was of Bures. He may have been living with one of his children at his death. He was buried next to his wife at Assington.¹⁷² Bures Saint Mary and Assington are adjacent parishes and Boxford is adjacent to Assington on the northeast.

John Riddlesdale was the son of Henry Riddlesdale Sr., eldest son of Jasper and Elizabeth Riddlesdale/Ridsdale, b. Boxford abt. 1518/20; bur. Boxford 25 June 1591; m. abt. 1554 Joan ___, who d. aft. June 1591. Named as Joan Ridsdale my wife, in Henry's Will. Parish records of Boxford begin in 1557.

Children of Henry Riddlesdale Sr. and Joan (___) all born or baptized in Boxford, Suffolk, England:

- i. ROBERT RIDDLESDALE, b. abt. 1554/5; named in father's Will.
- ii. **JOHN RIDDLESDALE**, bapt. 27 Sept 1557; bur. Assington, Suffolk 4 June 1629; m. abt. 1583 **Dorcas** ___.
Dorcas
- iii. THOMAS RIDDLESDALE, bapt. 2 June 1560; bur. 7 Feb 1588/9; m. Boxford, Suffolk 1 Sept 1584 Susan Bronde, bapt. 23 Jan 1560/1, daughter of John Bronde; Susan m. (2) 30 Jan 1593/4 Richard Wendall; son of Thomas and Susan Wendall.
- iv. JOAN RIDDLESDALE, bapt. 23 Oct 1562; m. Boxford, Suffolk 30 Aug 1582 Richard Walton, bapt. 8 Apr 1561, son of Richard Walton; children: Richard, Richard, William and Joan.
- v. JULYAN RIDDLESDALE, bapt. 10 Dec 1564; m. Boxford, Suffolk 13 June 1587 John Stanbye; son: John.
- vi. HENRY RIDDLESDALE JR., bapt. 6 Mar 1566/7; m. Boxford, Suffolk 5 Sept 1592 Bridget Smythe, bapt. 20 Apr 1572, daughter of Symond and Alice Smythe; son: Henry.
- vii. RICHARD RIDDLESDALE, bapt. 13 Aug 1570; d. early 1610; m. Groton 17 Sept 1593 Rose Brand. His widow was granted administration of his estate on 5 June 1610. Rose (Brand) Riddlesdale m. (2) 23 Apr 1611 John Warren, b. abt. 1555; d. 1613, cardmaker¹⁷³ of Nayland, Suffolk, as his third wife; Rose m. (3) Boxford, Suffolk 20 Nov 1617 Richard Grymes.

The Boxford Churchwardens Accounts show that in 1555, Henry Riddlesdale Sr. was paid 6d by the churchwardens for carrying a load of wood, and, like his father, he helped to organize a church ale in 1560. The ale was a money-making social gathering, which involved food, drink, and entertainment. Henry was a churchwarden in 1562 and assessed 10£ in fees in 1568.

¹⁷² *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 143: 213 – 220, 213, John Brooks Threlfall, "John Wyatt of Ipswich, Massachusetts and his wife Mary (___) Riddlesdale," (americanancestors.org), 10/19/2020.

¹⁷³ A maker of cards or instruments for combing wool, <http://www.worldthroughthelens.com/family-history/old-occupations.php>, 10/19/2020.

**Henry Ridsdale Sr. of Boxford, yeoman, sick in Body,
made his Will on 20 June 1591; proved 9 December 1591.¹⁷⁴**

... the Will of Henry Ridsdale of Boxford, yeoman...sick in body...to John Ridsdale my son 14£ to be paid within six months next after the end & expiration of my lease which I have in the house where I now dwell called Coddendam Hall...to Robert Ridsdale my son all my corn both wheat & mixtoland as it now standeth...to Henry Ridsdale my son 60£...to Richard Ridsdale my son 60£...to John Stansbye my daughter's son 10£ at age 21...to Richard Ridsdale my son's son 4£ at age 21, but if he die, then said 4£ to go to his brother Thomas Ridsdale at age 21...to the poor of Boxford 10s...to Agnes Church, widow, 10s...residue to Joan Ridsdale my wife, she to be sole executrix.

Signed by mark. Witnesses: John Winterflod, William Brand, Symon Smuth, John Higham.

Henry Riddlesdale was the son of Jasper Riddlesdale (Rydysdale), b. abt. 1490; d. Boxford, Suffolk Sept 1552. His Will was dated 29 Aug 1552 and proved Boxford, Suffolk 15 Sept 1552. Also known as Jasper Rydysdale, husbandman, he was a churchwarden at Boxford 1542-3 and 1547-8. Jasper, m. probably Boxford, Suffolk abt. 1581, Elizabeth ____; d. Boxford, Suffolk ca. Apr 1553.

Children all born or baptized, Boxford, Suffolk:¹⁷⁵

- i. **HENRY RIDDLES DALE**, b. abt. 1518/20; bur. Boxford, Suffolk 25 June 1591; m. probably at Boxford, Suffolk abt. 1554 **Joan** ____; d. aft. June 1591; named as Joan Ridsdale my wife in Henry's Will. His mother may have called him Harry in her Will.
- ii. **THOMAS RIDDLES DALE**, b. abt. 1522; d. possibly by 1567; possibly married Joan, who m. (2) Boxford, Suffolk 5 Oct. 5, 1567, Launcelott Mayor, a widower.
- iii. **ROBERT RIDDLES DALE**, no information was found.
- iv. **PETER RIDDLES DALE**, paid rent in 1547 to the church at Boxford, Suffolk; married unknown; son: Thomas.
- v. **GRACE RIDDLES DALE**, probably m. by Aug 1552 Richard Keble.
- vi. **ELIZABETH RIDDLES DALE**, possibly m. abt. Sept 1552 Thomas Ryvet.
- vii. **JANE RIDDLES DALE**, possible twin of Amy. She and Amy were to receive their legacies at the same time according to their mother's Will. All the other children's legacies were scheduled one year apart.
- viii. **AMY RIDDLES DALE**, possible twin of Jane.
- ix. **RICHARD RIDDLES DALE**, b. aft. 1532; under age 21 in 1552.

¹⁷⁴ *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 143: 213, Threlfall, "John Wyatt of Ipswich, Massachusetts and his wife Mary (____) Riddlesdale," (americanancestors.org), 10/19/2020; also, Ref: R2/42/127 & W1/48/110, *Parish Registers, Probate Records at Bury Saint Edmunds* from notes gathered at the French House in Topsfield, June 2019.

¹⁷⁵ *Parish Records; Probate Records at Bury Saint Edmunds; Boxford Churchwarden's Accounts 1530-1561*, edited by Peter Northeast, Suffolk Records Society, Vol XXIII; NEHGS – 143: 213-220. Photocopy from pages received on my visit to the French House, June 2019.

- x. JOHN RIDDLESDALE, b. abt. 1536; bur. Groton, Suffolk 5 Dec 1614; m. Boxford, Suffolk 29 Nov 1562, Elizabeth Patten, and moved to Groton shortly thereafter. Children: Henry, d. as an infant, Mary, Thomas possibly Richard, and possibly Jasper.
- xi. WILLIAM RIDDLESDALE, probably the youngest child of Jasper and Elizabeth; m. Polstead, Suffolk 2 Nov 1561 Joan Johnson.

Jasper Rydysdale, a husbandman, was a churchwarden at Boxford 1542-3 and 1547-8. Church records, during the period 1540 - 1550, show that he was paid various sums for materials that probably went towards church repairs: loads of straw, clay, gravel and carriage of lead (to repair the church roof) (2d in 1547). In 1541, he helped to organize a church ale. In 1548, he bought a blue linen cloth from the church for 2s. He also received rent money from the church for the church house (1d in 1544). He rented a house at Hagmer from the church for 12s.

Jasper may have been the son of Robert Edward Riddlesdale formerly Rydysdale, d. 1527.¹⁷⁶ There is no proof.

Saint Mary's Church, Boxford



The origins of the church are unclear, but there is indirect reference to it in the Domesday Book (1086) via an entry for the Manor of Kodenham, which lay in what is now the Parish of Boxford. There is some evidence that the River Box used to run nearer to the church than its present course, giving rise to structural problems with the tower. Certainly, early seventeenth century churchwardens' accounts demonstrate a continuing and burdensome requirement for repair and maintenance. (As did those of the Riddlesdale's in the 16th century.)

Boxford became an important center for the processing and trading of wool during the later medieval period. It was home to many wealthy clothiers and wool merchants.

www.achurchnearyou.com/church/2190 for additional information and history

¹⁷⁶ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Rydysdale-1>, unsourced reference, 10/19/2020.

**The Will of Japser Rydysdale of Boxford, co Suffolk, husbandman
Written 29 August 1552 – Proved 15 September 1552**

... to each of my daughters, namely Grace, Elizabeth, Jane and Amy 4£ apiece to be paid by the hands of Elizabeth my wife and Henry (Sr.) my son, save that 4s 10d which shall be paid of the debts that her husband Richard Keble owes me ... to Thomas my son my house & land with appurtenances called Dove's lying in a street of Boxford called Hagmer tye, the same Thomas my son paying to Richard & John his brothers 20£, 10£ apiece of good and lawful money, 33s, 4d apiece every year, that is 3£, 6s, 8d to both till the sum of 20£ be fully paid ... the first payment within the first year after he enter and take possession of the same house & land ... money to be held by executors until they reach age 21 ... houses & land in Polstead called Osmonds to Elizabeth my wife for life, then to son William ... Elizabeth my wife and Henry my son to have my farm in Boxford, Henry paying to Robert my son his brother 10£ within one year after he enter the place ... Elizabeth my wife & Henry my son to have all my corn, hay, horses, sheep, cattle ... Thomas Rydysdale and Henry Rydysdale my son and Thomas Ryvett, parson of Boxford, to be supervisors & each to have 20s ... Alice Bygg my kinswoman (sister) to have 3 yards of my red cloth ... to every Godchild 4d ... to the poor men's box of Boxford 3s, 4d ... I forgive Peter my son the 5 marks that he owns me ... I forgive my sister Agnes 13s that she owns me ... to my two sisters Christine Egle and Margery Skott, to each of them 6s, 4d ... to Thomas Ryddsdale (his grandson) the son of Peter Ryddsdale 2 sheep ... to Peter my son 3£, 6s, 8d to be paid him by Thomas Rydysdale and Henry Rydysdale my executors.

Witness Peter Fenne and Jafrey Purdy of Boxford, and Thomas Revett, parson of the same town, John Bonde of Postead and Thomas Tomson of Boxford. Proved 15 September 1552. (Ref: R2/31/61 & W1/13/46)

**The Will of Elizabeth Rydysdale, widow, of Boxford, co Suffolk
Written 30 Oct 1552 – Proved 13 April 1533**

... to be buried in the churchyard of Boxford ... to forty of the poorest houses in Boxford 6d apiece ... to my son Thomas Rydysdale 4£ within 1 year next after my decease ... to my son Peter Redisdale 4£ within two years ... to Grace my daughter 3£ in three years ... to Elizabeth my daughter 3£ in 4 years ... to Jane my daughter 3£ in 5 years ... to Amy my daughter 3£ in 5 years ... to Robert Rydysdale my son 6£ & a calf in 6 years ... to my son Richard Rydesdale 6£ & a calf in 7 years ... to John Rydesdale my son 6£ & a calf in 8 years ... to my son William Rydysdale 6£ & a calf in 9 years ... if either Robert, Richard, John or William die before age 21 ... to be equally divided ... to John my daughter my best gown & my tawny damask sleeves ... to Elizabeth my daughter my best red petticoat and my best red cap ... to Grace my daughter my second gown and my second broad black hat ... unto Thomas my son my best kirtle ... unto my sister Rose Benet my red kirtle ... unto Amy my daughter my second red petticoat ... unto Peter my son my second white cap & my best black silk sleeves ... unto Harry my son my best silk hat & my best whgiht ... unto mother Agnes sometime my beax my old red cap ... unto Thomas Frost's wife my russet petticoat ... residue to Harry Rydysdale my son, he to be sole executor ... supervisors to be Thomas Ryvet my son-in-law ... and for performance of this my Last Will ... said Harry Rydysdale to stand bound by his bill obligatory unto the foresaid Thomas Ryvert & Thomas Osborn of Boxford in the sum of 70£ within 21 days next after my decease.

Witnesses: Thomas Ryvet, Anthony Tompson, Rob't Pattey, Wylliam Hall and Wylliam Rudland. Proved 13 April 1533. (Ref.: R2/31/77 & W1/13/54)¹⁷⁷

(Note: Various spellings are original to the Wills.)

¹⁷⁷ *Parish Registers, Probate Records at Bury Saint Edmunds Boxford Churchwardens' Accounts 1530-1561*, edited by Peter Northeast, *Suffolk Records Society*, Vol XXIII, *NEGHS Register* 143:213-220, John Brooks Threlfall, "John Wyatt of Ipswich, Massachusetts and his wife Mary) ____ Riddlesdale," notes gathered at the French house in Topsfield, June 2019.

French Family Ancestry Continued

Thomas French Sr. was the son of Jacob French, b. Assington, Suffolk ca. 26 Apr 1553 (but not in Bures St. Mary, Suffolk, as those records have been checked); they moved to Assington ca. 1585/86; d. same 11 Nov 1615; bur. St Edmund King and Martyr Churchyard, Suffolk;¹⁷⁸ m. Bures, St. Mary's, Suffolk, England ca. 1580 or 27 Sept 1558 Susan Warren,¹⁷⁹ b. Assington, Suffolk ca. 1556; d. Bures St Mary's Suffolk 1 Aug 1613;¹⁸⁰ most likely the daughter of William Warren of Bures St. Mary, b. ca. 1530 and Katherine (___) Warren, d. 1570/71. Her Will follows on the next page.

Children (Bures St Mary vital records began in 1538):

- i. WILLIAM FRENCH, bapt. Bures St Mary 25 July 1580. He was named after his grandfather on his mother's side, William Warren.
- ii. JACOB FRENCH, bapt. Bures St Mary 12 Aug 1582; he might have died young. Named after his father; bur. at St Mary's Church (parents not named.)
- iii. **THOMAS FRENCH SR.**, bapt. Bures St Mary 11 Oct 1584; d. 5 Nov 1639; bur. unknown; m. Assington 5 Sept 1608 **Susan Riddlesdale**. Thomas was named after his grandfather, Thomas French. This entire family immigrated to New England.
- iv. ELIZABETH FRENCH, bapt. Assington 27 Feb 1586/7; d. Sudbury, Middlesex Co., Massachusetts 18 Mar 1648; m. William Siday. Note: This is not the Elizabeth who m. Henry Loker, bapt. 1576/7 Bures St. Mary. Researcher John Threlfall says that there were two distinct Riddlesdale families and that the French family is not descended from the Loker branch. There is no evidence that Elizabeth, wife of Henry Loker, was born a French.¹⁸¹
- v. SUSAN FRENCH, bapt. 1589; d. Assington 1 Aug 1613. This record clearly states that this burial record is Jacob's daughter and not his wife.
- vi. JOHN FRENCH, bapt. Assington 27 Mar 1596 (parents not named); m. (1) Sarah ___ abt. 1620, unknown location. Their daughter Sarah was bur. Assington 22 Jan 1620/21.
- vii. ROBERT FRENCH, bapt. Assington 25 June 1600. His mother Susan is mentioned in his baptismal record.

Jacob French was buried Assington, Suffolk, England on 11 November 1615. No probate records for Jacob have been found in the indexes for the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, Archdeaconry Courts of Sudbury, of Essex, or the Consistory Court of Norwich.

¹⁷⁸ *UK and Ireland, Find a Grave*, Memorial #152039792, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020.

¹⁷⁹ *U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560- 1900*, Source #362.000, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020.

¹⁸⁰ *UK and Ireland, Find a Grave*, Memorial #152042013, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020.

¹⁸¹ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/French-104> based on information from the French family Association, http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/CHARTSWEB/ChartE001.htm#_Riddlesdale_Family_in_1, 10/19/2020.

Susan (Warren) French, died Assington, Suffolk, England 1 August 1613 and was buried. St Edmund King and Martyr, Assington, Babergh District, Suffolk, England.¹⁸²

Warren Family Ancestry

Warren can be a habitational name from La Varrenne in Seine-Maritime, France, probably descriptive of "alluvial land or sandy soil." It can also be a topographic name for someone who lived by a game park, or an occupational name for someone employed in one. From the Anglo-Norman French *warrene* or Middle English *wareine*, "warren", "a piece of land for breeding game."

Susan Warren was probably the daughter or granddaughter of William and Katherine Warren, who were of Bures St. Mary. Two generations in a row had the names William and Katherine Warren, but a link to her parents has eluded researchers.¹⁸³

Katherine Warren left a Will in 1567, proved 1570/71, bequeathed to and specifically named four grandchildren, (none of the children of her son William), yet failed to give the names of her four young children. Susan may have been one of these, or the daughter of her son William, who, most likely, died before 1567 as he is not mentioned in her Will.¹⁸⁴

The Will of Katherine Warren of the hamlet of Bures, county of Essex Made 31 July 1567 (when she was sick in body) – Proved January 1570/71

An Abstract follows:

...to be buried in the churchyard of Bures...to the poor men's box 3s, 4d...to Julyan my daughter 2 boulsters & 2 beds with all that [be]longeth to them, both headcloths & ceilings, the one of them in the chamber where I lied & the other in the chamber over it, 2 hutches one in the upper chamber & the other in the nether chamber with all that is in them, a cauldron & the poorest brass pot, 2 kettles & all my woollen apparel, a latten (a metal which looks like brass) chafing dish, a strainer of latten, a postnet, all my hay and stray, a dripping pan of iron, all my pewter saving 4 platters, a spit, an andiron, all my linen, a frying pan, all the hangings about my house...I give unto John Awnsell my son-in-law 20 lbs cheese, a pair of querns (hand-mills), a wennel (a newly weaned animal), a black hog, a little brass pot, a little kettle, 3 lb & a half of wool & 20s of money and 2 plates. I give to the 2 children of the said Ansell, John & Alice, either of them 3s 4d. To Thomas Waryn my son a young cow, a yellow [illegible]erly, the h[illegible]yer, 2 platters, 15s of money, a kettle, 20 lbs cheese, a half seam vat & a kneading trough, half the corn of the growing & 3 lb & a half of wool & the other half I give to Julyan my daughter. I give to John Waryn my son 30s of money whereof he hath nine of it already in his custody & the great chair & 10 cheeses & all the residue of my cheese I give Julian

¹⁸² UK and Ireland, *Find a Grave*, Memorial #152042013, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020. Also, for this section: *Parish Registers; Bishops Transcripts; Probate Records at Bury S. Edmunds at Chelmsford*, photocopy of notes received at the French House, June 2019.

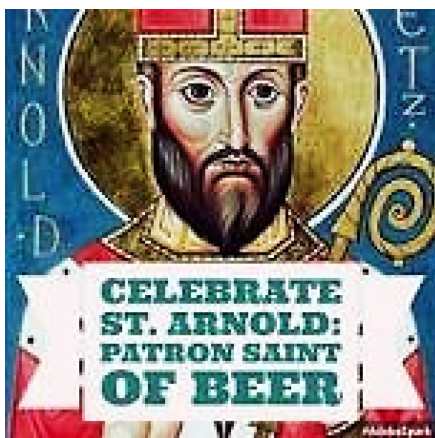
¹⁸³ for a more extensive discussion:

http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/CHARTSWEB/ChartE001.htm#_Riddlesdale_Family_in_1, 10/19/2020;
<http://our-royal-titled-noble-and-commoner-ancestors.com/p2357.htm#i70827>, 10/19/2020.

¹⁸⁴ *Parish Registers: Bishops Transcripts, Probate Records at Bury St. Edmunds, at Chelmsford*, from notes gathered at the French House in Topsfield, June 2019.

Waryn my daughter. I give Thomas Waryn my son a pig, the sow & the shoat I give unto Julyan my daughter. I give unto Robert Waryn my son 40s of lawful money of England. I give unto William Waryn & John Waryn the sons of Thomas Warren my son 6s, 8d to be equally divided between them, that is to say 3s 4d apiece. I give to Julyan Waryn my daughter a cubboard, a table & a form, 2 chairs, a round table, a cheese press & all that belongeth to the milk house, 2 great troughs & a pair of pails, a half seam vat, a [illegible] & a laten ladle, a clothe basket, a piece of gold 15s. I give to Julyan Waryn 20s. All the residue of my goods and chattels...depts paid, my will fulfilled, my will proved... I give unto my 4 young children to be equally divided among them share and share alike...Thomas Waryn my son & Julyan my daughter, my executors...

Witnesses Christopher Baine, William Fisher & John Fisher with others.¹⁸⁵



The online (unsourced) exploration of the Warren family line took me on quite a journey from Suffolk back to 1433 Cheshire, England, then back in time to France with Piers Legh III who was wounded at the Battle of Agincourt in 1415 and died in 1422 as a result of the wounds. Back further to Sir William de Venables, knight and baron of Kinderton, son of Roger, mentioned in 1267 and died 1292; descendant of Sir Roger de Venables, Baron of Kinderton, 1193-1261. There was Gilbert de Venables, b. 1060 in Venables, Normandie, France; Odo I, 950 – 966 Mamoutier, Alsace, France, and Pepe the Fat, ca. 635 – 714; and St. Arnold, Bishop of

Metz, ca. 582 - 640, Patron Saint of Beer Brewing¹⁸⁶ venerated in a Roman Catholic Church Feast July 18, and on it goes, mostly in French. I will leave the study of this line to others.

**

French Family Ancestry Concluded

Jacob French may have been the son of Thomas French, b. ca. 1520 most likely in Essex or Suffolk, England. Not much is known about this Thomas other than we can suspect that the name Jacob, an uncommon name for any French family in England, would tell us that any Jacob French in this part of England was from this line. It is unsure if Jacob's name came from Thomas' family or his wife's family.¹⁸⁷

From the French family Association web site:

This line's DNA, Group 6, shows a Haplogroup of G2, whereas other Frenches from nearby villages in either county Essex or county Suffolk shows a Haplogroup of R1b which indicates that these families are unrelated by many thousands of years and originated in completely different areas.

¹⁸⁵ <https://www.frostandgilchrist.com>, 10/19/2020.

¹⁸⁶ Image from [pinterest.com](https://www.pinterest.com), 10/19/2020.

¹⁸⁷ http://www.frenchfamilyassoc.com/FFA/CHARTSWEB/ChartE001.htm#_Riddlesdale_Family_in_1, 10/19/2020.

Their web site also offers extensive maps, photographs, and research into the many branches of this family and of the women they married.

Bush Family Ancestry Continued

Joshua Bush (father of Hannah (Bush) Alden and grandfather of Hannah Alden) was the son of Jonathan Bush Jr., b. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 10 Apr 1681; m. Enfield 17 Feb 1708/9 Rachel (Kibbe) Meacham,¹⁸⁸ b. Enfield 1688 daughter of Elisha and Rachel (Cook/e) Kibbe.¹⁸⁹ Jonathan's birth is also recorded in Springfield, Massachusetts 10 Apr 1681,¹⁹⁰ father Jonathan Bush Sr., mother Sarah (___) Bush.¹⁹¹ His father Jonathan Bush Sr. was from Springfield and removed to Enfield in 1680, so possibly the birth was recorded in both towns. Some resources call Jonathan Bush Jr. a "first settler" of Enfield though I believe that designation is for his father Jonathan Bush Sr.

Children:¹⁹²

- i. JONATHAN BUSH III, b. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 2 May 1710; lived in Springfield, Massachusetts; d. Enfield 1 Mar 1746; bur. Enfield Street Cemetery; m. Enfield 27 Apr 1734 Hannah Darby of Holliston.¹⁹³
- ii. **JOSHUA BUSH**, b. 17 Aug 1712; d. Enfield 4 Mar 1791; m. **Experience French**, b. Enfield 3 Aug 1710.
- iii. MOSES BUSH (CAPT.), b. 8 Dec 1714; d. Chatham, Portland, Middlesex, Connecticut 23 Sept 1803; m. (1) Susanna Johnson; m. (2) Lucy Warren. Moses Bush was a private in the group of Minutemen marching from Enfield to assist in the fighting in Concord, along with at least one of his sons, Jonathan. On the journey the news reached them that the redcoats had retreated; Moses was one of those turning back home. He served 6 days altogether in April 1775.¹⁹⁴ Moses Bush was a ship carpenter who later owned a shipyard at Chatham, Connecticut. There are stories on Ancestry.com of Capt. Bush building ships for George Washington among

¹⁸⁸ *U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900*, Source # 315.000, Source #371.000, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020.

¹⁸⁹ *Descendants of William Shurtleff of Plymouth and Marshfield, Massachusetts*, Vol 1:60, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020.

¹⁹⁰ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850*, *Springfield, Massachusetts Vital Records: Births*, Vol 1: 36, Vol 2: 1673, (americanancestors.org); *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register*, Vol 19: 252, (americanancestors.org), 10/19/2020.

¹⁹¹ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988*, Vol 19: 2__, *Springfield, Births, Marriages and Death: Births*, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020; <https://ma-vitalrecords.org/MA/Hampden/Springfield/BirthsB.shtml>, Bk 1:27, 10/19/2020.

¹⁹² *A Catalogue of the names of the first Puritan settlers of the colony of Connecticut, 168-169*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004), search Card Catalogue, 10/19/2020.

¹⁹³ Allen and Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut*, Vol II: 1758, 27 Apr 1734, marriage is intended between Jonathan Bush Jun of Enfield and Hannah Darby of Holliston, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/19/2020.

¹⁹⁴ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Bush-2854> unsourced; I could not find this reference to Moses Bush on Fold3.com, 10/19/2020.

- them the *Trumbull* and the *Bourbon*. He was one of the Middletown selectmen who in 1764 requested sale of the Wangunk reservation.¹⁹⁵
- iv. MIRIAM BUSH, b. 1715; d. Suffield, Hartford, Connecticut 14 Sept 1788, age 73; m. (1) ____; m. (2) Richard French,¹⁹⁶ b. Enfield 18 Sept 1712; d. Ticonderoga 29 Sept 1759. The Battle of Ticonderoga was part of the French and Indian War.
 - v. AARON BUSH, b. 18 Aug 1717; d. Enfield 1805, a prominent citizen; m. Alice/Ellice French, b. Enfield 30 Apr 1720; d. 2 Dec 1778.¹⁹⁷
 - vi. RACHEL BUSH, b. 30 May 1722; m. Enfield 24 Jan 1751 John French; four children.
 - vii. CALEB BUSH, b. 7 Aug 1725, one source says he “left town” and another that he m. Martha, daughter of Ebenezer Pease. Because he died in Sandisfield, Berkshire, Massachusetts 15 Jan 1792, both accounts may be true.
 - viii. ELIZABETH BUSH, b. 12 Jan 1727/28; d. Enfield 2 Sept 1779, in her 52nd year; m. 15 June 1753 Thomas Hale.¹⁹⁸
 - ix. MARY BUSH, b. 13 June 1730; may have m. Job Larkham and/or Jacob Pease and lived in Vermont. I will leave it here for now.¹⁹⁹

Jonathan Bush (Jr.) was a wheelwright by trade, a person who makes or repairs wooden wheels. His children quitclaimed their rights in the estate of their Grandfather, Jonathan Bush Sr.²⁰⁰ A deed dated 1749 (recorded in Vol 3 of the *Enfield Land Records*) records a sale of land where the sellers are: Jonathan Bush, Joshua Bush, Moses Bush, Aaron Bush, Caleb Bush, Richard French Jr. and his wife Miriam (Bush), John French and his wife Rachel (Bush), Job Larkham and his wife Mary (Bush), and Elizabeth Bush, spinster, land at Enfield on the common right of "our grandfather Jonathan Bush decd."²⁰¹

Jonathan Bush (Jr.) died Enfield, 28 February 1746 age 64/65. The Lunette (the top arched portion), of his headstone bears the image of a ‘death’s head.’ A death’s head, often with wings or crossed bones, or both, was a stylized skull. Some have speculated that winged skulls were intended to symbolize a combination of physical death and spiritual regeneration.

¹⁹⁵ *Lineage Book, National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution*, Vol 53:84, (Washington, D.C.: Daughters of the American Revolution, 1905), <https://nativenortheastportal.com/bio/bibliography/bush-moses>, 10/19/2020.

¹⁹⁶ Gary Boyd Roberts, “Genealogies of Connecticut Families,” *New England and Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 1: Adams-Gates, 261-262, *Bush-French-Hale*, (Baltimore, Maryland, Clearfield, 1998), (books.google.com), 10/19/2020.

¹⁹⁷ William Richard Cutter, *Families of Western New York*, (Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., 1996) 98, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020.

¹⁹⁸ Donald Lines Jacobus & Edgar Francis Waterman, *Hale, House, And Related Families*, (reprint: Baltimore Maryland, Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., 2001), 242, <online database>, (Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2006), 10/19/2020.

¹⁹⁹ Allen & Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut*, Vol II: 1613, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/19/2020.

²⁰⁰ Cutter, *Families of Western New York*, 98, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020.

²⁰¹ Allen & Pease, *The History of Enfield*, Vol III: 1950, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/19/2020.

His epitaph reads:

Here lies Int'rd,
the Body of Mr. Jonathan Bush,
he Fineshed his Pessabel (peaceable)
and exemplary life
Febry. ye 28th
in the 65th year of his age.²⁰²



Photo used with permission by
Pat & Charlie *Find a Grave*, 2010

His Will, Inventory and Administration Papers, were probated Middlesex, Massachusetts 1744, Case #3680, Probate Papers #3607-3704.²⁰³



Rachel (Kibbe) Bush, m. (2) 19 Apr 1758 John Meacham; d. Enfield 3 Jan 1786, in the 100th year of her life; bur. Enfield St Cemetery.²⁰⁴

The lunette of her headstone bears the image of a winged cherub wearing a crown.
Epitaph, page 85

Find a Grave photo by C. Greer

²⁰² Allen & Pease, *The History of Enfield Connecticut, Vol III*, p. 2322, "Epitaphs, Enfield Street Connecticut Cemetery, 1696-1850, Graveyard Inscriptions," (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/19/2020; *Connecticut, Deaths and Burials Index, 1650-1934*, FHL Fil#3333, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020; *CSL, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and newspaper Notices, 1629-1934, Vol 15: 33*, 110-1 Enfield Street Cemetery, section A Row 14; *U.S., Find a Grave Index, 1600s-Current*, Memorial #43776638, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020.

²⁰³ *Massachusetts, U.S. Wills and Probate Records, 1635-1991*, (ancestry.com), 12/3/2020.

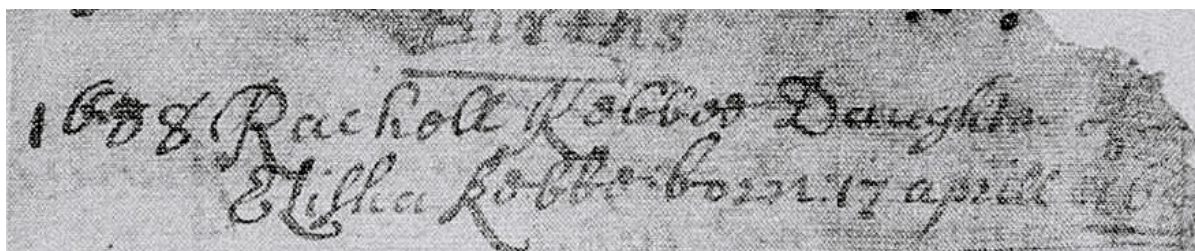
²⁰⁴ *U.S., Find a Grave Index, 1600s-Current*, Memorial #25736873, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020.

Kibbe Family Ancestry

This interesting surname with variant spellings Kibby, Kibbye, Kybbye, Kibbee, **Kibbe**, etc., is a dialectal variant of the locational name from any of the numerous places in Northern England called Kirby, deriving from the Olde Norse *kirkja* meaning "church" plus *byr*, "settlement."

The first recorded spelling of the family name is shown to be that of Edward Kibby's marriage to Ellen Goffe, which was dated 1556, in the St. Peter's Church, Cornhill, London, during the reign of Queen Mary, known as Bloody Mary (1553 - 1558).

Or this, which is less likely: the name had a practical origin since it came from when its initial bearer worked as a person who made or sold *cybbys* or *cudgels*: "short, thick sticks used as weapons." The surname Kibbe was also applied as a nickname to a person who was considered stout and heavy.



From the *Enfield, Connecticut Town Records for Births, Marriages and Death*, found on familysearch.org - "Rachell Kebbee, 17 Apr 1688, daughter of..."

Rachel Kibbe, b. Springfield/Enfield 17 Apr 1686; d. Enfield 3 Jan 1786; bur. Enfield Street Cemetery; m. Enfield 17 Feb 1708 (1) Jonathan Bush;²⁰⁵ m. (2) Enfield 19 Apr 1758 Lt. John Meacham, (she was 75).²⁰⁶

"Lieut John Mecham and the widdow Rachel Bush both of Enfield were joined in marriage April 19th 1758."

²⁰⁵ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol 118*, "Notes and Corrections: Bush-Hale-French," 215, (americanancestors.org), 10/19/2020.

²⁰⁶ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Kibbe-146#enfield>, this wikitree.com site has links to *Enfield Births, Marriages, Deaths: Vol 1, Part 2*: 133, click on the page # listed and the link takes you to a FamilySearch.org site of scanned, but unreadable, images of the town records, 10/19/2020.



She remembered the raising of the second church edifice 1706 in Enfield, where “there was a great frolick which lasted three days.” She was the grandmother of Hannah Bush, the wife of Col. Amos Alden. Her brother Isaac Kibbe Sr. was the father of Isaac Kibbe Jr. (1731-1779) who, during the revolution, kept the tavern which stood on the east side of Enfield Street, less than ¼ mile to the north of the meeting house, which he built and completed in 1775, and around which Captain Abbey drummed the Lexington Alarm. Another descendant of Elisha Kibbe, pioneer settler, is the well-known genealogist and authority on Enfield history, James Allen Kibbe of Warehouse Point.²⁰⁷

As a reminder, Captain Thomas Abbey was the father of Peter Abbey and a Revolutionary War Patriot. He and his wife Penelope Terry Abbey are covered in Volume One.

Captain Thomas Abbey and his Unicorn drum
Statue located in Enfield, CT
in front of the Congregational Church



Author's photos 2012

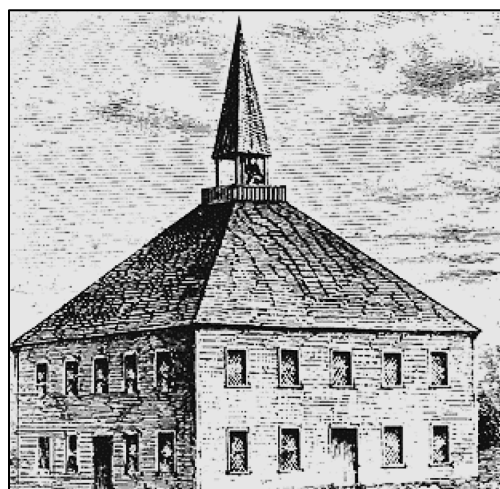
²⁰⁷ Freeman, *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, (reprint), 92.



Inscribed on her tombstone:

In Memory of Mrs. Rachel Meacham
formerly wife of Mr. Jonathan Bush
who died Jan^y 13th 1786
in the 100th year of her age.²⁰⁸

Author's photo, June 2019



First Church, Boston

Rachel (Kibbe) (Bush) Meacham was the daughter of **Elisha Kibbe**, b. Boston abt. 20 Nov 1644/5;²⁰⁹ bapt. First Church, Boston, Massachusetts, 30 Nov 1645 at the age of 10 months 10 days;²¹⁰ son of Edward Kibbe and Mary (Partridge) Kibbe. Elisha was the third of ten children with five sisters and four brothers. At age nineteen, Elisha moved from Roxbury to Salem in 1663. Several depositions offer his age: 1667 - age 21/23; 1676 - age 28/32.²¹¹

²⁰⁸ *Connecticut, Deaths and Burials Index, 1650 – 1934*, FHL film #3099, d. 13 Jan 1786, age 99, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020; *CSL, Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper...*, *Connecticut Headstone Inscriptions, Vol 15*: 34, line 1, 110-1 Enfield Street Cemetery, Section A, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial # 25736873*, (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020.

²⁰⁹ Doreen Potter Hanna, *Kibbe Genealogical Notes on Some Descendants of Edward Kibbe and His Wife, Mary (Partridge) Kibbe*, 3, (Skowhegan, Maine, author, 1972), (archive.org), 10/19/2020.

²¹⁰ *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988*, Boston, *Vital Record Transcripts*, 22: City Document # 130: "Registered at abt. 10 months 10 days, year 1645, born?, 9 months 30 days," (I am uncertain how to read the columns of numbers), (ancestry.com), 10/19/2020; *Boston, Massachusetts: Church Records, 1630-1895, First Church*, 155 (americanancestors.org), 10/19/2020. The second meetinghouse of the First Church of Boston where Elisha Kibbe was baptized. It was constructed in the style of an inverted ship and was active until 1713. <http://www.firstchurchbostonhistory.org/secondbuilding.html>, 10/19/2020.

²¹¹ *Essex County, Massachusetts Depositions, 1645- 1686*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2000), 10/19/2020; *Middlesex County, MA: Abstracts of Court Files, 1649-1675*, Vol 2: 36, < online database>,

Elisha Kibbe, m. Salem, Essex, Massachusetts, 12 Apr 1667 or 12 Oct 1667 or 12 Dec 1667 Rachel Cook/e, ²¹² b. Salem, Massachusetts 25 Sept 1645 daughter of Henry Cook and Judith Birdsall.²¹³ The marriage dates are different in every source, even vital records.

Children: ²¹⁴

- i. JOHN KIBBE, b. Salem, Essex, Massachusetts 1 Feb or 10 Oct 1667/8; and/or bapt. Salem, Essex, Massachusetts 1 Feb 1668; d. 1755; left three sons; m. (1) 12 Oct 1695 Mary Brown; m. (2) 18 Aug 1698 Hannah Phelps; moved to Stafford.
- ii. EDWARD KIBBE, b. Brookline (formerly Muddy River), Norfolk, Massachusetts 2 Feb or Dec 1669/70; d. 1756; had four sons; m. (1) 15 Feb 1692 Rebecca Hadlock; m. (2) 13 Nov 1693 Dorothy Phelps. He was one of the first settlers of Somers, Connecticut.
- iii. ELISHA KIBBE JR., b. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 28 Mar 1673; d. 1688; unmarried.
- iv. JAMES KIBBE, b. Enfield 27 Dec 1675; d. Enfield 20 Jan 1730; m. 20 Jan 1703/04 Hannah Kelsey;²¹⁵ settled in the north part of Enfield, seven children.
- v. THOMAS KIBBE, b. Enfield abt. 1677; died young.
- vi. MARY KIBBE, b. Enfield 1679; d. New Haven County, Connecticut 22 June 1769; m. 1 Nov 1699 John Parker.
- vii. ISAAC KIBBE, b. Enfield 1683; d. 6 June 1766; bur. Enfield Street Cemetery; m. abt. 1720 Dorothy Smith.
- viii. **RACHEL KIBBE**, b. Enfield 17 Apr 1688; d. 1786; m. (1) 17 Feb 1708/9 **Jonathan Bush Jr.**; m. (2) John Meacham.

Note: sons Elisha and Thomas are not listed in all references to their children.

In 1680/82, Elisha Kibbe moved from Salem to Enfield, Connecticut, where he was one of the earliest settlers “near the middle of the town.” He was a large land-owner, having been

(AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2003), (Unpublished abstracts by Thomas Bellows Wyman, *Abstract of Middlesex court files from 1649, n.d.*), 10/19/2020.

²¹² *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Salem Vol 3*: 557, (americanancestors.org), 10/20/2020; *New England Marriages to 1700, Vol 2*: 889, (americanancestors.org), 10/20/2020; Yates Publishing, *U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900*, <Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004>, Source #3875.000, 1667 Massachusetts, 10/20/2020.

²¹³ *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, Salem, Vital Record Transcripts, Salem Births*, 207, (ancestry.com), 10/20/2020.

²¹⁴ R.R. Hinman, *A Catalogue of the Names of the first Puritan settlers of the colony of Connecticut*, (Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., 1968), “back matter” 179, (ancestry.com), 10/20/2020; *A Potter-Richardson memorial: the ancestral lines of William W. Potter of Michigan and his wife, Margaret (Richardson) Potter*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), 272: *Allied Families in ancestry of Margaret Richardson*, 10/20/2020.

²¹⁵ *A genealogy of the descendants of William Kelsey who settled at Cambridge, Mass., in 1632*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2005), Vol 1, 3rd Generation, 86, #47 Hannah Kelsey, 10/20/2020.

granted 40 acres at the proprietors meeting 23 July 1680.²¹⁶ In Francis Olcott Allen's book, *The History of Enfield*, Elisha and Rachel Kibbe's names are recorded many times as receiving land grants, in sales and purchases of land, witnessing land deals, and his name being used as boundary lines in land descriptions. In some cases, he is called yeoman or husbandman, in others, he is referred to as deceased. In the early 1700s, he and Rachel deeded much of their land to their sons. Elisha Kibbe was also a joiner, a person who constructs the wooden components of a building, such as stairs, doors, and door and window frames, and possibly furniture. He also served the town as selectman and constable and in other offices.²¹⁷

He was a man who lived life on his terms. In *Vol III of The History of Enfield*, under the Springfield County Court Records section, it states:

Elisha Kebby presented for Sabbath breaking by bringing home a deere upon his horse out of ye woods upon ye Sabbath in the middle of ye afternoon-witnesses Jonathan Bush, Israel Meacham & Benjamin Pees-all parties ordered to appear at next term of court. Done at County Court held at Northampton March 29th, 1692.²¹⁸

One of their grandsons also named Elisha Kibbe, Lieutenant served under Captain James Fitch and Major in command, Nathaniel Terry, under Lieutenant Colonel Pitkin's 19th regiment in the Revolutionary War.²¹⁹

George Pitkin (1729 – 1806) of East Hartford, Conn., who had served with the Continental army during 1775 as Lieutenant Colonel of the 4th Connecticut Regiment, was at this time Lieutenant Colonel of the 19th Regiment of Connecticut militia. Pitkin marched his regiment to New York in late August and returned home a short time later because his health would not permit him to endure camp duty. Maj. Nathaniel Terry commanded the regiment in Pitkin's absence from May 1777 – 1783. Continuing ill-health obliged Pitkin to resign his militia commission in December.

<https://founders.archives.gov/documents/Washington/03-06-02-0143>

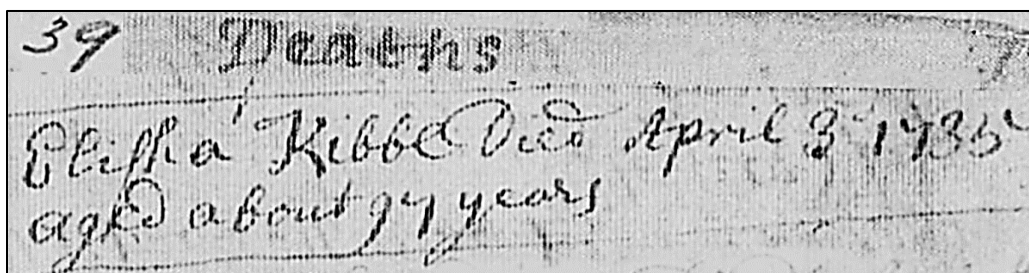
²¹⁶ Hinman, *A catalogue of the names of the first Puritan settlers of the colony of Connecticut*, "back matter" 179, (ancestry.com), 10/20/2020.

²¹⁷ Hanna, *Kibbe Genealogical Notes on Some Descendants of Edward Kibbe and His Wife, Mary (Partridge) Kibbe*, 3, (archive.org), 10/20/2020.

²¹⁸ <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html#top>, 10/20/2020. (After correspondence with Mr. Bullock's wife and RootsTech 2021, we determined JT and I are 9th cousins and we share that relationship with my friend, professional organizer and genealogist Hazel Thornton, and we all live within a 45-mile radius!)

²¹⁹ Connecticut Historical Society (CHS), *Collections of the Connecticut Historical Society Revolution Rolls and Lists, 1775-1783, Vol VIII*: 165, (Hartford, Conn., Connecticut Historical Society, 1901), (archive.org), 10/20/2020.

Elisha Kibbe, died in Enfield, 3 April 1735 at age 97.²²⁰



His Will, dated 19 June 1727, was registered under the Northampton Probate Records and presented for probate May 1735. In it, he mentions his wife Rachell; children John, Edward, James, Isaac, Mary (Parker), Rachel (Bush) and grandchildren John and Isaac Kibbe, and John Parker; my sons and sons-in-law as executors.

The Will of Elisha Kibbe written 19 June 1727, proved May 1735

- To my well-beloved wife Rachel Kibbe, I will and bequeath out of my Estate for her maintenance Three Shillings [per?] week to be paid to Her or to them that have or many take the Care of her During the time of her Continuance in this World; or otherwise, if my sd Wife shall rather chouse it my will and pleasure is that she have one Third part of my moveable Estate for her own for Ever, and one Third part of my Real Estate during her Life.
- I will and bequeath to my well-beloved son John Kibbe the sum of Ten pounds to be paid to him within one year next after my decease with Ten pounds together with whate I have Don for his settlement I account his full portion of my Estate.
- I will and bequeath to my well-beloved son Edward Kibbe the sum of five pounds to be paid unto him within ye space of one year net after my Decease which five pounds tougher with what I have Don for his settlement I account the whole of his portion of my Estate.
- I will and bequeath unto my well-beloved son James Kibbe one sixteenth part of a sawmill upon Scantick River Commonly called the old Sawmill with ye privileges and appurtenances thereof and there unto belonging which together with what I have already given him (being the sum Eighty-Seven Pounds Ten Shillings) Toward his settlement to be his portion saving what my fall to him as may be express in an after Clause of this my will.
- I will and bequeath unto my well-beloved son Isaac Kibbe one sixteenth part of a sawmill upon Scantick River Commonly called the old Sawmill with ye privileges and appurtenances thereof and there unto belonging Also I give my son Isaac Twenty acres of land out of my Land near or at ye mountains at Twenty five shillings per acre which together with what I have before give him in Lands being the Sum of Sixty Tow pounds Ten Shilling to be his portion saving what my fall to him in and after Clause in my will and Testament.
- I will and bequeath unto my well-beloved Daughter Mary Parker the sum of Twenty pounds to be paid to her or her Legal Representatives within one year next after my Decease also one sixteenth part of a sawmill upon Scantick River with appurtenances.
- I will and bequeath unto my well-beloved Daughter Rachel Bush the sum of forty pounds to be aid to her or her Legal Representatives within one year next after my Decease also one sixteenth part of a sawmill upon Scantick River with appurtenances.
- I will and bequeath unto Three of my Grandchildren namely James Kibbe, Elisha Parker and Jonathan Bush my land lying on Scantick River (taken by the later establishment of ye Governments into Windsor Township) being on records on Hundred forty-five acres to be Divided between them the sd James Kibbe, Elisha Parker and Jonathan Bush in equal proportion and to be to them and their assigns forever.
- Further it is my will and pleasure that what of my Estate is not in this my Last Will & Testament particularly disposed of (that I shall die seized of) shall be for the payment of Debts that are or shall be Due from my

²²⁰ Global, Find a Grave, Memorial #117096631, (ancestry.com), 10/20/2020; Elisha Kibbe's death notice: Image #24 of film #00789680,2 of Enfield town Records 1682-1854, familysearch.org, 10/20/2020.

- Estate. Either for mine or my wives maintenance, or any other way and also to the payment of any sum or sums of money herein bequeathed; and that the Remainder of my sd undisposed Estate after ye aforesd payments are made shall be equally Divided between my youngest sons and Two daughters, namely James, Isaac, Mary and Rachel, and in case the aforesd undeposed Estate be not Sufficient to pay sd Debts and Legacies, then in such case that shall be abated our of ye portions of ye said James, Isaac, Mary and Rachel, each one their ratable part of what shall be wanting.
- Further it is my will and pleasure that my daughter Rachel aforesd be paid out of my Estate after ye Rate of five pounds per year for what she hath or may do for maintenance and taking care of me the time I shall live with her and likewise the same sum to be paid by the year to any other with whome I may Dwell and do take care of me sd. Five pounds to my Daughter Rachel any other to be only for Care and Tendence I finding for myself all necessities of Life.
 - And I do hereby nominate and appoint my two aforesd sons John Kibbe & Isaac Kibbe and my aforesd son in law John Parker to be Executors to this my last will and testament hereby revoking and making void all and every former or other will or testament of executor by me made...

John Austin, Benoni Gains, and Ephraim Terry witnessed the Will. It can be viewed on americanancestors.org (transcription above from ancestry.com).²²¹ It is not known where he is buried.²²²

Rachel (Cook) Kibbe died in Enfield 10 Sept 1740, age 94.²²³

Cook – Birdsall Family Ancestry

Cook - this distinguished surname, with forty entries in the Dictionary of National Biography, and having no less than fifty Coats of Arms, is of Anglo-Saxon origin, and is an occupational name for a cook, a seller of cooked meats, or the keeper of an eating house.

Birdsall - this unusual surname is of Anglo-Saxon origin and is locational from a place so called in North Yorkshire, near Malton. The placename is derived from the genitive case of the Old English pre 7th century byname *bridd*, meaning “nestling or young bird,” and the Old English *halh*, “a nook, or recess.” In the Domesday book it means *Brit’s* or *Brid’s*, meaning “Slope Land.”

Rachel (Cook) Kibbe was the daughter of Henry Cook of disputed origins. There were several distinct branches of the Cook or Cooke family in England in the 1600s, all of whom could trace the family line to the earliest ancestor Gilbert Cocus, or Cook/Cooke, who lived during the 11th century, during the time of William the Conqueror. Most researchers believe Henry

²²¹ *Hampshire County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1660-1889*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2016, 2017), (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives and the Hampshire County Court. Digitized images provided by FamilySearch.org), Hampshire Box, 82, 55:1 – 55:6, 10/20/2020.

²²² <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html#MPt>, 10/20/2020.

²²³ *Global, Find a Grave*, Memorial #38252652, (ancestry.com), 10/20/2020. *Hanna, Kibbe Genealogical Notes on Some Descendants of Edward Kibbe and His Wife, Mary (Partridge) Kibbe*, 3, (archive.org), 10/20/2020; *Connecticut, Deaths and Burials Index*, FHL film #3109 (age at death 91), (ancestry.com), 10/20/2020.

Cook, was born in county Kent, 2 June 1615 to Edmund, or Edward Cooke and Elizabeth Nicholls. There are no records.

Henry Cook, a Puritan in his religious beliefs, came to America, probably in 1638, and settled in Salem, Essex Massachusetts.²²⁴ On 2 May 1638, he was made freeman, and on 17 August 1638, Henry Cook appears in Salem, Massachusetts records when he requests to become an inhabitant.²²⁵ On 25 October 1638, the Quarterly Court, Salem, granted Henry Cook 6 acres of land and on 4 December 1638, Daniel Baxter and Henry Cook were granted "5 acres a peece to be layd out by the towne." In 1639, he served as a juryman. In my June 2022 review, I found this new note on *Find a Grave*, Memorial 161936890: "Henry is now proven as an approved ancestor for Colonial Dames 17th Century."

The name Henry Cook appears numerous times in Essex County Court records for various reasons such as defamation, for fist fighting and for failure to return an axe. He borrowed a pick axe of Mary Oliver, could not prove that he had brought it back, and was ordered to pay her 4 shillings for it. George Ropes then complained that Mary Oliver kept away a spade of his. She was ordered to pay him 5 shillings. Later, Mary Oliver is presented to the court for stealing goats. Henry Cook was one of the witnesses.²²⁶

In one of the defamation charges against Henry Cooke, he said Phillip Crumwell was a base fellow, and if he had not had Mr. Kenyston's money he could not have paid his debts. Cooke was also fined for "abusing the watch," calling them "proud saucy boys, proud mallapart boys, and rascally and jackanapes boys." George Ropes was also fined for justifying him. (Malpert: impudently bold.)

Joseph Fowler testified that "he was hilling corn with Nath. Stowe and heard ___Cooke say there was no true church because they ___people of God to Rode Iland and fettered them, and that he would "sceere" the E__(to) death by setting him on a tree naked in a swamp in the summer time - "musketoos" should have stung him to death, and he would sit ___till he was dead, ...Also that Master Norton taught lies." Mr. Stowe affirmed the same.

It seems Henry Cooke took a page from Walter Fairfield, a "rough and tumble" ancestor found in Volume One. Whether this Henry Cook was our Henry Cook, or another man by the same name, I have not been able to determine.

Massachusetts County Court, (Essex Co) and Dow, *Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co*, V1 (1636-1656), 152, 227 (hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020

²²⁴ *U.S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s-1900s, Salem, Massachusetts; Year: 1638; Page Number: 74, referencing Colket, Founders of Early American Families, (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020; Virkus, Immigrant Ancestors, 22, 10/21/2020.*

²²⁵ *Colonial Families of the USA, 1607 – 1775, 104 "Cooke," (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020.*

²²⁶ *Massachusetts County Court, (Essex Co) and Dow, Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co, V1 (1636-1656), 115, 138, 183, 244, 257, (hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020.*

Henry Cook married in Salem, 29 June 1639, Judith Birdsall, daughter of Henry Birdsall.²²⁷

Children, all born in Salem:²²⁸

- i. ISAAC COOK, b. 3 Apr 1640; d. 11 Sept 1692; m. 3 May 1664 Elizabeth Buxstone.
- ii. SAMUEL COOK, b. 30 Sept 1641; d. Wallingford, New Haven, Connecticut 25 Dec 1703; m. New Haven, Connecticut 2 May 1667 Hope Parker; m. (2) Wallingford 14 July 1696 Mary Mallory; 14 children. He was a shoemaker and tanner of leather.
- iii. JUDITH COOK, b. 15 Sept 1643; m. John Pudney.
- iv. **RACHEL COOK**, b. 15 Sept 1645;²²⁹ m. **Elisha Kibbe**.
- v. JOHN COOK, b. 6 Sept 1647.
- vi. HENRY COOK, b. Sept 1648; d. young.
- vii. MARTHA COOK (twin), b. 15 Sept 1650; d. before age 11.
- viii. MARY COOK (twin), b. 15 Sept 1650; m. Robert Moulton.
- ix. HENRY COOK JR. (second of the name), b. 30 Dec 1652; moved to Wallingford, Connecticut.
- x. ELIZA COOK, b. Sept 1654; d. Sept 1654.
- xi. HANNAH COOK, b. Sept 1658; m. Daniel Canady.

Henry Cook was a butcher, or as some called him, a “provider of meat.” He and Edward Ingram were in charge of caring for and managing swine for the town, which would have been an important food source. A story, based on the Town Records, has survived and reads as follows:

Henry appointed to keep the swine for 6s for each animal. As he walked through the town on his way to the pasture in the morning, he blew his horn and the owners of the swine brought them out to the drove, which was thus constantly increased in numbers. They returned at sunset.²³⁰

On 28 October 1643, Henry Cook witnessed a Will. He surveyed fences in 1645/6 and on 17 January 1645 there is a record of the purchase of his house from Edmund Thompson. The

²²⁷ *Massachusetts Compiled Marriages, 1633 – 1850*, FHL film#076210, (ancestry.com), 20/21/2020; *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020; *Vital Records of Salem Massachusetts, Vol 3, Salem marriages to the end of the year 1849*, 111, (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020; *Colonial Families of the USA, 1607 – 1775*, 104 “Cooke,” (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020.

²²⁸ <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html#HC>, 10/21/2020; Sidney Perley, *The History of Salem, Massachusetts*, Vol 2, 43-46, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020; Pope, *The Pioneers of Massachusetts...*, 115, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020; Henry Whittenmore, *Genealogical Guide to the Early Settlers of America, Vol 1*: 104, (New York, 1898), (archive.org), 10/21/2020.

²²⁹ *Massachusetts Births and Christenings, 1639-1915*, “Henry Cooke in entry for Rachell Cooke, 25 Sept 1645; citing Salem, Essex, Massachusetts, (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020.

²³⁰ Martha O. Howes & Sidney Perley & the Town of Salem, *Town records of Salem, Massachusetts, Vol 1*: 100 -101, (archive.org), 10/21/2020.

house was located on Washington Street on what is now the southeasterly corner of the Masonic Temple. On 13 January 1663, his widow Judith, sold this property to Walter Price.²³¹ On 28 November 1656, Henry Cooke of Salem and his son Isaac, were presented to the court and charged for beating and kicking Sam Abourn and Moses Aborne, sons of Sam Abourn, on the Lord's Day. Discharged.²³²

On 10 October or December 1649, Henry Cooke of Salem, butcher, mortgaged his house, shop and one acre of land for 10£ to Henry Birdsall (his father-in-law).²³³ This same year, he was granted 40 acres beyond the river "or on this side of Henerie Bartholmew." In 1652, he owned a lot in the South field.²³⁴

In 1655, Henry Cook took in Henry Talbey, the town provided for his needs, and Cook provided a place to work and live.²³⁵ On 22 August 1657, Henry purchased a home lot from Alice Bullock, administratrix of the estate of her husband Henry Bullock.

On 27 November 1658, the town ordered that "the 40 acres granted to Henry Cook be laid out in common land above the house of Thomas James. Forest and Peabody now run threw this lot, which is just west of Summit Street. When the town of Salem was laid out Henry Cook was granted Lot 68." On 14 January 1659/60:

Henry Cook and Samuel Ebourne were appointed to be surveyors of the North Neck and all fields about the Glass House and for about through, Gouldwaight field and VP to Michele Slafflin.²³⁶

On 26 November 1661, in a lengthy case regarding a colt, Henry Cooke deposed that he, being at the north field pound, had discourse with Farmer Porter about the earmarks, etc. Mr. Gardner also went into the pound with him. "The colt had been burnt in the mouth for the lampers, etc." Sworn in court.²³⁷ Henry was a successful farmer and active in the political atmosphere of the colony. His name is mentioned on several occasions in the records of the proceedings of the Common Council and the Salem Town and land Records.²³⁸

²³¹ Perley, *The History of Salem, Massachusetts*, Vol 2, 44-46, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020.

²³² *Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts: 1656-1662*, Vol 2: 10, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020.

²³³ *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins*, Vol 1 A-B: 301, Henry Birdsall, (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020.

²³⁴ Howes, Perley & the Town of Salem, *Town records of Salem, Massachusetts*, Vol 1: 163, (archive.org), 10/21/2020.

²³⁵ *Ibid.*, Vol 1:189, (archive.org), 10/21/2020.

²³⁶ *Ibid*, Vol 1: 220, Vol 2: 5, (archive.org), 10/21/2020.

²³⁷ *Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts: 1656-1662*, Vol 2: 320 – 322, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020. I have been unable to determine what "for the lampers," means.

²³⁸ Howes, Perley and the Town of Salem, *Town records of Salem, Massachusetts*, Vol 1: 73, 76, 163, 220, (archive.org), 10/21/2020; Sidney Perley, *The Essex antiquarian: an illustrated ... magazine devoted to the biography, genealogy, history and antiquities of Essex County, Massachusetts*, (Salem, Massachusetts, Essex Antiquarian), Vol 1 & 2, (1897 – 1898), 170 – 173 concerning property left by Henry Cooke at his death and sold by his widow and son Isaac, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020; Perley, *The History of Salem, Massachusetts*, Vol 2: 44, 60, 203, 234

Henry Cook, died 25 December 1661, age 46, testate, leaving his wife with seven children at home, the youngest being only 4 years old. Although in a very weakened state, a few hours before he died, Henry dictated his wishes to two male friends; unfortunately, he could not give them all the details, because of his condition.²³⁹

It reads as printed in *Volume 1 of The Probate Records of Essex County* (spelling corrected):

Being with Henry Cooke about 3 or 4 hours before his decease perceiving he was in perfect memory spoke to him about the setting of his house in order, for the peace of his family after his decease: and that if he had done it when he had had more strength, It would have been more comfortable for himself, his answer was, that he had some reason for it and that he would leave all to his wife's disposing, then after some time of respite he said that his will was that his son Isaack should have his Dwelling house with the land thereunto belonging, then being demanded when, he said after the decease of his wife, & then he said that his daughter Judith should have the Cowpen land and more he would have spoken concerning the rest of his children but was not able.

Inventory of his estate was taken 14 January 1661/2. There were more than 90 acres of land in multiple locations, 3 houses, 10 animals, various tools, furniture, general house furnishings, and utensils. The total value was more than 260£.²⁴⁰

His widow, Judith (Birdsall) Cook, conveyed land and the northern half of a portion of what was called "Sharp's lot" to Joshua Rea of Salem on 21 May 1662.²⁴¹ Administration of his estate was granted to widow Judith and son Isaac, aged 22, on 24 June 1662.²⁴²

On 7 July 1662 the court decreed:

Upon further consideration about ordering the estate of Henry Cooke, deceased, it was ordered that Isaack, the eldest son, have 24£, and the other children, John, Henry, Judith, Rachell, Mary and Hanna, 12£ each, payable at age or time of marriage, and the widow was appointed administratrix.

(babel.hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020; *Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts: 1656-1662, Vol 2: 321*, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020.

²³⁹ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620 – 1988, Salem, Vital Record Transcripts, Salem Deaths, 175*, (ancestry.com) 10/21/2020; *North America, Family Histories, 1500-2000, A family history: recording the ancestors of Russell Snow Hitchcock: 75-76*, (ancestry.com) 10/21/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial # 161936890*, (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020; <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html>, 10/21/2020.

²⁴⁰ Perley, *The Essex antiquarian: an illustrated ... magazine devoted to the biography, genealogy, history and antiquities of Essex County, Massachusetts*, Vol 2, 1898, 170 – 171, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/21/2020; Melindi Lutz Sanborn, *Essex County, Massachusetts Probate Records Supplement, 1644 - 1691* citing: *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, Vol II: 422,423, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 1998), 10/21/2020.

²⁴¹ *The Essex Antiquarian*, Vol 2 (1898), 170-171, "Salem, Massachusetts," <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2006.) 10/21/2020.

²⁴² *Essex County, Massachusetts, Probate Records*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2002), Vol 1: 383 – 384, 10/21/2020.

Thus, the bulk of the estate was left to widow Judith, until the children came of age. They were listed as Isaac, age 22, Samuel, age 20, Judith, age 18, Rachel, age 16, John, age 14, Martha and Mary, age 11/12 (Martha must have died soon after), Henry, age 8, and Hannah, age 4.²⁴³

His widow, and executrix of the estate of her late husband, Judith sold the home on Washington Street to Walter Price on 13 January 1663. She also sold 10 acres in Salem to John Small on 17 May 1667.²⁴⁴

The southern half, of the northern half, belonging to Mr. Cook's son John, of Salem, blacksmith, conveyed on 7 March 1671 to Thomas Maule of Salem, tailor.²⁴⁵ Judith, the widow of Henry Cook, conveyed part of their land to her son Isaac on 26 October 1680, and part on 15 June 1687.²⁴⁶ About this time, she is referred to as widow Cooke at a General Town meeting.²⁴⁷

Inventory of the estate of Henry Cooke, late deceased, 14:11, 1661 Taken by Nathaniel Felton and Henry Bartholomew

His dwelling house and the land adjoining, 60£; the Cowpen lot, being 5 acres, 20£; 9 acres of land at the great coave, commonly called Towne's lot, 10£; the house, orchard and land, about 21 acres that was formerly bought of Willm. Nichols, 40£; a farm lot of 40 acres, near Mr. Downing's farme, 6£; 6 acres of meadow lying by Bishop's farme, 5£; 8 acres of meadow lying near the land of Hen. Phelps, 8£; an acre of land in the town next to Mr. Norrice & the housings upon it, 30£; 2 oxen, 12£; 1 cow, 5£; 4 two year old heifers, 12£; 2 yearlings, 3£; a horse, 12£; In bedding with 2 payre of sheets, blankets and a rug, 5£; hempe & flax, 2£; a bed teecke & boulster, 2£, 10s; a brass kettle, an iron pot & kettle, a skillet, 2 platters, a table & a Cupboord, 3£; a sadle & bridle, a payre of skales, a payre of stilyards & a steele, 2£; Barly and pease, 4£; In bedding 1£, 10s; a polaxe, 2 cleivers, 3 axes, 3 wedges, a hammer, beetle rings, a thwart saw, 2 muskets, a rapier, a sword & bandeliers, a fryinge pan, an old warminge pan & a morter, 2£, 10s; some old books, a fire shovel & tongs & other smal utensils, 1£; a Cart and plow wth. tacklinge thereunto belonginge, a slyd, 2 sytes, 3L 10s; his wearing apparel, 5£; total 255£. Sworn in court June 24, 1662 by the widow before Hilliard Verne, cleric."

The document continues in a listing of debts owed by Henry Cooke of 92£, 5s, 8 3-4d.²⁴⁸

²⁴³ <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html>, 10/21/2020; *Essex County, MA: Early Probate Records, 1635-1681, Vol 1: 383-4*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2015), 10/21/2020.

²⁴⁴ Anderson, *Great Migration: Immigrants to New England, 1634-1635, Vol VI: R-S: 345*, (americanancestors.org), 10/21/2020.

²⁴⁵ <http://www.maulefamily.com/mauleb9.htm>, Thomas Maule was a prominent Quaker, 10/21/2020.

²⁴⁶ *Essex Antiquarian*, Vol 1&2: 171 (Vol 2 section), citing *Essex Registry of Deeds, Book 3*, leaf 157, <https://archive.org/stream/essexantiquarian00sale#page/n1019/mode/2up>, 10/21/2020.

²⁴⁷ <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html>, 10/21/2020.

²⁴⁸ *Essex County, MA: Early Probate Records, 1635-1681, Vol 1: 383-4 or (Vol 8: leaf 24)*, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2015), 2/2/2021.

Birdsall (aka Birdsale, Birsale) Family Ancestry Continued

Judith Birdsall, baptized at St. Stephens Church Norwich, Norfolk County, England,²⁴⁹ about 2 June 1611, daughter of Henry and Agnes (Kempe) Birdsall.²⁵⁰ (Church pictured right.)



She died at Salem, Essex County, Massachusetts on 11 September 1689.

Presumably, she emigrated with her brother Nathan and their father Henry to Boston in 1632.²⁵¹

On 29 June 1639 in Salem, she married Henry Cook and their eleven children were all born in Salem. After her husband died in 1661 the “widow Cooke” as the administrator of his Will, carried on managing his lands.

In 1663, she gave her son Isaac, her father’s land. This is the land which her brother Nathan had sold to Henry Cook in 1654. She was living in Northfields, Salem in 1667 and died a widow 11 September 1689, ²⁵² 28 years after her husband’s death. It is not known where she is buried.

Her estate was initially inventoried and administered by her eldest son Isaac Cook on 23 November 1689.²⁵³

²⁴⁹ *St. Stephen, Norwich* drawn by Ladbrook in the 1820’s. Most of the church dates back to the early 16th century. The offset tower, forming a three story “porch” at the west end of the north side is unique among larger medieval churches in east Anglia – this and other Kibbe/Birdsall/Cook images: <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html>, 10/21/2020.

²⁵⁰ <https://www.ancestry.com>, 10/21/2020; *England Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975*, FHL film #0993969, #0993970; *Norfolk, England, Church of England Baptism, Marriages and Burials, 1535 – 1812*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2016), Norfolk Record Office, Norwich, Norfolk, England, Ref PD 484/1, 10/21/2020.

²⁵¹ *The Great Migration: Immigrants to New England, 1634-1635*, Vol I, A-B, 301-2, (americanancestors.org), 10/21/2020; *U.S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s-1900s*, Boston, Massachusetts; 1635; citing: Anderson, *The Great Migration*, (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020.

²⁵² *Massachusetts Vital and Town Records, Salem, Vital Record Transcripts, Salem Deaths*, 175, (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #161962041*, (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020.

²⁵³ *Essex County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1638-1881*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014.) (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court ...

Five years later, in November 1693, her son Samuel Cooke petitioned the court to be appointed administrator, indicating he was then the eldest surviving son of Henry and Judith Cooke of Salem, deceased, as his brother Isaac was now also dead. In 1694, he indicated to the court that his brother Isaac's estate had been intermingled with that of his mother's legacy. He was unable to determine an accurate assessment and Inventory. John Pudney and Robert Moulton also signed the petition for the bond.²⁵⁴

Judith Birdsall was the daughter of Henry Birdsall, b. England bet. 1578 and 1585, son of Henry/Thomas Birdsall; d. Salem bef. 17 Sept 1651 and Alice _____. There is no documentation.

Other researchers have placed Henry's birth in Doncaster, England. He, m. St. Stephens Church, Norwich, Norfolk 9 Apr 1610 Agnes Kempe,²⁵⁵ bapt. St Stephens Parish, Norwich, England abt. 1589; they had between three and six children.

One source indicates that it is possible Agnes died after the birth of her last child, and Henry married again. In the July 2006 issue of the Phineas Wolcott Cook Family Newsletter, Wendy Bentley writes:

The Birdsall name is only listed five times in Norwich records - Henry, at the time of his marriage to Agnes, the christening of his three children, and one more curious entry in the marriage records: "Henry Birshall and Ann Griffin 1 April 1627. It is conceivable that Agnes died after Nathan's birth leaving Henry with a young family, and that he remarried before coming to New England. As mentioned before, the Family History Library in Salt Lake has no death records for that area during that time.

This might explain any confusion about the number of children Henry had. If he had married (2) Ann Griffin, she could be the mother of his youngest two children.²⁵⁶

Archives), 10/21/2020; *Essex County, Massachusetts Probate Records Supplement, 1644 – 1691*, Inventory, (ancestry.com), 10/21/2020; *Massachusetts, Wills and Probate Records, 1635 – 1991*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2015), Essex, Massachusetts, Case #6252, 1-16, Probate Records, Cook, J-Cook, W, 1828 – 1991, 10/21/2020.

²⁵⁴ https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Birdsall-9#_note-Probate, *Essex County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1638-1881*, Samuel's petitions can be read, though the writing is a bit challenging, 10/21/2020.

²⁵⁵ *England, Select Marriages, 1538 – 1973*, FHL film #0993969, # 0993970, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620 – 1635, Vol 1 A-B: 301*, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; *Norfolk, England, Church of England Baptism, Marriages and Burials, 1535 – 1812*, Norfolk Record Office, Norwich, Norfolk, England, Ref PD 484/1, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁵⁶ <http://www.cookfamily.org/newsletters/072006/072006.pdf>, 2-3, 10/22/2020.

Henry Birdsall and Agnes ____ had three known children together:

- i. **JUDITH BIRDSALL**, bapt. St. Stephen Norwich 2 June 1611; d. 1689; m. Salem June 1639 **Henry Cook/e**, a butcher.
- ii. **ANNE BIRDSALL**, bapt. St John the Baptist Timberhill, Norwich 24 May 1616; no further records.
- iii. **NATHAN BIRDSALL**, bapt. St Andrews, Norwich 3 Sept 1620; d. 1696. On 16 Feb 1654/5 Nathan Birdsall of Salem sold to Henry Cooke of Salem 5 acres of land in Salem, he was probably the Nathan Birdsall who was granted land at Easthampton 5 July 1653, and who later resided at Oyster Bay where he had a son Henry and granddaughter Judith; m. Temperance____.²⁵⁷

All these English parishes are within a few blocks of one another in the heart of Norwich. Researchers claim sons: Samuel, Stephen, and Isaac, without documentation. Only Nathan and Judith came to America. Any other children either died or married and stayed in England.

The family left Norwich in 1628 to begin the journey to America. It is believed that along the way, bet. 1630-32, his wife Agnes____²⁵⁸ and possibly other children, died before leaving England. According to the book *The Second Boat, Volumes 12 -13*,²⁵⁹ Henry Birdsall arrived in Boston in 1632 on the *Anne*, a widower with two children, Nathan, age 13, and Judith, age 21.²⁶⁰ As the result of a 14 December 1635 order allotting land to Boston's "then inhabitants, Henry Burchasll was granted 15 acres."

²⁵⁷ George A. Birdsall, *The Birdsall Family: Genealogy and History of Interest to Every Living Descendant and Their Posterity*, (Annandale, Virginia, 1958), 1- 5, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/22/2020. This book has some very different information about the origins of Henry Birdsall and where he settled in the colonies. I determined this is not "our" Henry Birdsall.

²⁵⁸ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #38455025, indicates Agnes' date of death was unknown but places it in Salem, Essex Co, Massachusetts, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁵⁹ *The Second Boat, Vol 12-13*, (published by News-Journal, University of Wisconsin – Madison, 1991). This was a quarterly publication which I was able to find at the NEHGS in Boston, June 2019.

²⁶⁰ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620 – 1635, Vol 1 A-B*: 301-302, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; *U.S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s-1900s. Boston, Massachusetts, 1635*, referencing Anderson, *The Great Migration*, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020



Henry Birdsall was admitted into the membership of the First Church of Salem 25 February 1637/8 and on 2 May 1638, he is registered as a Freeman of Salem.²⁶¹ He is selected as a juryman at the Essex Quarterly Court 25 January 1639 and is on the petit jury 25 March 1639. Henry Burdsell was a witness in the case of Randall Houlden vs. Goody Oliver on 20 February 1643/4. He witnessed the partially nuncupative Will of John Sanders of Salem on 28 October 1643.²⁶² He did not live for a year or two with his son, Nathan, ca.1644, in Hartford, Connecticut; that has been disproved.

On 3 February 1644/5, Henry Burtsoll was chosen to keep the meeting house:

To sweep it & keep it clean upon all occasions of public meeting & is to have yearly 3£ & 15s to be paid proportionably every half year. He was duly paid in 1647.²⁶³ For ringing the bell for funerals he received 3 pence. ²⁶⁴

On 10 December 1649, his son in law Henry Cooke, of Salem, mortgaged his house, shop and one acre of land to Henry Birdsall.

Henry Birdsall, died in Salem before 17 November 1651 when the Inventory of his estate was taken.²⁶⁵ His Will was proved 28 November 1651 at the Salem Quarterly court. Unfortunately, the Will is now lost. The Inventory of his estate totaled 47£ 19s 10d, of which 28£ 20s was real estate, dwelling house, outhouse, acres of Upland in the Northfield, 12 acres of marsh in the Southfield, a one (1) acre for his homestead. Also included were 2 swine, a feather bed, one old sword, musket, and halberd, valued at 9s. Tools for his trade were valued at 2£, but we are not told the nature of his trade. His Inventory also included "books" valued at 5s. ²⁶⁶

²⁶¹ *Massachusetts, Applications of Freeman, 1630 – 1691*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2000), citing: C.R. Vol 1:196, 10/22/2020; *Massachusetts, Compiled Census and Census Substitutes Index 1790 – 1890*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 1999), 10/22/2020; The First Meeting House of the First Church of Salem, illustration from *A Popular History of the United States*, by William Cullen Bryant, 1896.

²⁶² *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620 – 1635, Vol 1 A-B: 301-302*, (ancestry.com).

²⁶³ *The Frost Genealogy: descendants of William Frost of Oyster Bay, New York*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), 363-364, 10/22/2020.

²⁶⁴ *The Whitin Family: historical notes*, 184, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), 10/22/2020.

²⁶⁵ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620 – 1635, Vol 1 A-B: 301-302*, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave Memorial #38454994*, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁶⁶ *Essex County, Massachusetts Probate Records Supplement, 1644 – 1691*, citing *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts, Vol 1: 246*, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; *Massachusetts Probate Court & Dow, The Probate Records of Essex County, Massachusetts, 143 – 144*, has inventory listed, (archive.org), 10/22/2020.

**The Will of Henry Birdsall proved 28:9:1651, and Inventory brought in.
(Salem Quarterly Court Records, Vol 3, Leaf 39)
Inventory taken 17 Nov 1651 by Tho. Trusler and Edmo. Batter**

One dwelling house, outhouses & 1 acres & quart. Land, 10£; 5 acres of upland in the Northfield & half acres of salt marsh in the southfield 4£, 10s; Two Cowes & hay 10£, 10s; 1 feather bed, 1 boulder & 2 pillows 3£, 5s; 1 high bedstead & 1 trndell bedstead 1£, 2s; 1 Covled, 3 blankets & 3 curtayns 2£; 1 settle 5s; 1 chest 6s, 8d; 2 Cubbords 15s & 1£, 6s, 8d; 1 small table bord & 2 Joyne stools 5s; 2 chaires & cushions 3s; 3 payles 4s; A meal tubb 4s & 11s; 2 Iron pots & 1 kitle 12s; 2 brass kitles 7s; 2 bras skillets 3s; 1 bras mortar 11s; 3 great pewter platter 10s; 3 smale platters 3s, 13s; halfe dossen saucers 1 pewter plate 1s, 4d; 1 pewter bason 1s, 2 saucers 1s, 2 bekens & 1 wine tap 2s, 4s, 6d; 1 saltseller 1s, trencher 6d, earthen dishes and wooden dishes & bowles 5s, 6d, 7s; 1 old sword, musket & halberd 9s; books 5s; 1 paire Andirons 3s; tongs and fore shovels 2 paire pott hooks 1s; 2 pair hangers 5s, 17s; tubs & barrels 3s & 1 brasse pane 18d, 4s, 6d; wearing apparel, 3 Coats breeches dublet, stocking, shooes & 3 shirts 2£, 17s, 6d; 4 napkins 2s; 4 pillow bers 4s; 3 pair of sheets 18s, 4d, 1£, 4s, 4d; 1 pewter pott 1s, 6d; 3 hundred of boards 18s; timber 5s; tooles for his trade 2£, 2£, 5s; 2 swine 40s & a remnant of cloath 12s, 2£, 12s; 1 bedstead 15s; total 47£, 19s, 10d.

(Essex Co Quarterly Court Files Vol 2, leaf 25) ²⁶⁷

Anderson's *Great Migration Project* has no origins for Henry Birdsall. Genealogy compiler Dave Pane-Joyce of the Massachusetts Society of Genealogists notes:

Henry Birdsall was probably related to Thomas Birdsall who appears in some Norwich church records. Thomas Birdsall and Alice Spendler, m. St. John, Timberhill 7 January 1588 and their children were baptized at St. John, Timberhill and St. Gregory's between 1598 and 1602. ²⁶⁸

This would make his 1585 birth year a bit too early, a birth year closer to 1580 is needed if he married in 1610. I will leave it as parents unknown.

Kempe Family Ancestry

Kempe is Anglo-Saxon in origin and is from an occupational name for a "jousting or wrestling champion." The name is derived from the Middle English (1200 - 1500) *kempe*, a weakened sense of the Olde English pre 7th century *cempa*, "warrior, champion," from *camp*, meaning "battle," which is itself from the Latin, *campus*.

Agnes (Kempe) Birdsall, was probably the daughter of William Kempe, b. Norwich, Norfolk, England 1563; d. Norwich, Norfolk 1631; m. St. Stephen's, Norfolk, England 9 July 1583, Agnes Jies (Giles), b. Norwich, Norfolk, England 1567; parents unknown. There are no records.²⁶⁹

²⁶⁷George Francis Dow, Massachusetts, Probate Court (Essex County), *The Probate records of Essex County, Massachusetts*, 143-144, (archive.org), 12/3/2020.

²⁶⁸ Pane-Joyce Genealogy website, *Birdsall Family*, 195, https://mathcs.clarku.edu/~djoyce/gen/report/rr01/rr01_137.html#P125437, 10/22/2020.

²⁶⁹ <https://ancestors.familysearch.org/en/GQ73-NFQ/william-kemp-1556-1631>, I usually stay away from trees on Family Search as there are many errors. This listing, however, does place this Kempe family in Norfolk, England.

There is a Baptism on record for an Agnes Kempe, at St. John's, Egham, Surrey, England, on 26 December 1590, father, William Kempe.²⁷⁰ Without more documentation, we can't know if this is "our" Agnes. The Norwich information seems more likely, given that is where she married and baptized her children.

Kibbe Family Ancestry Continued

Elisha Kibbe was the son of Edward Kibbe, b. Exeter, Devonshire, England 11 May 1611, son of Edward and Debora (___) Kibbe of Exeter, England; m. Exeter, England 1639 Mary Partridge.²⁷¹

Children:

- i. MARY KIBBE, b. Roxbury 1640; bapt. Boston 30 Nov 1645 (age abt. 5yrs 7mo 2weeks); d. Wakefield 10 Nov 1735, bur. Old Burying Ground, near her parents; m. (1) Morrill; m. (2) Thomas Hodgman.
- ii. JAMES KIBBE, b. May 1642; bapt. Boston 30 Nov 1645 (age abt. 3yrs 6mo); d. Charlestown 1682; m. (1) Hannah ___, d. bef. Oct 1679; 3 children; m. (2) 23 Oct 1679 Sarah (Stevenson) Lowden.
- iii. **ELISHA KIBBE**, b. Boston 20 Jan 1644/45; bapt. Boston 30 Nov 1645 (age 10mo 10days); d. Enfield 3 Apr 1735; m. **Rachel Cook**.
- iv. DEBORAH KIBBE, bapt. Boston 7 Nov 1647; d. 1699; m. Thomas Parker.
- v. JOHN KIBBE, bapt. Boston 27 July 1650; d. age 2, bur. 20 Dec 1652.
- vi. RUEBEN KIBBE, bapt. Roxbury 25 Jan 1651/52; d. 14 days old; bur. Roxbury 8 Feb 1651/52.
- vii. ELIZABETH KIBBE, b. 27 Jan 1654/55; bapt. Roxbury 27 Feb 1654/55; d. abt. 1697; m. Abraham Randall.
- viii. REBECCA KIBBE, b. Boston 1 May 1657; her birth records state her parents were of Muddy River.
- ix. JOSHUA KIBBE, bapt. Boston 31 Mar 1661; d. Medway, Massachusetts 5 May 1731; m. 1688 Mary Comey.
- x. EDWARD KIBBE JR., b. 1659/1662; d. 1694. No documentation.
- xi. HANNAH KIBBE, b. 14 May 1663; bapt. Boston 14 June 1663; d. 27 Apr 1695 unmarried (age 31 – 33); bur. Old Burying Ground, near her parents.

²⁷⁰ *England, Select Births and Christenings 1538 – 1975*, FHL film #994418, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁷¹ <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html>, 10/22/2020; *New England Marriages to 1700*. Vol 2: 888, (americanancestors.org), 10/22/2020; *Jesse Smith, his ancestors and descendants*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), Chapter III: "The ancestors of the children of the compiler," 129, Family #409 "Kibbe," 10/22/2020.

In 1645, Edward Kibbe, sawyer, emigrated to Boston, Massachusetts, and settled at Muddy River, just southwest of the city (now Brookline), where he had a sawmill.²⁷² On 29 September 1645, Mrs. Mary Kibbe was admitted to the First Church in Boston.

In 1654, authorities in Boston apprenticed John Bery of Roxbury, Norfolk Co., Massachusetts, to Edward Kibbe.²⁷³

In the following years, Edward was active in growing the Boston area. In 1662, he was appointed Clerk of Market, an office probably created to give the Muddy River district representation in Boston markets. From 1666 to 1683, he served intermittently as Surveyor of Highways. He was also a town clerk.²⁷⁴

Edward Kibbe of Boston 1645, is said to have come from Exeter in England. He settled at Muddy River, now Brookline. His son Elisha Kibbe was baptized in the first church in Boston, in 1645, married Rachel Cooke, of Salem, and lived to be 97. He was one of Enfield's first settlers, and his youngest son Isaac Kibbe, born in 1683, was the first boy born there. His daughter Rachel Kibbe, born in 1688, lived until her 100th year.

Freeman, Memorial of Thomas Abbey, 91-92

I found two records of land transactions involving Edward Kibbe:

On 26 January 1651, Edward Kibbie (sawyer) with John Collins, sell to John Ingoldsby a house which had belonged to Edmund Jackson, near the house of John Staniford, with a garden and a yard. (SD 1:165)

On 7 March 1673/74, Edward Kibbie of Muddy River deeds land in Muddy River adjoining his own dwelling house. (SD8:332)²⁷⁵

In 1674, Edward and his wife were listed as contributors to the fund for the second meetinghouse in Roxbury, southeast of Brookline, Massachusetts. They are later listed on its membership rolls. He probably did not move to Reading, Massachusetts until after Mary Kibbe's death.

²⁷² Hanna, *Kibbe Genealogical Notes on Some Descendants of Edward Kibbe and His Wife, Mary (Partridge) Kibbe*, 1, (archive.org), 10/22/2020; *Inhabitants and Estates of the Town of Boston, 1630–1800 and The Crooked and Narrow Streets of Boston, 1630–1822, 11834*, <CD-ROM>, (Boston, Mass.: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2001), (AmericanAncestors.org), 10/22/2020; <http://jtbullcock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html>, 10/22/2020.

²⁷³ <http://freepages.rootsweb.com/~walkersj/genealogy/Kibbe.htm> for this fact, for his children, and other information, 10/22/2020.

²⁷⁴ National Society Colonial Dames, XVII Century, compiled by Mary Louise Marshall Hutton, *Seventeenth Century Colonial Ancestors, Vol II, Supplement I*: 36, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁷⁵ *Inhabitants and Estates of the Town of Boston, 1630–1800 & The Crooked and Narrow Streets of Boston, 1630–1822, 11834*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), 10/22/2020.

It is believed that Mary (___) Kibbe d. Brookline, 1683 Brookline; bur. Old Burying Ground, First Congregational Church, Wakefield, Middlesex Co. Massachusetts. Her husband and daughters, Hannah and Mary are buried nearby.²⁷⁶

On 1 November 1694, Edward Kibbe, d. Brookline (Muddy River), Massachusetts²⁷⁷ and was buried 20 miles north in the Old Burying Ground, located on Church Street at the Congregational Church Wakefield, with his wife. His death was recorded in both the Wakefield and Reading registers. Wakefield was originally part of Old Redding.²⁷⁸

Here lyes ye Body of Edward Keebe
Aged 97 years
Died November 1, 1694



The lunette again bears the 'death's head' symbol.
The borders are pumpkin vines (symbolizing, resilience, prosperity, growth and abundance) topped with a concentric wheel or spiral motif.

Find a Grave photo by Art Kibby, 2010
used with permission



His unmarried daughter Hannah is buried to his left, and to the right his married daughter Mary Hodgman is buried. His Will was recorded in Massachusetts, but I have not found images or a transcription.²⁷⁹

Old Burying Ground, Wakefield
Find a Grave
Image by John Glassford, 2010

²⁷⁶ <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html#EK>, 10/22/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #51686774, (ancestry.com), has errors abundant! 10/22/2020.

²⁷⁷ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620 - 1988, Reading, Vital Record Transcripts, Reading Deaths*, 534, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁷⁸ <http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~walkersj/Kibbe.htm>, 10/22/2020; <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html#EK>, 10/22/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial # 22254496, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁷⁹ *Massachusetts, U.S. Wills and Probate Records, 1635 - 1911*, (ancestry.com), 12/3/2020.

Mary (Partridge) Kibbe, b. England 1615 – 1620. Some researchers say her father's name was Ralph Partridge others say his name was James, both with unnamed wives. There are immigration records for a Mary Partridge to Plymouth Colony in 1636.²⁸⁰ She m. Edward Kibbe, June 1639/40, some say in England, others say here in America. Having no documents to support any of this leaves her ancestry, and her surname, a mystery. One long-standing speculation was that Mary was the daughter of John Partridge and Jane Hogg. Someone in the past wanted to have an illustrious ancestry through them, and the misinformation has been copied hundreds or even thousands of times. One online tree resource states: "Please do not reconnect them as her parents unless you have original primary evidence."²⁸¹

The marriage, in England of Edward Kibby to Mary Partridge does seem to be recorded in Colonial Records, however, some researchers say they married in England, others in the Boston area, either in 1639 or 1640. There are no primary source documents. Most agree Edward came to America, met, and married Mary Partridge in Plymouth June 1639, and moved to Boston in 1640. Some say he had a previous wife, with whom he had a daughter Lydia. There was a different Edward Kibby with a daughter Lydia living in the area at the time, so this seems invalid. Without documented proof, this is another mystery.

<http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html#MP>

If he married in America in 1639/40, then the immigration records for 1645 are incorrect or apply only to a move from Plymouth Colony to Massachusetts Bay Colony. There is an immigration record for a Mary Partridge arriving in 1636. We know that their first child was born in Roxbury 16 Apr 1640, so it is very likely that they were in the colonies and married nine months prior.

Kibbe Family Ancestry Concluded

Edward Kibbe may have been the son of Edward Kibbe II, b. Devon, Co Exeter, England ca. 1585/8 to Edward Kibbe I and Elizabeth Goffe; m. 1610 Deborah ___, b. Exeter 1587; may have d. England 1695.²⁸²

Edward Kibbe II, d. Exeter, England May 1611, the same month his son was born. Most likely he and Elizabeth Goffe had only the one son, Edward Kibbe, colonist.

²⁸⁰ *U.S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s-1900s*, referencing Banks, *Planters of the Commonwealth*, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁸¹ <http://www.wikitree.com/g2g/293301/problems-with-profile-of-mary-partridge-kibbe>, 10/22/2020.

²⁸² *Jesse Smith, his ancestors and descendants, Chapter III, "The ancestors of the children of the compiler - Kibbe:"* 409: 129, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html#EDK>, 10/22/2020; *UK and Ireland, Find a Grave*, Memorial #163746069, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

Current research has uncovered two baptismal records for two different Elizabeth Goffes. The first in the parish of St. John at Hackney, just northeast of London 18 January 1568; the second Steyning, County Sussex 5 April 1573. Without more information, it is impossible to know if either is “our” Elizabeth Goffe. To confuse matters more, there is a marriage record for Edward Kibbe, m. St Peter Upon Cornhill Church, London 15 Dec 1556 Ellen Goffe. Could these be Edward Kibbe’s grandparents? As his father died just after Edward was born, he may have been raised by his grandparents. Without documentation, we will never know.²⁸³

Bush Family Ancestry Continued

We now return to the Bush surname and the grandfathers of Hannah (Alden) Abbey: Jonathan Bush Jr. (her great-grandfather) was the son of Jonathan Bush Sr. (her great-great grandfather), b. 26 Apr 1650; d. 15 Feb 1739;²⁸⁴ m. Springfield 22 July 1679 Sarah Lamb,²⁸⁵ b. Springfield, Hampden Co, Massachusetts 15 Apr 1660; d. Enfield 15 Feb 1726, age 65,²⁸⁶ daughter of Thomas Lamb/e, b. England; immigrated age 2 with his parents to Massachusetts; sailed with Gov. John Winthrop of the Massachusetts Bay Colony to Boston.

Jonathan Bush & Sarah Lambe were joyned in marriage
22 July 1679, Springfield, Massachusetts.²⁸⁷

Children born at Enfield:²⁸⁸

- i. **JONATHAN BUSH JR.**, b. 10 Apr 1681; d. 1746/47; m. Springfield, Massachusetts 22 July 1679 **Sarah Lambe**.
- ii. **JOHN BUSH**, b. 22 Nov 1685; d. abt. 25 Aug 1756, one son: Joseph Bush, b. Enfield, Connecticut 1718.
- iii. **DANIEL BUSH**, b. 13 Nov 1689; d. Enfield abt. 31 Oct 1690.
- iv. **EBENEZER BUSH**, b. 19 Aug 1692.
- v. **CALEB BUSH**, b. 27 Dec 1697; d. 1698. (Connecticut, Vital Records, Before 1850)
- vi. **SARAH BUSH**, b. 27 Sept 1699; d. Somers, Tolland, Connecticut 10 Feb 1741; m. (1) Benjamin Sutton; m. (2) Jacob Kibbe, grandson of Elisha Kibbe.

²⁸³ <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html#EDK>, 10/22/2020.

²⁸⁴ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #137083988, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁸⁵ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Springfield*, Vol 2:1650, (americanancestors.org), 10/22/2020; *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 1:259, (americanancestors.org) 10/22/2020.

²⁸⁶ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #137090099, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁸⁷ *Massachusetts Vital and Town Records, Springfield Marriages*, 123, 3rd line from the top, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Hampshire Records, Springfield Marriages*, Vol 2: 1683, (americanancestors.org), 10/22/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Springfield V-1: 23, Book 1, Births, Marriages, Deaths, 1638 - 1728* (has old style spelling), (americanancestors.org), 10/22/2020.

²⁸⁸ Hinman, *A Catalogue of the Names of the First Puritan Settlers of Connecticut*, 168 - 169 for some of the children listed, (archive.org), 10/22/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #137083988, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

Other Children listed in some resources, but questionable:²⁸⁹

- i. JOSEPH N. BUSH, he is mentioned in two listings based on an ancestral file with Family Search. No evidence, in any vital records, of Joseph, in this family, has been found. The use of a middle initial strongly suggests some misinterpretation of data has taken place since middle initials were rare until after the Revolutionary War.
- ii. RUTH BUSH, she is also mentioned in two listings based on an ancestral file with Family Search, but no evidence of a Ruth Bush in the vital records where this family was living has been found.

A Jonathan Bush appears in a 1661 Early Massachusetts Census, Springfield, Hampden County, Massachusetts.²⁹⁰ “Our” Jonathan would be age eleven which makes it suspect, for children were not usually named in the early census records. This could indicate a different Jonathan Bush.

Jonathan Bush Sr., was a first settler of Enfield, Connecticut based on the following (paraphrased):

At a town meeting of Springfield, Massachusetts, on 14 August 1679, a committee of five persons was appointed to manage the concern of the proposed plantation at The Falls and Freshwater (later to become Enfield). Grants of homes and out lots were made to nineteen individuals including... Jonathan Bush Sr., Samuel Terry Sr., Isaac Morgan, John and Samuel Bliss, and several others in our family tree. All of these were inhabitants of Springfield²⁹¹ and afterward, only three of them became actual settlers in Enfield: Jonathan Bush (Sr.), Isaac Morgan, and John Pease. Jonathan Bush Sr. owned the fourth lot, on the west side at the upper end of the town, and afterward lived north of Freshwater.

At a proprietor’s meeting in July 1680, grants of land were made to John Pease Sr., Elisha Kibbe, John Pease Jr., and Robert Pease who were actual settlers from Salem. You may recall the story from Volume One of John and Robert Pease, who lived in a cellar, or cave in a hillside, through their first winter there. Additional grants were made in 1681, among them: John Kibbe, Samuel Terry Jr., Jonathan Pease, Lot Killam, Isaac Meacham, John Bement Sr., John Bement Jr., Thomas Geer, and Obadiah Abbe, most of whom became actual settlers before the close of 1683.²⁹²

²⁸⁹ <https://www.geni.com/people/Jonathan-Bush-Sr>, 10/22/2020.

²⁹⁰ *Massachusetts: Miscellaneous Census Substitutes, 1630-1788, 1840, 1890*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2013), from records supplied by ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁹¹ *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register, Vol 5 (1851)*, 84, (americanancestors.org), 10/22/2020.

²⁹² Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 14.

The first Enfield town meeting took place in 1688, and John Pease Jr. and Samuel Terry were the first selectmen chosen by the people. A corn mill, the first, was also erected at Freshwater. Isaac Meacham and Jonathan Bush Sr. had previously erected a sawmill. Sometime later, there was a Jonathan Bush who served during King George's War with James Pease, Isaac Meacham, Thomas Abbe, Nathaniel Chapin, and others with surnames of Collins and Bement. Many of these did not return from the Battle at Cape Breton 1745.²⁹³

I located a 1732 Will for a Jonathan Bush, d. Marlborough or Marlboro, Middlesex, Massachusetts 26 March 1732. The location was questionable and further research showed it to be Jonathan Bush, son of Abiah Bush and Grace Barrett. Abiah is another son of John Bush and Grace Saunders, a cousin to our Jonathan Bush, b. Marlboro Middlesex, Massachusetts 1690.²⁹⁴

Jonathan Bush Sr., died in Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut, 15 February 1739.²⁹⁵

Lamb Family Ancestry

The surname **Lamb(e)** comes from the ancient Anglo-Saxon culture of Britain. It was a name for a gentle-hearted person, or it could be a nickname for a meek and inoffensive person, or a metonymic occupational name for a keeper of lambs. It may also have been given as a pet form of the Medieval English personal name Lambert, from the Old German elements "land or territory," plus *berht*, "bright." There may be a connection to the royal families of Steward, Tudor, and the recently deceased Queen Elizabeth Bowes Lyon. Henry VIII was the last Tudor King and his daughter Elizabeth I was of the Tudor/Stewart/Lyon/Lambe lines.

Sarah Lamb, wife of Jonathan Bush Sr., early settler of Enfield, Connecticut, b. Springfield, Massachusetts 15 June 1660, was the daughter of John Lamb, 3rd known child of Thomas & Elizabeth Lamb, possibly bapt. Barnardiston, Suffolk, England 28 Apr 1628.²⁹⁶ Immigrated, age 2 (1630) with his parents to Massachusetts; sailed with Gov. John Winthrop of the

²⁹³ <http://freepages.rootsweb.com/~nyterry/genealogy/towns/enfield/enfieldhis.html>, 10/22/2020; John Chauncy Pease, M.D., 1829, *An Historical Sketch of the Town of Enfield*, (text is paraphrased from the original), 10/22/2020.

²⁹⁴ *Middlesex County, Massachusetts Probate Index, 1648-1870*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2000), Will # 3676, 10/22/2020.

²⁹⁵ *Global, Find a Grave*, Memorial # 51560846 offers this bio: Jonathan Bush Sr., was *probably* a son of Randolph Bush (aka Randall John or John, b. 1590 England); *U.S., Find a Grave*, Memorial # 137083988, lists father as Randall John Bush, (both on ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; Hinman, *A Catalogue of the Names of the First Puritan Settlers of Connecticut*, 442, (archive.org), 10/22/2020.

²⁹⁶ *The American Genealogist*, (americangenealogist.com), Vol 56: 99, (americanancestors.org), 10/22/2020; *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700, Third Supplement to Torrey's New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 169, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

Massachusetts Bay Colony to Boston; d. Springfield, Hampden, Massachusetts, (was sick and died) 28 Sept 1690.²⁹⁷

John Lamb, m. Springfield 1651 (1) Joanna ___, possibly b. Agawam Plantation (Springfield), Hampshire, Massachusetts 1631; d. Springfield, Massachusetts 8 Sept 1683;²⁹⁸ m. (2) 27 Jan 1687 Lydia (Wright) (Bliss) (Norton).²⁹⁹

He settled in Springfield in January 1651, and was a wheelwright and an East Indies trader. Many of the resources I found labeled him as such, but I think the title of trader may belong to a John Lamb of Maine.

Many online trees and even published genealogies have John Lamb in New London Connecticut, at Kittery, Maine, and in Springfield, Massachusetts at overlapping times, and that his wife's name was Ann Powell (Chapin) Plaisted or Joanna, aka Ann. There are records in all these places, but I couldn't put them together for "our" John Lamb. Then I found this user-generated document in Family Stories on ancestry.com:

John Lamb of Maine - Research, compiled by Joan Best, May 2003, in which she lays out the timeline and genealogy of the John Lamb of Maine (and Connecticut), never mixing it with the John Lamb of Springfield. I thanked her for her work and the clarity it brought my research.³⁰⁰ Our John Lamb is the John Lamb of Springfield.

John Lamb, m. Springfield 1651 (1) Joanna ___. There is a reference to John Lamb, (again he is called a trader with the East Indies) m. Miss Chapin, and his brother Thomas Lamb Jr., m. Miss Stobbins (Stebbins). Both are sons of Thomas Lamb/e, immigrant.³⁰¹

Children all born at Springfield:³⁰²

- i. JOHN LAMB JR. (first of the name), b. 20 Dec 1653; d. 13 July 1654.
- ii. JOHN LAMB JR. (second of the name) (twin), b. 15 May 1655; d. 5 June 1676.

²⁹⁷ Global, Find a Grave, Memorial #55023506, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620 – 1988, Springfield, Births, Marriages and Death, Deaths:188, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁹⁸ U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700, 448, 1/wf Joanna ___, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #178840198, says Thomas Chapin and Bridget Hannaford are Joanna's parents and she is born in England, it also lists 10 children born to her and John Lamb, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

²⁹⁹ Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620 – 1988, Springfield, Births, Marriages and Death, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; North America, Family Histories 1500 – 2000, A genealogical record of the descendants of Quartermaster George Colton, 1, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

³⁰⁰ <https://www.ancestry.com/mediauiviewer/collection/1030/tree/58047097/person/292097690642>, 10/22/2020; http://freepages.rootsweb.com/~clovis/genealogy/john_lamb_me_timeline.htm, 10/22/2020.

³⁰¹ Ellery Bicknell Crane, ed., *Historic homes and institutions and Genealogical and Personal Memoirs of Worcester County, Massachusetts*, Vol 3: 337, (New York, the Lewis Co, 1907), (books.google.com), 10/22/2020.

³⁰² New England Historical and Genealogical Register Vol 19: 62 -64, "Records of Springfield Massachusetts: Birth records from 1667-1680," (americanancestors.org), 10/22/2020; <http://wildes.net/lamb/pafg03.htm> and https://www.werelate.org/wiki/Family:John_Lamb_and_Joanna_Chapin_%281%29 both on 10/22/2020.

- iii. THOMAS LAMB (twin), b. 15 May 1655; may have m. Thankful Hill.
- iv. JOANNA LAMB, b. 20 Sept 1657; d. Springfield 8 Aug 1683; m. Springfield, 22 July 1679 Samuel Wright Stebbins, b. Springfield 19 Sept 1646; d. Springfield 13 July 1708.
- v. **SARAH LAMB**, b. 15 June 1660; d. 1726 Enfield; m. Springfield, Massachusetts 22 July 1679 **Jonathan Bush Sr.**
- vi. SAMUEL LAMB, b. 28 Sept 1663; d. Springfield 5 Dec 1729; m. Springfield 1 Dec 1687 Rebecca Bird.
- vii. DANIEL LAMB, b. 24 Nov 1666; d. Springfield 8 Mar 1691; m. 12 June 1690 Elizabeth Atkinson/Atchison.
- viii. MARY LAMB, b. 19 July 1669; d. Springfield 6 Sep 1669.
- ix. ABIGAIL LAMB, b. 20 Sept 1670; d. 14 Nov 1696; m. Springfield 9 Nov 1693 James Lawton.
- x. JOSHUA LAMB, b. 3 Oct 1674; d. ca. 1729; m. Mary Alcock.

Other sources list sons Job, Isaac and Ebenezer, and daughter Elizabeth Longbottom. Perhaps these are children of John Lamb of Maine.

On 27 May 1652, John Lamb of Springfield, wheelwright, son of Thomas Lamb late of Roxbury, deceased:

Acknowledged receipt of his share of his father's estate, 19£ 13s, from Thomas Halley of Roxbury my father-in-law. The widow of his father Thomas Lamb, m. 2 Feb 1652 Thomas Hawley, making him a "step-father."³⁰³

John Lamb held the following positions in Springfield: fence viewer 1653 & 1666, surveyor of highways 1662, and sealer of weights and measures. He had the 5th seat in the Church in 1663. John Lamb signed a petition against imposts 1668, and served as Sergeant, Westfield garrison, August 1676 during King Philip's War. He took the Oath of Allegiance 31 December 1678, Springfield. In 1695, his heirs received grants at Woodstock, Connecticut for his military service.³⁰⁴

John Lamb filed a complaint on 14 September 1660 against Thomas Mirack for non-performance of a bargain to plow for eleven days: penalty 2s per day. Because it was late in the year, and the penalty mentioned was not unreasonable, the court decided Thomas Mirack should pay John Lamb 20s for damages and 3s 4d for entry of the action; his court costs.

³⁰³ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 56 (1980): 99, Patricia C. Lamb, "Thomas Lamb of Roxbury Massachusetts," (americanancestors.org), 10/22/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins*, Vol 2: G-O, 1153 – 1155, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; <https://scholtz.org/Genealogy/getperson.php?personID=I2523&tree=MyTree>, 10/22/2020.

³⁰⁴ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 56 (1980): 99, Patricia C. Lamb, "Thomas Lamb of Roxbury Massachusetts," (americanancestors.org), 10/22/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins*, Vol 2: G-O, 1153 – 1155, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

The 1661 Early Massachusetts Census has John Lamb residing in Springfield, Hampden County.³⁰⁵ On 12 March 1662, John Lamb witnessed the sale of land by widow Elizabeth Harman to her son-in-law Charles Ferry. The other witness was John Lombard.

Seating in the Meetinghouse 23 Dec 1659, Springfield, Massachusetts, USA, a book by Cheryl Harmon Bills, mentions a court case in which John Lamb and his wife Joanna testify about Goodwife Henryson and her unlawful playing of cards. The woman denied the charges, but her husband confessed that Card Playing was common at their house.³⁰⁶

On 27 January 1665:

In the Plaine above End of Brook, six acres & half, more or Less. Breadth 14 rod, length Extending from the East thence to the River 72 rod: bounded North by Rowland Thomas, south by Miles Morgan. This six acres & half is by William Brooks sold and fully passed away to John Lamb & to his Heirs & assigns forever.³⁰⁷

On 8 September 1683, Joanna (Chapin) Lamb, died in Springfield, Massachusetts. She was also buried in Springfield.³⁰⁸

John Lamb, and James Lewis appearing on 23 August 1686 to answer for their disquieting the Towne by shooting of Guns Last Thursday in the evening Just within Night. They, owning the thing, and acknowledging their folly and being sorry for it and promising to be more careful and for the future to avoid all such foolery.³⁰⁹

John Lamb, m. (2) 27 Jan 1687 Lydia (Wright) (Bliss) Norton, daughter of Samuel Wright of Braintree, Massachusetts.³¹⁰ Note: Lydia Wright, m. (1) 25 Oct 1654 Lawrence Bliss. After his death she m. (2) 31 Oct 1678 John Norton who d. 24 Aug 1687; she m. (3) 7 Jan 1688 John Lamb.

³⁰⁵ *Massachusetts, Compiled Census and Census Substitutes Index 1790-1890*, 83, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

³⁰⁶ Cheryl Harmon Bills, *Seating in the Meetinghouse 23 Dec 1659, Springfield, Massachusetts, USA*, (not found again online, 10/22/2020); FYI: <https://historicipswich.org/2019/09/07/meeting-house-seating/>, 10/22/2020. *Early Days in New England: life and times of Henry Burt of Springfield and some of his descendants*, 252, <online database>, Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), also (books.google.com & babel.hathitrust.org), FYI: The 'seating' lists are found on pages 87-88, 10/22/2020.

³⁰⁷ Henry Martyn Burt, Silas Wright Burt, *Early Days in New England: life and times of Henry Burt of Springfield and some of his descendants*, 246, (New England, C. W. Bryan Company, printers, 1893), (babel.hathitrust.org), 1/19/2021.

³⁰⁸ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620 – 1988, Springfield, Births Marriages, and Death: Deaths*, 183, "Joanna the wife of Jn'o Lamb was Sicke & died: Sept: 8. 1683", 10/22/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #178840198, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020.

³⁰⁹ Bills, *Seating in the Meetinghouse 23 Dec 1659, Springfield, Massachusetts, USA*, (not found again online), 10/22/2020.

³¹⁰ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620 – 1988, Springfield, Births, Marriages, Death: Marriages*, (ancestry.com), 10/22/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 123:60, "Judge Pynchon's Marriage Record: 1685-1711," (americanancestors.org), 10/22/2020.

John Lamb, died in Springfield, Hampden, Massachusetts 28 September 1690.³¹¹ Records indicate his Will was probated on 27 September 1690 in Hampshire, Massachusetts (the date of death from *Find a Grave* may be incorrect). His Will contains bequests to sons Thomas, Samuel, Jonathan, Daniel, Joshua, and daughter Abigail. There is no mention of a wife. His estate was valued at a little over 421£, which was respectable indeed.

He had more animals than many of his neighbors would have had, several good-sized parcels of land, more tools and implements, and more household goods than would have been expected. He leaves his wheelwright tools to his son Thomas.

The rest is hard to read, and I have not found a typed transcription.³¹²

Lydia (Bliss) (Norton) Lamb, m. (4) 1 Mar 1692 Q.M. (Quartermaster) George Colton, d. 13 Feb 1699.³¹³

Lydia (Wright) (Bliss) (Norton) (Lamb) (Colton), d. Springfield 17 Dec 1699, age 62/63.³¹⁴

Chapin Family Ancestry

In Clarence A. Torrey's, *New England Marriages Before 1700*, Joanna ___, wife of Jonathan Lamb is simply listed as Joanna ___.³¹⁵ However, there is a body of popular thought that her surname was Chapin and she was from Springfield.

I turned to Deacon Samuel Chapin, the first to arrive in the Colonies in 1641, settled in Springfield, Massachusetts in 1642.³¹⁶ and whom we met in Volume One. His history and

³¹¹ *Global, Find a Grave*, Memorial #55023506, has children listed as Sarah Bush and Samuel Lamb; *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, Springfield, Births, Marriages, Death, Deaths: 188*, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020.

³¹² *Massachusetts, Wills and Probate Records, 1635 - 1991*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2015), *Probate Records, 1660 – 1916*, Massachusetts Probate Court, (Hampshire County), *Hampshire, Probate Records, Vol 1-4, 1660-1780: 51*, 10/24/2020.

³¹³ *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins, Vol 2: G-O*, 1154, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020; *North America, Family Histories 1500 – 2000*, G. Woolworth Colton, *A genealogical record of the descendants of Quartermaster George Colton*, (Philadelphia, J.M. Colton, 1912), 1, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020.

³¹⁴ *Ibid.*, 10/24/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol 31 (Oct 1877): 418*, "Longmeadow Families," (americanancestors.org), 10/24/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol 33; 202*, "Longmeadow Families," (americanancestors.org), 10/24/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave*, Memorial #46774467, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020.

³¹⁵ *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 448, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020.

³¹⁶ *Orange Chapin, The Chapin Genealogy: containing a very large proportion of the descendants of Deacon Samuel Chapin, who settled in Springfield, Massachusetts, 1642*, 1 – 3, (Northampton, Massachusetts, Metcalf & Co., 1862), (archive.org), 10/24/2020.

ancestry are well researched and documented. He has no recorded daughter named Joanna, even though one blogger insists he does.

The biographical sketch listed on the *Find a Grave*, Memorial 178840198 has this: "Joanna Chapin was the daughter of Thomas Chapin (brother to Deacon Samuel Chapin, my note) and Bridget Hannaford."

I wrote Lawrence H. Grunert, *Find A Grave* contributor asking for his sources. He used geni.com and wikitree.com (both unsourced), and familysearch.org, where the only reliable sources are her marriage, the birth of children, and her death, no maiden name given. Therefore, I didn't consider his information to be correct.

Some online tree sites, listed in the previous paragraph, have Joanna Chapin, born in Paignton, Devonshire, England 1631, where Samuel and Thomas Chapin have their ancestry. Others indicate she was born in Springfield, Massachusetts. Paignton is a seaside town on the coast of Tor Bay in Devon, England; a holiday destination known as the English Riviera.³¹⁷

There is documentation of her marriage to Jonathan Lamb and of her death: Joanna (____) Lamb, d. Springfield, Massachusetts 8 Sept 1683.³¹⁸

Her father may have been Thomas Chapin, b. ca. Paignton, Devonshire, England 8 Mar/May 1596; d. Paignton bef. 27 May 1628; bur. same (age 32); m. Paignton 7 Aug 1620 at age 24, Bridgett Hannaford.³¹⁹

Children all born or baptized in Paignton, Devonshire, England:

- i. PHILLIP CHAPIN, bapt. 6 July 1621.
- ii. JOHN CHAPIN, bapt. 1 June 1623.
- iii. SAMUEL CHAPIN, b. bef. 4 July 1624; bur. Paignton, Devonshire, England 15 June 1628.
- iv. THOMAS CHAPIN, bapt. 14 July 1626; bur. Paignton, Devonshire, England 30 Nov 1685.

If Thomas and Bridgett are her parents, where is the listing for their daughter Joanna? And if Thomas died in Paignton at age 32, how did their daughter arrive in the colonies? Perhaps Bridget (Hannaford) Chapin was the one to immigrate?

³¹⁷ <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Paignton>, 10/24/2020.

³¹⁸ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Deaths*, 183, "Joanna the wife of Jn'o Lamb: was Sicke & died: Sept: 8. 1683." (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #178840198*, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020.

³¹⁹ *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 83: 351 – 357, Howard Millar Chapin, "The English Ancestry of Dea. Samuel Chapin of Springfield, Mass.," 354, (americanancestors.org), 10/24/2020.

No, according to Mr. Grunert (*Find A Grave*), and [wikitree.com](https://www.wikitree.com/), Bridgett remarried and remained in England. *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 83 (1929), states that Samuel came about 1638 and “brought with him from England a wife named Cicely and several children, Henry, Josiah, David, Catherine, and Sarah.”³²⁰ No reference to Joanna.

Samuel and Thomas Chapin were the sons of John Chapin, born 25 September 1566, baptized Berry Pomeroy, Totnes Parish, Devonshire 27 September 1566. The ancient town of Totnes was located on the River Dart. Its most prosperous period was 1550-1650 when the town controlled shipments of cloth and tin to Spain and France.³²¹

John Chapin (age 23), m. Paignton, Devonshire, England 14 Sept 1590 Phillipa Easton, b. Paignton abt. 1569; daughter of Henry/Henrie Easton, b. probably Paignton Parish ca. 1543; d. Brixham, Devon 3 Mar 1630; m. Joan Cliffe (Cleave), b. probably Paignton Parish 1545; d. 1574 Brauton, Devon; daughter of John Cliffe (cliffe, cleffe) and wife.

Children, all baptized at the Church of St. John the Baptist, Paignton, Devonshire:

- viii.
 - i. JOANNA/JOANE CHAPIN, bapt. 26 June 1591; m. Paignton 9 July 1611 James Narracot.
 - ii. JOHN CHAPIN, according to Colonial Families of the United States, John was “probably lost at sea” in 1600.
 - iii. PHILLIPE CHAPIN, bapt. 6 Jan 1593/4.
 - iv. THOMAS CHAPIN, bapt. 8 Mar 1597; d. Paignton 27 May 1626; m. Paignton 1620 Bridgett Hannaford. Children: Phillipe, John, Samuel and Thomas. Note: If he was the father of our Joanna Chapin, she might have been named for Thomas’ elder sister Joanna, but I can find no proof.
 - v. SAMUEL CHAPIN (DEACON), bapt. 8 Oct 1598; d. Springfield, Hampden Co., Massachusetts 11 Nov 1675; m. Paignton 9 Feb 1623 Cicely Penny, daughter of Henry Penny of Paignton. The reader will find my photo of his statue, located in Springfield, Massachusetts in Volume One.
 - vi. MARGARET CHAPIN, bapt. 15 Nov 1600; bur. Paignton 11 Dec 1600.

³²⁰ *Ibid.*, (americanancestors.org), 10/24/2020.

³²¹ <https://www.information-britain.co.uk/history/town/Totnes28/>, 10/24/2020.



If proof is found for our Joanna's parentage, and it is with this branch of the Chapin family, information on her ancestors is readily available for others to research. I will leave it here.

Deacon Samuel Chapin
Augustus Saint-Gaudens sculpture
(Also known as *The Puritan*)
Author's photo
Springfield, Massachusetts, June 2019

Lamb Family Ancestry Concluded

John Lamb was the son of Thomas Lamb 1596-1646; m. Elizabeth ____ 1606-1639. Some have given her surname as Smith, others as Stebbins, which would be the surname of one of her daughters-in law. There is no proof of either.

Thomas was born, possibly in the village of Barnardiston, Risbridge parish, Suffolk, England about 1596. The year is based on an estimated date of marriage in Barnardiston, Suffolk, and the baptism of his children there. "The dates are chronologically consistent with what is known of the Roxbury man and his family, but are not conclusive."³²² He married in 1624, or by 1626, Elizabeth ____, possibly born in England 1604/5.³²³ The Happy Genealogy Dance blog³²⁴ suggests she was possibly the widow Elizabeth Smith who, in 1621, married a Thomas Lambe in Shropshire, England, 178 miles away from Barnardiston. There is no known proof of Elizabeth's heritage.

Three locales in England have been mentioned in the records above and in various online resources for the origins of Thomas Lamb and his wife Elizabeth ____:

³²² *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins*, Vol 2: 1154, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020 citing: *The American Genealogist*, Vol 56: 99 Patricia Lamb article, found on <https://www.geni.com/people/Thomas-Lamb-of-Roxbury/4926955012560122660>, 10/24/2020.

³²³ *Ibid.*, citing: *Parish Registers of Barnardiston, Suffolk, England; New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 2: 914, (americanancestors.org), 10/24/2020.

³²⁴ <http://happygenealogydance.blogspot.com>, 10/24/2020.

- 1) Barnardiston, Suffolk
- 2) Stow-Langtoft (St. George), Suffolk, 25 miles northeast of Barnardiston, through Bury, St. Edmund
- 3) Shropshire, 175 miles to the west. (Which seems too far away.)

As I continued to look online, I found this:

Thomas Lambe, born about 1600 in England; married Elizabeth ____ before 1625. They were living in Barnardiston, Suffolk (near Haverhill) where he was a churchwarden from 1625 till 1629. The surname Lambe or Lamb does not appear in the parish registers before this date. He probably moved here because of his religious beliefs. Barnardiston was a Puritan stronghold in this era and John Winthrop lived nearby. Their son, Thomas, was baptized here on 25 June 1625, a daughter Susanna was baptized on 1 October 1626, and son John was baptized on 20 April 1628. After 1629, there are no more entries for the Lamb surname.³²⁵

Also, researcher Patricia Clare Lamb discovered the following information, while on a trip to England in August 1979:

The *Parish Register* of Barnardiston shows the baptism of Thomas, son of Thomas Lambe on 25 June 1624; the baptism of Susanna, daughter of Thomas Lambe on 1 October 1626; the baptism of John, son of Thomas Lambe on 28 April 1628. Thomas was also a warden of the Church from 1625 to 1629 and he signed the Register in several places. A Church warden is described as a lay official in the Church of England who manages the business, property, and money of the parish church, and is legally the parish representative.³²⁶

I found a reference to Thomas Lambe as a 1620 graduate of Christ's College but as there are numerous Thomas Lambs all across England at this time, I can't be sure, but somehow doubt this is "our" Thomas.

Children born to Thomas Lamb and Elizabeth ____:³²⁷

- i. THOMAS LAMB JR., bapt. Barnardiston 25 June 1624, d. Dec 1652; resided in Charlestown, Massachusetts; not married; receipted (along with brother John) to his stepfather Thomas Hawley for his share of his father's estate on 12 Apr 1652.

³²⁵ *Barnardiston Parish Registers 1540-1900* found on the following website: Descendants-of-thomas-lambe-and-winifred-grisling.html, 10/24/2020.

³²⁶ <https://www.genealogy.com/forum/surnames/topics/lamb/32/> citing, James Gordon Lamb, *The Lamb Family*, (1993), also referencing the work of Patricia Lamb, 10/24/2020.

³²⁷ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III*, 3 vols., 1153 – 1155, (americanancestors.org), 10/24/2020.

Party to a petition granted by the General Court on 31 May 1652 related to a sale of land from his father's estate.³²⁸

- ii. SUSANNA LAMB (possible), bapt. Barnardiston 1 Oct 1626; may have d. bef. 1630.
- iii. **JOHN LAMB**, possibly bapt. Barnardiston 28 Apr 1628; d. Springfield, Hampden, Massachusetts 28 Sept 1690;³²⁹ m. (1) 1651 **Joanna** ____ (birth of first recorded child Springfield, Massachusetts 20 Feb 1653/54); m. (2) Springfield 26 Jan 1687/8 Lydia (Wright) (Bliss) Norton, daughter of Samuel Wright and widow of Lawrence Bliss and of John Norton; wheelwright.
- v. SAMUEL LAMB, b. Roxbury, Massachusetts abt. Oct 1630 soon after arrival, bapt. in the church at Dorchester, (called the third son); no further record; possibly d. bef. 1649.
- vi. ABEL LAMB, b. abt. Aug 1633, probably the "Abell Land, servant to William French"; bur. Cambridge 16 Oct 1649, (age 16).³³⁰
- vii. DECLINE LAMB, b. Apr 1637, (and called his – Thomas Lamb's – first daughter) [RChR 73]; m. Charleston 7 Dec 1663, Stephen Smith.
- viii. BENJAMIN LAMB, b. and d. same day Oct 1639; bur. with his mother 28 Nov 1639. There is an indication that Benjamin was b. abt. the 8th month, when his mother died, and he died a few hours later. There may be errors in dating. Elizabeth died during or just following the birth.

Thomas Lamb, merchant, immigrated in 1630 with wife (Elizabeth) and 2 children, Thomas Lamb Jr. and John Lamb, first settling at Roxbury. He is known as one of the town's founders, being an inhabitant 19 October 1630. The family sailed on the *Arabella*, as part of the Winthrop fleet landing at Salem 12 June 1630.



Monday, 19 March 1630, Easter Monday, the flagship *Arbella* with Captain Peter Milborne, Master leaving the Isle of Wight. March was the first month of the new year. The crossing took nine weeks and was described as perilous.³³¹

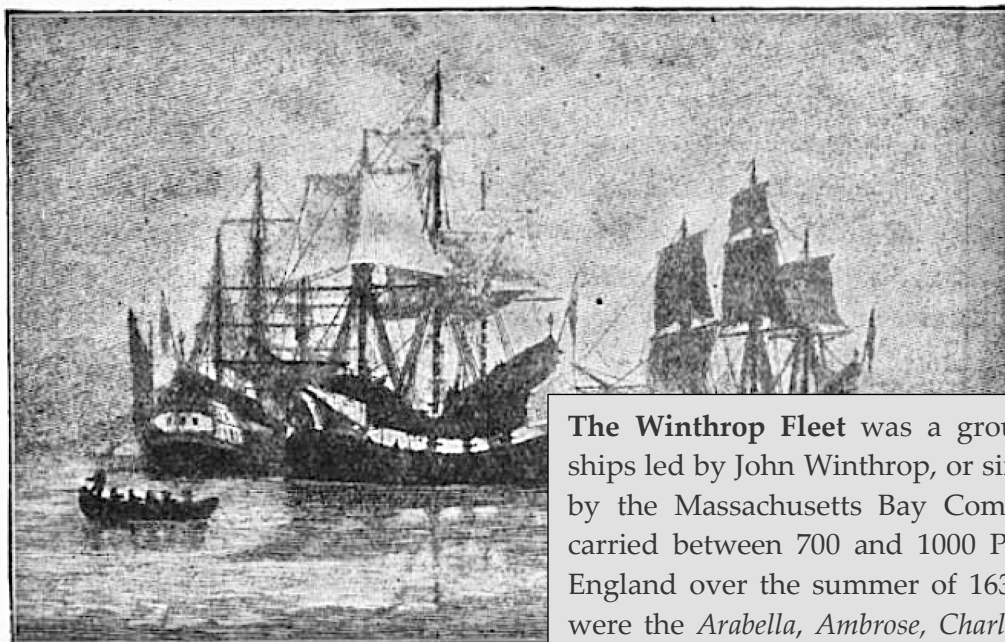
Image of colonial Boston's harbor
ancestry.com, 6/24/2022

³²⁸ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Lamb-322>, 10/24/2020.

³²⁹ Global, Find A Grave, Memorial #55023506, has children listed as Sarah Bush and Samuel Lamb; *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, Springfield, Births, Marriages, Death, Deaths: 188*, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020.

³³⁰ Thomas Williams Baldwin, *Vital Records of Cambridge, Massachusetts to 1850*, (Boston, Wright & Potter Print Co 1914-15), 631: *Cambridge deaths*, (archive.org), 10/24/2020.

³³¹ John Winthrop, James Kendell Hosmar, *Winthrop's Journal 1630-1649, Vol 1, History of New England*, (New York, Scribner, 1908) 631, (archive.org), 10/24/2020; Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 43.



The Winthrop Fleet by WF Halsal
from the text by Eva March Tappan,
An Elementary History of our Country
(New York Houghton Mifflin, Co. 1914)
[wikimediacommons.org](https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Winthrop_Fleet.jpg)

The Winthrop Fleet was a group of eleven ships led by John Winthrop, or sixteen funded by the Massachusetts Bay Company, which carried between 700 and 1000 Puritans from England over the summer of 1630. The ships were the *Arabella*, *Ambrose*, *Charles*, *Mayflower* (not of Pilgrim fame), *Jewel*, *Hopewell*, *Success*, *Trial*, *Whale*, *Talbot*, and the *William & Francis*. There is a society for descendants of those who immigrated aboard one of these ships.

winthropsociety.com

Thomas Lamb received 18 acres in Roxbury, between Meeting House Hill and the Stony River. His neighbors included John Johnson and Isaac Heath. According to Kathryn Lamb Brassington in *A Leg of Lamb, a Family History*, "He would be Tenant to never a man in New England." And yet, Governor Winthrop wrote that the first year in America was challenging. and of Lamb, "he could not pay for one cow."³³²

On 19 October 1630, Thomas Lamb filed a request to become a freeman, and on 18 May 1631, he took the Oath of the general court giving him all civil rights of community and state and confirming he was not under bondage. A few months later, on 19 October 1631, Thomas Lamb was made a freeman in Roxbury.³³³

Thomas Lamb owned 37 acres of land and was one of the ten founders of the Roxbury church. In the summer of 1632, the first Meetinghouse was built. In anticipation of Indian attacks, all persons were ordered to live within one-half mile from the Meetinghouse, and men (or some portion of them) were required to attend public worship fully armed.

³³² James Gordon Lamb, *The Descendants of Thomas Lambe of Roxbury, Massachusetts*, (Houston, Texas, self-published, Aug 1993), found at the NEGHS, June 2019, pg. 4.

³³³ *Massachusetts, Compiled Census and Census Substitutes Index, 1790-1890*, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020; https://www.winthropsociety.com/doc_freemen.php, 10/24/2020.

This is one of the oldest as well as one of the largest and most influential religious societies in New England, being fifth in the order of time. It was gathered in July 1632, George Alcock, Thomas Lambe, William Denison, Thomas Rawlings, Robert Cole, Samuel Wakeman, and William Chase being its principal founders. The first pastor was Rev. John Eliot, the Apostle to the Indians, and he preached there for nearly 60 years. In 1713, Col. Joshua Lamb, grandson of Thomas, was seated in the third seat from the pulpit.³³⁴

The Roxbury church/meetinghouse
jtbullock.com



Thomas Lambe's signature is preserved on the following petition:

The humble petition of some of the inhabitants of Roxbury to this honored court: Whereas it hath pleased this honored court to make a wholesome law for this country, that none should build above a half-mile from the meeting house. And we, partly out of the necessity of the situation of our town, which is narrow and enlarged but one way, and partly out of our ignorance of the law, have built somewhat further than is by this law allowed, among such neighbors as were so built before this law was made. We do petition the favor of this honored court that our action might not be offensive, but that we might have allowance to continue in our habitation which we cannot possibly alter without removal from the town, there being no place nearer the meeting house to receive us, and thus entreating your favor, we leave you to the guidance of the blessed God and respectfully, your humble petitioners.³³⁵

Facsimile of signature of Thomas Lambe:

By 1633 Roxbury was described as "a fair and handsome country town, the inhabitants of which being all very rich."³³⁶ Thomas Lamb was a yeoman, a man holding and cultivating a small landed estate; a freeholder. His occupation in New England has been called that of a slater, a person who slates roofs. More likely, he is the owner of the quarry. as he is called a merchant. On 2 July 1633, he is granted rights to take slate from "Slate Island," also called

³³⁴ <http://jtbullock.com/Tree/EdKibbe.html#EDK>, 10/24/2020; *The Town of Roxbury*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004), 282 -283, 286, 290, 309, also found on hathitrust.org, 10/24/2020.

³³⁵ *The Massachusetts Archives, Archives Collection 1620 – 1799, Vol 112*: 69, <https://www.sec.state.ma.us>, 8/17/2021.

³³⁶ <https://founders.archives.gov/documents/Adams/99-02-02-4984> citing: William Wood, *New England's Prospect*, (London, 1639), Part 1. Chapter 10, 31, 10/24/2020.

"The Island of Squantom" in Boston Harbor. His was the first rock quarry to be opened in New England. The stones were used extensively for cemetery purposes as well as for general building. "There is demised to tho Lambe, of slate in Slate Island, ten pole towards the waterside, & five pole into the land, for three years, paying the yearly rent of 2s 6d."³³⁷

Late in 1639, Elizabeth Lamb, died and was buried Roxbury 28 November 1639, possibly in the Cemetery at Washington & Eustis. A record in the *New England Historical Genealogical Register* shows the date of Elizabeth's burial. The next entry is:

A young infant of Thomas Lamb's buried 28 (9) 1639. This event was recorded by the famous pastor of Roxbury, John Eliot. Elizabeth Lambe ...after bearing another son and a daughter, she, like Rachel of old, died at the birth of her son Benjamin.³³⁸

Thomas Lamb, married (2) 16 July 1640 Dorothy Harbittle,³³⁹ a "godly maid," a sister of the church, a "Maide servant." She was admitted to the Roxbury church 1638/9. Her name was variously spelled Harbeetle and Harbottle. Probably the latter is correct, as one of her grandsons was named Harbottle Lamb. Other children were born to this marriage. After Thomas Lambe's death, Dorothy married (2) Roxbury 2 February 1651/2 Thomas Hawley.

Children of Thomas and Dorothy Lamb:³⁴⁰

- i. CALEB LAMB, b. 9 Apr 1641; m. Roxbury 30 June 1669 Mary Wise.
- ii. JOSHUA LAMB, b. 27 Nov 1642; bapt. 28 Nov 1642; d. 1690; m. by 1675 Mary Alcock, daughter of Dr. John Alcock; became an enterprising and wealthy citizen of Roxbury.³⁴¹
- iii. MARY LAMB, bapt. 29 Sept 1644, m. (1) by 1665 Thomas Swan; m. (2) 1697 James Byley.
- iv. ABIEL LAMB, b. aft. the death of his father 2 Aug 1646; bapt. 6 mo, 2nd day 1646 by Apostle John Elliot; d. Framingham, Middlesex aft. 1710; m. by 28 Feb 1674 Elizabeth (Clark) Buckminster;³⁴² A soldier in Capt. Johnson's Co in the Great Swamp Fight 29 Dec 1675. Father of Harbottle Lamb.³⁴³

³³⁷ Pope, *The Pioneers of Massachusetts: a descriptive list, drawn from records of the colonies, towns and churches and other contemporaneous documents*, 276, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/24/2020.

³³⁸ *The Bottum (Longbottom) Family Album, Part VI, "Collateral Lines,"* 279 -280, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), 10/24/2020.

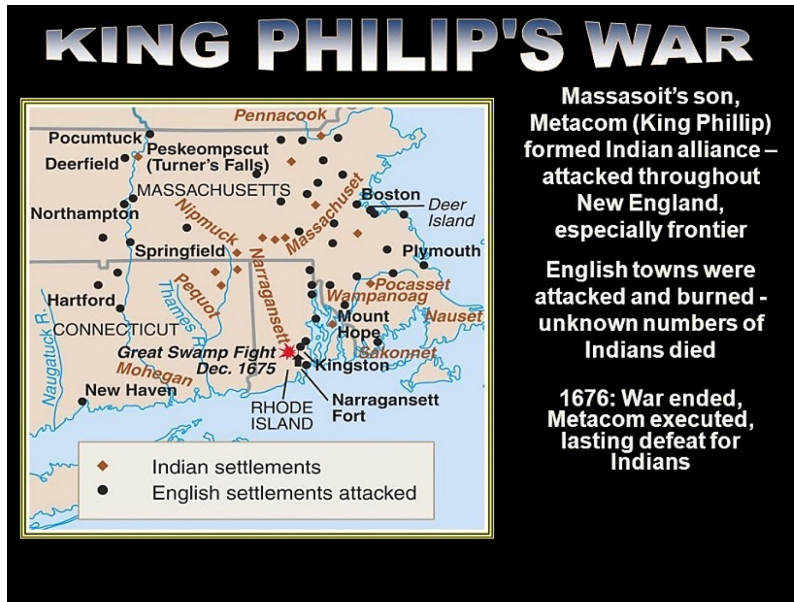
³³⁹ Essex Institute, *Vital Records of Roxbury, Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849*, (Salem, Mass., Essex Institute, 1925-1926), Vol II: 240, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/24/2020.

³⁴⁰ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III*, 3 vols., 1155, (americanancestors.org), 10/24/2020; Pope, *The Pioneers of Massachusetts....* 276, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/24/2020.

³⁴¹ *The Town of Roxbury*, 309, (ancestry.com), also found on hathitrust.org, 10/24/2020.

³⁴² <http://catnip13.tripod.com/Lamb.html>, 10/24/2020; Thomas' first son Abel was still alive in 1646; Abel and Abiel are two different names, and two different men.

³⁴³ <https://www.geni.com/people/Lt-Abiel-Lamb-Sr>, 10/24/2020.



An Addendum to King Phillips War written by Harriet Jane Lamb Stradling

When Abiel Lamb was twenty-nine years old, he took part in the terrible Indian strife known as King Phillip's War. The Wampanoag chief Metacom, known as King Phillip, had formed a confederation of three tribes, including the Narragansetts, to push back against repeated violations of long-standing alliances between the Native peoples and the Colonists. The confederation of tribes attacked town after town, burning the houses, and killing the inhabitants. They took them by surprise. Isolated cabins were plundered, women and children killed or carried away, and men shot in the fields. Thirteen towns were destroyed and about six hundred people were killed or kidnapped. It was a time of terror for the colonists, so they decided to combine forces and attack the Native peoples. A thousand soldiers, half of them from Massachusetts, were joined by one hundred and fifty Mohican warriors who made a surprise attack on the Narragansetts' stronghold. The Narragansett Fort was the strongest fort constructed by the North American Indians. It was in the middle of a swamp and consisted of several acres surrounded by strong palisades. Inside were 600 wigwams and the winter supplies of the tribe. The only entrance was over a log footbridge. The assault on this fort was known as the Great Swamp Fight and took place on a bitterly cold day of 19 December 1675. Thomas Abbe, first generation born in America, and other ancestors also took part in this fight. Additional information on King Phillip's War can be found in Volume One.

<https://archive.org/details/lambmerrillfamil00stra/page/7/mode/2up>

Harriet Jane Lambe Stradling, Lamb-Merrill family: lest our children forget, published 1960.



The Great Swamp Fight - engraving, public domain

Philip, King of Mount Hope,
by the American engraver and silversmith
Paul Revere (1772)
Yale University Art Gallery

Thomas Lamb participated in the establishment of the first free school in America, still in existence as the Latin and English High School of Roxbury. He was one of sixty residents who signed an agreement in August 1645, pledging their houses and lands to support the school.

He died in Roxbury, 28 March 1646. "Bro Lambe died of a calenture (a high fever,) by a grate colde." (Possibly pneumonia.)³⁴⁴ The old cemetery in West Roxbury, (Eliot Burying Ground), at the corner of Washington and Eustis streets was a part of his farm and that is where he is buried.³⁴⁵ It is now part of Boston.

Francis S. Drake had this to say of **Eustis Street Cemetery**: "Here the Lyon and the Lamb lie down together in fraternal harmony, peacefully, commingling their ashes with those of Pigge and Peacock, while near them repose the dust of Pepper and Onion - savory conjunction- inseparable in life; even in death they are not divided."

300 Years of Lamb quoting, Frances Samuel Drake, *The Town of Roxbury: It's Memorable Persons and Places, Its History and Antiquities, With Numerous Illustrations of Its Old Landmarks and Noted Personages*, 96.

³⁴⁴ Global, *Find a Grave*, Memorial #160342242 buried in Eliot Burying Ground, one of the first established burial grounds at Washington and Eustis streets, Roxbury; *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620 – 1635, Vol 2 G-O*, 1154, citing: *Roxbury Church Records*, 173, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 96: 207, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020.

³⁴⁵ Global *Find a Grave*, Memorial #160342242; <http://happygenealogydance.blogspot.com/2014/12/allen-line-thomas-lamb-another.html>, 10/24/2020; <https://www.wikitree.com/photo.php/3/3a/Lamb-322.jpg>, 10/24/2020.

Thomas Lamb died without a Will. An Inventory of his estate was taken "this last of the month 1646." Various probate records over the next fifty years identify five of his children. There was concern by his heirs over the estate of Thomas' land after it had passed into the hand of his second wife, Dorothy, and her second husband, Thomas Hawley. It wasn't until 1697/8 that matters were resolved.

The Inventory of his estate referred to various crops but did not list or value the land. At his death, sixteen years after he came to New England, Thomas Lambe left the property to his heirs as follows:

Homestead, dwellings and barns, 18 acres and 3 roodes, between Meeting House Hill and Stoney River; 19 acres and 3 roodes southeast of Dead Swamp; 9 acres of salt marsh upon Boston bounds east; 3 acres and 10 acres, one quarter and 3 poles in the first and third part of the last division being the 26th lott; and 37 acres more or less in the Southfield. Thomas left to the town "forever" a cart road through his premises.

The Inventory, consisting of movables, totaled 112£, 8s, 8d.³⁴⁶



Until 1714, the heels of shoes were worn very high and the 'fashionables' of both sexes had large knots or roses of ribbons, generally green, on the instep of their shoes. Boots were seldom worn, except by military men. In 1651, any person not worth 200£, wearing great boots, was subject to a fine. These boots were as large at the top as the brim of a hat, and our thrifty ancestors objected to such a waste of leather. *Buskins*, a kind of half boot, worn two centuries ago, are mentioned in the inventory of Thomas Lambe of Roxbury.

The Town of Roxbury, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004), 54 also found on Hathitrust.org, 10/24/2020.

Some online resources state that Thomas Lamb of Roxbury was possibly the son of Thomas Lamb(e), b. June 1570; d. London, Middlesex, England 1599.³⁴⁷

Other online sites indicate birth and/or baptism in Stowlangtoft, Suffolk, England, 25 miles northeast of Barnardiston, or Great Braxted, 30 miles southeast of Barnardiston. This Thomas is said to have m. Elizabeth Aylett, b. probably Stowlandgtoft, Northwest Suffolk ca. 1570; d.

³⁴⁶ *Suffolk County, MA: Probate File Papers*, Suffolk Cases 200-3999, Case #2428: 1 – 2428:4, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2017-2019), (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives. Digitized images provided by FamilySearch.org), 10/24/2020; *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register*, Vol 8: 56, "Abstracts of Early Wills," (americanancestors.org), 10/24/2020.

³⁴⁷ *Global, Find a Grave*, Memorial #75499417, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020.

1 Nov 1639. Most say she was the daughter of William Aylett and Margaret. However, the 27 July 1581 Will of William Aylett mentions his daughter Elizabeth Aylett (deceased) and her husband John Lambe and children as John, Thomas, and Edward.³⁴⁸ There is a great deal of confusion without documentation.

Thomas Lambe (ca. 1596-1646) belongs to: Haplogroup R1b - Lineage VI.³⁴⁹ As of this writing, I have not discovered any new DNA results proving or disproving the lineage above. The information on the internet is largely unsourced, or if there is a birth record for a Thomas, Richard or John Lamb, they are scattered all over Great Britain and I have no way of determining which are relevant to this family line. What I've offered instead is the "most common" names and dates I have found. I leave the ancestry of their wives for another time:

- Thomas Lambe (1570), m. Elizabeth ____ of Stowlangtoft, Suffolk, England; immigrant ancestor.
- Son of Henry Lambe (1554-1640), m. Ann Nunn (1550-) of Barnham Broom, Suffolk, England. Barnham Broom is a village and civil parish in the English county of Norfolk. The village is situated on the River Yare, 9 miles west of Norwich. It is about 40 miles north/northeast of Stowlangtoft.
- Son of Thomas Lambe (1520), m. Winifred Grisling of Trimely, Suffolk, England. Trimely is about 33 miles southeast of Stowlangtoft, close to the English coast.
- Son of Richard Lambe (1490), m. unknown of Trimely, Suffolk, England.

Bush Ancestry Continued

As we return to our Bush ancestors, there are a number of questions. Jonathan Bush Sr. was the son of:

1) John Bush, of Cape Porpoise, Maine b. Folkestone, Kent, England, 14 Nov 1595,³⁵⁰ son of Reynold Bush and Isabella Hall; d. Cape Porpoise, Maine 1670; m. Grace Saunders.³⁵¹

Or he was the son of:

³⁴⁸ *Global, Find a Grave*, Memorial #79799552, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020 citing <http://www.combs-families.org/combs/assoc/aylett.htm>; which has a transcription of the Will of William Aylett, Yeoman of Rivenhall, Essex PROB 11/65/296, UK National Archives, 10/24/2020.

³⁴⁹ <https://www.geni.com/people/Henry-Lambe/>, 10/24/2020.

³⁵⁰ *England: Births and Christenings, 1538-1975*, FHL film #1751866, p. 21172335, (americanancestors.org), 10/24/2020.

³⁵¹ *Sons of the Utah Pioneers, Biography files (A-G) 1584-1995*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2002), 10/24/2020.

2) John Bush, of Cape Porpoise Maine, b. Messing, Essex, England, 20 Jan 1593, son of Reynold Bush and Isabella Hall; d. Cape Porpoise 1670; m. Grace Saunders.³⁵² This John Bush is said to be the brother/half-brother of Reynold Bush of Cambridge. He is merged with a Jonathan Bush on wikitree.com.

His possible half-brother, Reynold Bush, b. Feering, Essex bef. 17 Aug 1600, or Messing, Essex 1587; d. Cambridge Middlesex bef. 24 Feb 1686, son of Reynold Bush of Feering and Judith___; m. (1) Elizabeth Clench; son: John Bush of Cambridge; m. (2) Susanna Lovett; two unnamed children.³⁵³

John Bush, age 22, arrived in Boston Massachusetts in 1635 aboard the *Alexander*.³⁵⁴

These under-written names are to be transported to ye Barbados imbarqued in the Alexander Capt. Burchie and Gilbert Grimes Mr. p certificate from the Minister where they late dwelt the Men took oaths of Alleg. & Supremacie die et Ao prd. Departed London, 1635, destination Barbados: Bush, Jo 22.³⁵⁵ This data would make his birth year 1613, not 1593 or 1595.

There is this as well:

- John Bush, 1613-70, son of Reynold Bush of Messing, Co Essex, England, from London in the *Alexander*, to Boston 1636; settled at Wells, Massachusetts (now Maine), ca. 1640-42; twice elected to try small causes, constable 1653; preacher 1662; was at Watertown, said to have d. at Cape Porpoise Maine; m. Grace___; she m. (2) Richard Palmer (no listing for Reynold Bush).³⁵⁶
- John Bush, m. by 24 Nov 1669, when her father signed a deed, Grace Saunders, daughter of Lieut. John Sanders of Cape Porpoise Maine and Ann Sanders, (possibly b. England ca. 1631).

Children of John Bush and Grace Sanders/Saunders:

- i. JOHN BUSH JR., b. Wells, York, Maine 1636; d. bef. 1655.
- ii. SAMUEL BUSH, b. Wells, York, Maine 1637; d. bef. 1647.

³⁵² <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Bush-302>, 10/24/2020.

³⁵³ If you want to know more about this branch of the Bush family: Louis Effingham De Forest and Anne Lawrence De Forest, *James Cox Brady and his Ancestry*, (New York, De Forest Pub. Co, 1933), p. 100 ff, *Bush Ancestry*. (archive.org), 10/24/2020.

³⁵⁴ Freeman, *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, (reprint), 38, Peter Abbey; Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 18.

³⁵⁵ <https://www.packrat-pro.com/ships/alexander.htm>, 10/24/2020; *U.S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s-1900s*, Boston Massachusetts, 1635, (ancestry.com), 10/24/2020; Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 18.

³⁵⁶ *Ibid.*, 18.

- iii. DEBORAH BUSH, b. 1638; d. Cambridge 20 Feb 1664; m. Cambridge 8 Sept 1656 John MacCoone;³⁵⁷ the births of four daughters can be found in the Vital Records of Cambridge.³⁵⁸
- iv. EDWARD BUSH, b. Wells, York, Maine 1642; m. 1 Aug 1678 Elizabeth (Eastwick) Pickman/Pitman, daughter of Edward and Hester Eastwick; father of Elizabeth (Bush) Frost.³⁵⁹
- v. JAMES BUSH, b. Wells, York, Maine 1646.
- vi. SAMUEL BUSH, b. Sudbury, Middlesex, Massachusetts 7 May 1647; d. Westfield, Hampden Co, Massachusetts abt. 7 May 1733;³⁶⁰ m. (1) Sudbury Jan 1688 Mary Goodenow; five children; m. (2) Westfield, Hampden, Massachusetts 1698 Abigail Lee;³⁶¹ two children.
- vii. JONATHAN BUSH SR., b. Enfield, Harford, Connecticut 1650; d. Enfield 15 Feb 1739; m. Springfield, Hampden, Massachusetts 22 July 1679 **Sarah Lamb**. One of the early settlers of Enfield, owning the 4th lot on the west side at the upper end of the town and afterwards lived north of Freshwater; seven children.³⁶²
- viii. REYNOLD BUSH, b. Wells, York, Maine ca. 1652; d. ca. 1686; m. Cambridge 2 Sept 1678 Susannah (Lovett) Hall.
- ix. GEORGE BUSH, b. Wells, York, Maine 1652.

The above list of children is a compilation of several user-generated sources/trees. Much seems suspect, especially given they were to have been born from Wells, Maine, to Cambridge, Massachusetts, back to Wells, to Sudbury Massachusetts, to Enfield, Connecticut, and back to Wells. Something isn't right. Also, if John Bush married Grace Saunders, who may have been born in 1631, and married by 1669, these are not her children; if they married by 1652, she might be the older children's mother.³⁶³ However, *New England Marriages to 1700* has the following: John Bush, m. Cape Porpoise, Maine, by 1660 Grace Sanders.³⁶⁴ There are no records for a first wife for John Bush.

³⁵⁷ <https://ma-vitalrecords.org/MA/Middlesex/Cambridge/aMarriagesM.shtml>, 10/25/2020.

³⁵⁸ Cambridge, Mass., Thomas Williams Baldwin, *Vital records of Cambridge, Massachusetts, to the year 1850*, Vol 1: 456, (Boston, Mass, Wright and Potter Print Co., 1914), (archive.org), 10/25/2020.

³⁵⁹ *Essex Antiquarian*, Vol 10:152-155, for details of the Edward Bush house and plat map in Salem 1700, (americanancestors.org), 10/25/2020.

³⁶⁰ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988: Westfield*, Vol 1: 91a, (americanancestors.org), 10/25/2020.

³⁶¹ *The New England Historical & Genealogical Register, 1847-2011*, Vol 123: 262, "Judge Pyncheon's Marriage Record: 1685 – 1711," (americanancestors.org), 10/25/2020.

³⁶² William Frederick Adams, William Richard Cutter (ed.), *Genealogy and Personal Memoirs Relating to the Families of the State of Massachusetts*, Vol 1, (Lewis Historical Pub. Co., 1910), 150, This text says his father was probably named Reynold of Cambridge, then Connecticut. Most genealogies list Reynold as Jonathan's grandfather. What is certain is that there is a man named John Bush in Enfield by 1680.

³⁶³ *The Maine Genealogist*, Farmington, Maine: The Maine Genealogical Society, 1977-, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2018), Vol 29: 80 – 90, 89, Barbara Brett Sanders, "John (1) Sanders of Ipswich Massachusetts; Hampton and Exeter, New Hampshire; Wells and Cape Porpoise, Maine: Part 2," 10/25/2020.

³⁶⁴ *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 1:259, (americanancestors.org), 10/25/2020.

There is a John Bush who took the oath of fidelity at Watertown, Middlesex, Massachusetts in 1652.³⁶⁵ Another source states he took the Oath of Allegiance to Massachusetts Bay on July 5, 1653.³⁶⁶ I searched americanancestors.org and found a John Bush, of Cambridge listed in five court cases in Middlesex County from 1656 to 1659, including one in which John Bush, planter of Cambridge, acknowledges a debt to Nicolas Parson.³⁶⁷

There are forty records of John Bush found in Maine: *Early Wills and Deeds, 1640-1760*.³⁶⁸ I won't list each one individually. There are several that are often referenced:

- John Bush, an early settler and planter received a grant of 400 acres on Batson's River in 1648 from George Cleaves, Rigby's agent.³⁶⁹
- John Bush had a lease of land in Cape Porpoise from Cleve 20 (7) 1647; assigned the same to Richard Moore 8 July 1650, and he to Gregory Geoffrey 19 May 1652.
- John Bush, and his "now wife Grace," sold land 17 December 1663.³⁷⁰
- John Sanders Sr. witnessed a deed from John Bush and Grace, his wife, both of Cape Porpus, to Thomas Mussell 24 November 1669.³⁷¹

A Native American named Flewelline/Flewellen testifies that his late father, Sosowen Sagamore, with the consent his countrymen sold 4 square miles of land above the township of Wells and Cape Porpoise from Cape Porpoise River to a line 4 miles West of the Saco River. This same tract is recorded in *York Deeds, Vol 1*, p. 109. He confirms the title to this land belongs to John Sanders Sr., John Bush, and Peter Turbutt. The Bush, Turbutt, Sanders family then sell this tract to Harlackenden Symonds of Wells.³⁷²

³⁶⁵ *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register, Vol 3*: 401, (americanancestors.org), 10/25/2020.

³⁶⁶ Charles Henry Pope, *The pioneers of Maine and New Hampshire, 1623 to 1660; a descriptive list, drawn from records of the colonies, towns, churches, courts and other contemporary sources*, (Boston, Mass., C.H. Pope, 1908), 30, (archive.org), 10/25/2020.

³⁶⁷ *Middlesex County, MA: Abstracts of Court Files, 1649–1675, Vol 1*:95, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2003), (Unpublished abstracts by Thomas Bellows Wyman, "Abstract of Middlesex court files from 1649," n.d.), 10/25/2020.

³⁶⁸ *Maine: Early Wills and Deeds, 1640-1760, Vol 3*:297, CD-ROM, (Boston, Massachusetts, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2006). <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2009), 10/25/2020.

³⁶⁹ W. Woodford Clayton, *History of York County Maine with Illustrations and Biographical Sketches of its Prominent Men and Pioneers*, (Salem, Massachusetts, Higginson Book Co, 1880), 383: Town of Kennebunkport, Distinguished Men: Bush, Sanders, Turbat and others, (books.google.com), 10/25/2020.

³⁷⁰ Pope, *The pioneers of Maine and New Hampshire, 1623 to 1660*, 30, (archive.org), 10/25/2020.

³⁷¹ Weymouth Historical Society, Weymouth, Mass., Channing Harris Cox, George Walter Chamberlain, and Weymouth (Mass.), *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts: Published by the Weymouth Historical Society, Howard H. Joy, President. Under Direction of the Town*, (Boston, Wright & Potter printing co., 1923), Vol 4: 611, (610 John Sanders, also on 611, Abraham Shaw.)

³⁷² *Maine: Early Wills and Deeds, 1640-1760, Vol 8*: 413-414, (americanancestors.org), 10/25/2020; Pope, *The pioneers of Maine and New Hampshire, 1623 to 1660*, 211-212, (archive.org), 10/25/2020.

Public worship was sometimes held at John Bush's house before a meeting house was built,³⁷³ which may be the reason some sources say he became a preacher. From *The History of York Co, Maine*, John Bush, one of the 'Distinguished Men of the Cape Porpoise area' removed from Wells about 1655 and settled near Stepping Stone Creek or Black Cove. He was one of the original proprietors of Lyman.³⁷⁴ His name is listed at a town meeting of Cape Porpoise on 26 August 1663, to settle conflicting claims to the marshes in the eastern part of town. It is said Cape Porpoise was given its name by Captain John Smith who saw a school of porpoises off the Cape in 1614.³⁷⁵

John Bush, died in 1670.³⁷⁶ I assume in the Cape Porpoise area, but have been unable to find records. His widow Grace (Sanders) Bush, married (2) 1670/71 Richard Palmer. She, died in Cape Porpoise after 1670, or died in Newcastle, New Hampshire after 20 May 1680.³⁷⁷ *Find a Grave* is incorrect in its date of her death of 1 Jan 1663. She was living when her father wrote his Will.

Sanders/Saunders Family Ancestry

Of English and Scottish origin, **Saunders** is a patronymic surname from the medieval personal name Saunder, from the Grecian, *Alexander*, "Defender of Men." Or, the origin is Olde English and locational from Sanderstead in Surrey. This latter place was recorded in the Anglo-Saxon Chronicles of the year 871 CE as *Sondenstede*, "the house on the sandy land."

Grace Sanders/ Saunders, b. England abt. 1631, daughter of John Saunders and Ann _____. Court records show that Grace was a young child in 1643, most likely in Cape Porpoise. Though she was the wife of John Bush of Cape Porpoise, she was probably a 2nd wife and may or may not have been his older children's mother. She survived John Bush and m. (2) Cape Porpoise by 21 Oct 1670 Richard Palmer, listed as a signatory on the sale of her step-father's land.

An online researcher wonders if she may have been the wife of John Bush's son, John Bush Jr.? This scenario might better fit the facts as they would have been about the same age. Biography and sources by Roland Henry Baker III, on geni.com.

Because she is, most likely, not a direct ancestor, I won't offer all the material I found on her father, John Saunders. There are five different men named John Sanders (or Saunders) during this period. Our interest is in Lieutenant John Sanders of Hampton, New Hampshire, Wells,

³⁷³ Pope, *The pioneers of Maine and New Hampshire, 1623 to 1660*, 30, (archive.org), 10/25/2020.

³⁷⁴ Clayton, *History of York County Maine with Illustrations and Biographical Sketches of its Prominent Men and Pioneers*, co 383, (books.google.com), 10/25/2020.

³⁷⁵ *Ibid.*, 379, (books.google.com), 10/25/2020.

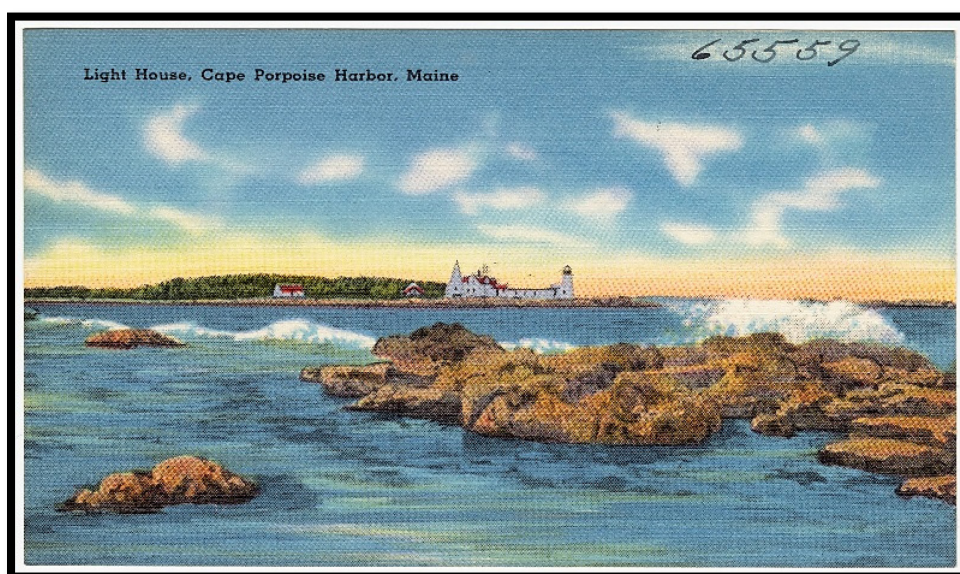
³⁷⁶ *Sons of the Utah Pioneers, Biography files (A-G) 1584-1995*, (ancestry.com) 10/24/2020.

³⁷⁷ *The Maine Genealogist*, Vol 29, May 2007: 89, Sanders, "John (1) Sanders of Ipswich Massachusetts; Hampton and Exeter, New Hampshire; Wells and Cape Porpoise, Maine: Part 2," (americanancestors.org), 10/25/2020.

Maine and Cape Porpoise, Maine, planter. His origins are unknown. He had a wife Ann ____ and had six children: Grace, Sarah, Thomas, John, and Elizabeth and an unnamed child. He died in 1670 and left his Will in Maine.

This John Sanders/Saunders arrived in the colonies in 1635 and purchased land in Ipswich. In 1639, he obtained a patent to found the colony in Hampton, New Hampshire. He was at Hampton when he was fined for offensive speeches against the court. He petitioned for relief, having a wife and six small children for whom he could hardly find bread or clothes, and was himself very sick. Hampton friends, were willing to state he was fit to be made Sergeant. He moved to Maine in 1641 and was a trustee for the Georges Patent and settled in Wells in 1643. He then moved to Cape Porpoise, York, Maine, where he died, leaving a Will.³⁷⁸ John called Ann, “my dear and loving wife” and showed his affectionate respect by naming her executrix of his estate. At the end of his life, John Sanders called himself Planter, meaning pioneer, a fitting epitaph for a trusty man.³⁷⁹

Cape Porpus/Porpoise was a small settlement somewhat tributary to Saco (Winter Harbor) or to Wells. It was re-annexed to Arundel in 1717, to Kennebunkport in 1821, and in 1915, was made two separate towns. The Cape Porpus River was never in Cape Porpus, and is now named the Mousam River.³⁸⁰



Cape Porpus,
Maine
Postcard by
Tichnor
Brothers³⁸¹

³⁷⁸ *Maine, U.S. Wills and Probate Records 1584 – 1999*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2015), Wills, book 1 1640 – 1760, 18-19 *Court Records E*, 44.

³⁷⁹ *The Maine Genealogist*, Vol 29, May 2007: 89, Sanders, “John (1) Sanders of Ipswich Massachusetts; Hampton and Exeter, New Hampshire; Wells and Cape Porpoise, Maine: Part 2,” (americanancestors.org), 89, 10/25/2020.

³⁸⁰ Charles Thornton Libby, *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*, (Portland, ME, The Southworth Press, 1928), 9. Volume 1 can be read at FamilySearch.org, 11/17/2020.

³⁸¹ Boston Public Library, *Tichnor Brothers Collection*: #65559, commons.wikimedia.org, 10/24/2020.

John Sanders/Saunders wife Ann___, was born in England; died at Cape Porpoise, York County, Maine after 21 October 1679. All of what we know about Ann comes from reading deeds and probate records, noted above under her husband's profile. It seems she may have remarried following John Sanders' death. Her maiden name and origins are unknown.

If you want to know more: *The Maine Genealogist*, Vol 29: Barbara Brett Sanders, "John (1) Sanders of Ipswich Massachusetts; Hampton and Exeter, New Hampshire; Wells and Cape Porpoise, Maine: Part 1 & Part 2," (americanancestors.org).

The Will of John Sanders Sr. of Cape Porpus, 13 June 1670 ³⁸²

In the name of god Amen the Thryteenth day of June 1670; I John Sanders Senior of Cap Porpus in the County of Yorke in New England Planter, being very sicke & weake in body but of sound & Perfect memory (prayse be given to god for the same) & knowing the uncertainty of this life on earth & being desirous to settle things in order, do make this my Last Will & Testament in manner & form following:

That is say first & principally, I commend my soule to Almighty god, my Creator hoping and believing that I shall receive full pardon & free remission of all my sins & bee saved by the praetious death & merits of my blessed Savior & Redeemer Jesus Christ, & my body to the earth from whence It was taken, to bee buried in such decent manner & Christian, as to my executrix and Executor hereafter named shall be thought meete & Convenjent And touching my worldly estate, as the Lord in mercy hath lent mee, my will & meaning is the same shall be Employed & bestowed, as here after by this my Will is express/ & first I do revoake renownce frustrate & make voyd all Wills by mee formerly made, & declare & appoint this my Last Will & Testament.

Ite: I give & bequeath all my estate to Ann Sanders my deare & loueing wife, during her life, & at her decease I bequeath the house & Land belonging & apprtaying thereunto, with all the priviledges & appurtenances there vnto belonging that now I lius in vnto my sun Thomas Sanders, & at his decease to his sun John Sanders & soe from heyre to heyre & next of kine surviueing the deceased Proprietor;

Item: I now do bequeath a Tract of Land which I Judg to bee one thousand Acers more of lesse, being or lijing about eight- or nine- Miles above Cape Porpus River ffals, unto my son John Sanders to take possession of & Injoy at my decease.

Ite: I bequeath the rest of my estate unto all my children to bee equally divided, amongst them, after their mothers decease, hereby making & appointing my dearly beloved Wife to bee my executrix & my sonn Thomas Sanders aboused my executor/ And this my Last Will & Testament may in all things bee accomplished and fulfilled according to my true Intent and meaning, I request my Loueing Neighbours, Symon booth of Winter Harbour & John Barrett of Cape Porpus to take vpon them to bee survpervizers of the same/

In witness wr of I haus here vunto sett my hand, the day & yeare aboue Written/

Witnessed by
Sheth Fletcher/
Joseph X (marke) Cooles

John (marke) Sanders Senjo'r

Note: Acknowledged 24 June 1670, before Bryan Pendleton Commisisoner; recorded 13 Mar 1670-71; Inventory appraised at 139£, 18s, od by Griffine Mountegue and Charles Potum, and returned by the widow Ann Sanders 23 August 1670.

Bush Family Ancestry Concluded

At long last, we come to the beginnings of the Bush family from whom Hannah (Bush) Alden, mother to Hannah (Alden) Abbey, our ancestor, is descended.

^{382 382} *Maine, U.S. Wills and Probate Records 1584 – 1999*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2015), Wills, book 1 1640 – 1760, 18-19 *Court Records E*, 44.

John Bush may have been the son of **Reynold Bush Sr.**, b. Messing, Essex, England bef. 9 Aug 1566; d. bef. 16 Mar 1602;³⁸³ m. _____. Several online user-based sources mix up this Reynold with a younger Reynold Bush, perhaps his son, Reynold Bush who immigrated in 1631.

Image (supposedly of Reynold Bush Sr.) from ancestry.com.



Children (names based on Will):

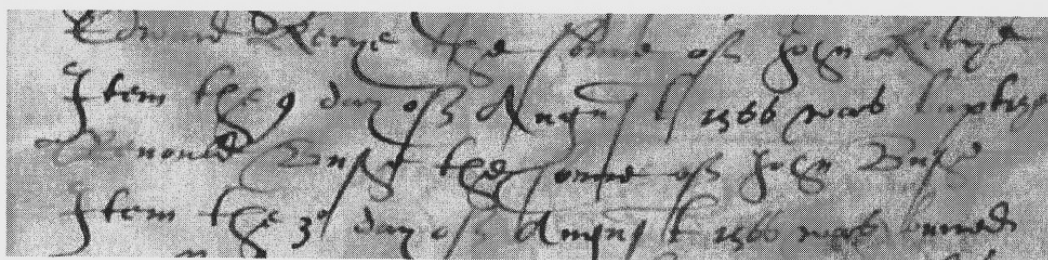
- i. **JOHN BUSH** of Cape Porpoise, Maine.
- ii. **REYNOLD BUSH JR.** of Cambridge, b. Feering, Essex, England, abt. 3 miles from Messing, bef. 9 Aug 1566 or 1567, d. Cambridge, Massachusetts bef. 24 Feb 1686; m. Elizabeth Clench; father of John Bush of Cambridge.
- iii. **ANNA BUSH** – mentioned in her father's Will.
- iv. **WILLIAM BUSH** – mentioned in his father's Will.

There is conflicting information:

- Reynold Bush Sr., m. (2) Judith ___, b. Feering, Essex ca. 1570 (unsourced) to unknown parents. This seems most likely given his Will which mentions wife Judith – though she could have been his second wife.
- Reynold Bush Sr., m. Isabella Hall OR
- Reynold Sr. was the son of John Bush II; m. bef. 1587 (1) Isabella Hall, b. Messing, Essex England 15 June 1571 (uncertain); daughter of William and Rose Hall; d. aft. 1612.

From the 1563-1649 registry of All Saint's Church in the town of Feering, County of Essex, England

"On the 9th day of August 1566 was baptized Renould Bush the son of John Bush"



John Bush II, may have been the son of John Bush I (Sr.) 1510 – 1590 and an unknown mother. FamilySearch.org, the Latter-Day Saints website, has additional names of wives and children, but no primary sources to document those names.

³⁸³ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #155267348, (ancestry.com), 10/25/2020, This contributor also mixes up Reynold Sr. with his son Reynold, who is either the brother, or half-brother of our ancestor John Bush, immigrant.

In review of ancestry.com on 6/25/22, I found this transcription of the Will of Reynold Bush Sr. along with the line drawing, and Reynold's baptism entry on the previous page.

Research in Essex

56 Armond Road
Witham
Essex
CM8 2HA

Tel: 44 [0] 1376 516315

The will of Reynold Bush

In the name of god Amen the seventeenth day of March in the four and forty year of the rayne of our sovereygne Lady Elizabeth by the grace of god Queen of England France and Ireland defender of the faith. I Reynold Bush of Ffeering in the county of Effex and Dyores (?) of London being sick in body yet in good and xpert remembrance do make and ordayne this my laft testament and will in manner and forme following. Imprimis. I give and bequeath my soule to Almighty god my creatour and maker and my body to be buried in the churchyard of Ffeering aforesaid. Item I give and bequeath my copy hold land lying in Ffeering aforesaid called Popes contayning by estimate xvj [sixteen] acres unto John Bush my sonne; and also I give and bequeath my freehold called Prestley lying in Ffeering aforesaid contayning the by estimate eyght acres unto my said sonne John Bush upon condition that he shall paye or cause to be payd unto his youngest sister Anna Bush my daughter twenty pounds of good and lawful money of England when she shall come to be of the full age of eyghteen years and for sake[?] of first payment. I give and bequeath the said free lands unto the sayd Anna my daughter and to her heys for ever yet under this my last will and minde is that my lands aforesaid both copy and free shall be let by me executors hereafter named for the tyme and terme of six years from and after the start of the Michaell[mas] [?] next confirming the date thereof and the yearly rent to be payde unto Judith my wife towards the bringing up of my sayd five children for that terme (?) allowed and [?] that the tenant nor shall occupy the sayd lands shall have nor wood of the sayd lands shall have nor from parte of [?] of them, nor yet for Fencing but only by assignement And if yt shall happen my saide sonne John Bush to dye and depart of this naturall life without heirs of his body lawfullie begotten then I will and bequeath that my sayd daughter Ann Bush shall have my aforesaid lands both copy and free to her and her heirs for ever. Item I give and bequeath my tenement called Fyps Chandler alias Butchers in Ffeering aforesaid to Anna my daughter aforenamed and to her heirs for ever yet [nonetheless ?] I will that Judith my wife her mother shall have the use and profitt thereof until my saide daughter shall be of the full age of eyghteen years towards the bringing up of my said daughter. Item I give and bequeath unto Reynold Bush my youngest sonne a [?] messuage or tenement lying in Tey Mandervill als Marks Tey called and known by the name of Blakenhams with all the yards, orchards, gardens, lands, medowes, pastures and feedings ? to the same belonging or [his?] ways happening yf yt shall happen that William Carter als Keeler do not redeem the said tenement and land now mortgaged and soule unto me at the time and in that manner as have menchioned in a [?] paper of Indentures made between the sayd William Carter als Keeler on the one pty (party) and

The Will of Reynold Bush -page 2

me Reynold Bush aforenamed on the other pty bearing date the five and twenty daye of September in the three and forty year of the Queens [?] that nowe is as in [by me?] the sayde Indenture more at havinge App[?] Byt yet shall happen that the sayd William Carter als Keeler do cause to be payd unto myne executors the sume of threescore pounds of good and lawfull mony of England at the time as is appended in the sayd Indentures and for to redeem and order (?) the sayd tenement and lands [returning?] them Then I give and bequeath the said threescore pounds unto the said Reynold Bush my sonne to be payd unto him when he shall come to be of the full age of twenty years. Item I will and give unto my sayd sonne Reynold Bush twenty pounds more of like money to be payd unto him at the sayd age of twenty years yf he hath not the tenement and lands now mortgaged unto me. But yf he shall have that meffuage or tenement and profit [?] them then I will this gift of twenty pounds to be paid and of [same offer?] and further my will and minde is that if my sayd sonne Reynold Bush shall happen to have and enjoyed the profit(?) Tenement and lands and that he doe happen to dye and depart out of the naturall life without heyres of his body lawfully begotten then I will that my daughter Anna Bush shall have the sayd tenement and lands [?] and singular the Apurtenances (?) Moreover my will and mynde is that if yt shall happen my sayd sonne Reynold Bush to departe out of this naturall lyfe before he shall come to be of the age of twenty years that then the aforesaid threescore pounds [?] unto him and the twenty pounds more [?] is likewise [?] him if he have not these aforenamed tenement and lands shallbe payed unto my aforementioned daughter Anna Bush when she shall be of the age of twenty years. Item I give unto Judith my wife my two milch kind and four sheepe and my browne mare and all my household stufes and two quarters of wheat and two quarters of barley. Item I give and bequeath unto William Bush my sonne ten pounds of lawfull monye of England to be paid unto him within two years of my decease. And moreover my will and mynde is that [?] I gave before bequeathed [?] tenement and lands unto my sonne Reynold Bush yf William Carter als Keeler do not paye threescore pounds and redeem the sayd tenement and lands [?] were now mortgaged unto [?] of therefore the sayde threescore pounds be payd back again in manner as is appended in the indentures [?] but that the sayd tenement and lands do fall to my sayd sonne Reynold Bush by virtue of this my will then I will that Judith my wife shall lett the sayd tenement and lands for the term of nyneteen years and [?] the yearly rent thereof towards the bringing up of my said sonne and [?] thing in this will to the [?] in [?] wife [?] the funding (?) Item I give unto Thomas Cofferton five pounds to be payd unto him within four years next after my decease. Item I give unto John Cafferton five pounds to be payd unto likewise within four years next after my decease. Item I give unto Elizabeth Rande that was my fervent twenty shillings to be payd within four years next after my decease.

All the rest of my bequeathed I give to my two executors towards the payments of my debts and legacies Item I give four bushels of Wheate unto the poorest parte of peoples of Ffeering [to be distributed at the discretion of my executors] my last will and testament [? ? ?]

In witness hereof I have now hereunto sett my hand
The daye and yeere first above written.



Today the town incorporated on July 5, 1653, as Cape Porpoise, York County, Maine is known as Kennebunkport and the Bush family owns the land at Walker's Point, where President George Herbert Walker Bush made his summer White House.

Photo Pinterest.com

Walker's Point Estate

Walker's Point Estate (or the Bush compound) is the summer retreat house of the Bush family which served as the Summer White House of George H.W. Bush, 41st President of the United States. It is located in Maine along the Atlantic Ocean.

The estate was purchased in the late 19th century jointly by Bush's great-grandfather David Davis Walker, and his son, St. Louis banker, George Herbert "Bert" Walker. Both built mansions on the Point in 1902. D. D. Walker's mansion has since been torn down. In 1921, Dorothy Walker and Prescott Bush were married, and Bert Walker built a "bungalow" on the Point and gave it to them as a wedding present. When Bert died in 1953, his son, George Herbert Walker Jr. ("Herbie"), purchased the property from his father's estate. It was not willed to him. Upon the death of Herbie in 1977, the property again went up for sale and was purchased by Herbie's nephew, George H.W. Bush. The estate has since remained in the Bush family.

I was in Maine on a Country Heritage Quilt Tour in 2012, and we stopped across the bay from Walker's Point, too far for a decent photo, even with my telephoto lens.

Of course, I wondered if the Bush family I was researching were also the ancestors of the Presidents' Bush. From online records of their ancestry, it seems the earliest American Bush is Timothy Bush, b. ca. 1735 to unknown parents; served in the military in Hebron Connecticut, d. Springport New York 1815, age 80 according to a family bible; m. Hebron 1759, Deborah House.³⁸⁴

However, according to Lailan Young, writer for *The New York Times*, the Presidential Bush families seem to be descended from Reynold Bush, who settled in Cambridge, Massachusetts, alleged half-brother of my ancestor John Bush. We are distantly related, goal-seeking accomplished! Here is the 6 May 1990 article from *The Times*, with a few additions:

If President(s) Bush goes back to his ancestral roots he will find himself in a rustic corner of England, where many things remain as they were when his Puritan forefather, Reynold Bush, set sail for America in 1631, settling in Cambridge, Massachusetts.

Reynold Bush was the son of a yeoman farmer in Messing, Essex, a village that nowadays has one pub, one restaurant, no shops, and 350 inhabitants. It's a place where the houses have names instead of numbers, and where streets are so few that the main one through the village is officially called 'The Street.' Essex is the county immediately east of London and Messing is set among gently undulating open fields of wheat, barley, and rapeseed. On a clear day, you can see over the fields of wheat and barley to Feering, which is 3 miles to the west of Messing (9 miles by current roadway.)

The village is approached by twisting roads almost too narrow for tour groups or Presidential cavalcades to negotiate. The visitor is as likely to see a pheasant or partridge as another vehicle on the road. Some of the Messing houses are those that Reynold Bush and his father, John would have known. With gabled roofs, exterior plasterwork patterned with floral or geometric motifs typical of this part of Essex, overhanging upper stories and timbered rooms, they have been standing since the reign of Elizabeth I, or longer.

The village church, which housed an exhibition at the end of last year devoted to (the Senior) President Bush's Messing Connection, was founded in the 12th century. Its records contain 37 references to Bushes from 1391 to 1597, though no one of that name lives in Messing now."³⁸⁵

³⁸⁴ <http://www.wargs.com/political/bush.html>, 10/25/2020.

³⁸⁵ <https://www.nytimes.com/1990/05/06/travel/bush-s-english-connection.html>, 10/25/2020.

In the early 1980's we moved to Midland, Texas and soon became members of First United Methodist church. One Sunday, I recall two rosebuds on the pulpit in honor of twin girls born to George Walker Bush and Laura (Welch) Bush. In a short time, George and Laura became members of the adult Sunday School class to which I belonged. Our children began to share classroom space on Sunday, at Children's Day Out and an occasional playdate at one another's homes. We traveled to Fort Davis, Texas for several church family retreats before the Bushes moved to Washington D.C., where George H.W. Bush was vice-president.

Later, I corresponded with George W. Bush during his term (1995 – 2000) as 46th Governor of Texas. When he was nominated as the Republican Candidate for 43rd President of the United States, my eldest son served on the finance committee for his reelection campaign and at the Republican National Convention that secured his nomination. In January 2000, as a member of the Ross Volunteers at Texas A&M University, that same son marched in George W. Bush's inaugural parade.

Another member of our Sunday School class, who I still see from time to time when I visit Midland to see family, served in his cabinet during the first term. I corresponded with the Bushs for several years. I especially treasure the letters from Laura Bush during the time when my middle son was serving in the U.S. Army in Operation Iraqi Freedom.

One of my daughters-in-law saw George W. Bush in Midland and secured an autographed copy of his book *41* for me. I'm thankful to have known George and Laura Bush, and now to know that perhaps, my sons, grandchildren and I share a tiny bit of DNA with two past Presidents!

County Essex, England
Ancestry.com



Chapter Three

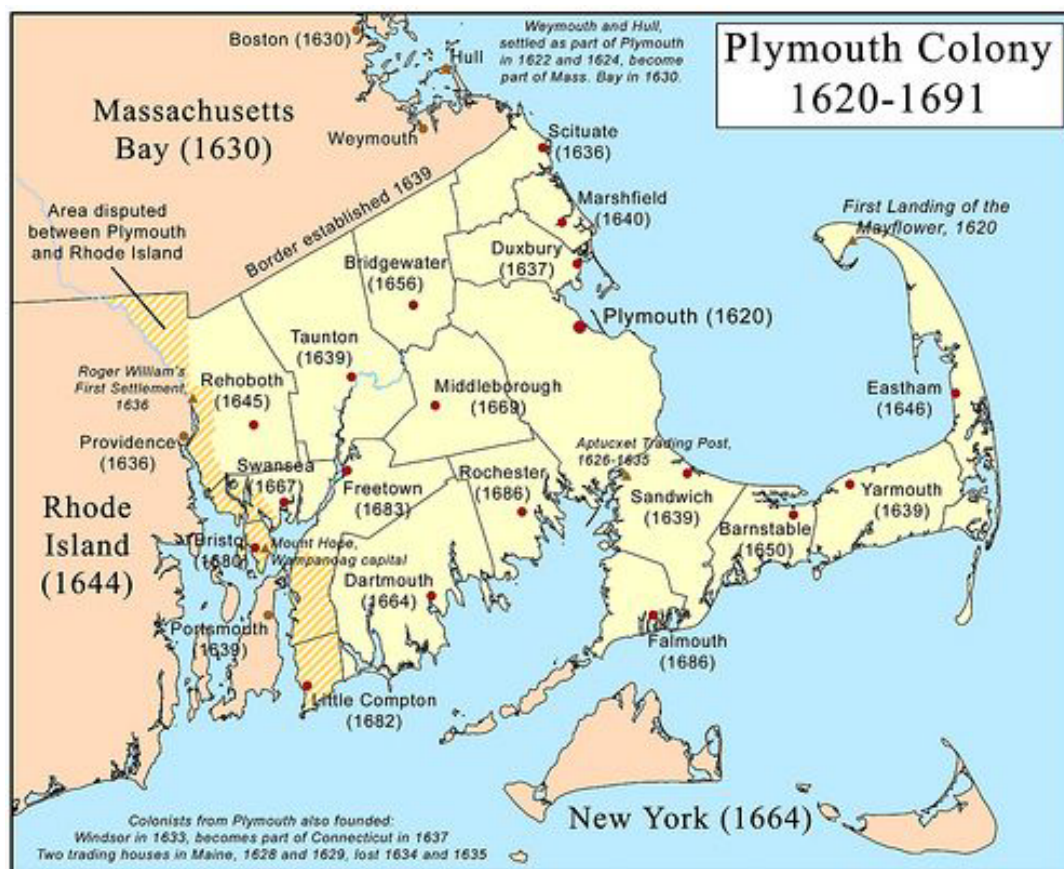
The Fifth Generation of the Alden Ancestral Line in America

Hannah (Alden) Abbey's Grandparents

Jonathan and Experience (Hayward) Alden 1721 – 1809

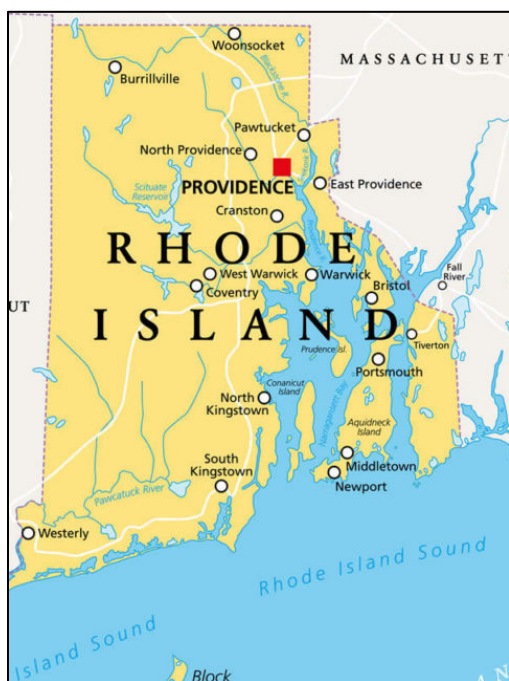
Including the Hayward Family Ancestry

*and the Allied Families of
Harvey, Andrews, Hucker
Crossman and Kingsbury
Willis, Hodgkins and Towne*



Map above from Pinterest.com

Map of Rhode Island from kentcountyoil.com



Ancestors in these generations lived in Bridgewater, Duxbury, Middleborough (Teticut), Plymouth and Taunton in the Plymouth Colony, later to become part of the state of Massachusetts.

Others moved to Rhode Island, living in Newport, North and South Kingston and Providence.

Chapter Three

Generation Five of Aldens in America

Jonathan and Experience (Hayward) Alden 1721 – 1809

Amos Alden was the son of Jonathan Alden, b. Bridgewater, Plymouth, Massachusetts 22 June 1721, eldest child of Eleazar and Martha (Shaw) Alden;³⁸⁶ d. 1800/1805; m. Bridgewater 24 Jan 1743 Experience Hayward, daughter of Nathaniel and Mary (Harvey) Hayward, b. Dec 1719; d. Greenwich, Massachusetts Dec 1809, age 90.³⁸⁷

Children, all born at Stafford, except Azubah and Huldah, who were the two children whose names were obliterated but named in the Alden Memorial (Barbour VR 2-5, 1:42, 2:11, 19):³⁸⁸

- i. **AMOS ALDEN**, b. Stafford, Tolland, Connecticut 1 May 1745; d. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 2 Mar 1826; m. Enfield 29 Nov 1768 **Hannah Bush**, b. Enfield 14 Sept 1744; six children.
- ii. **JONATHAN ALDEN JR.**, b. Stafford 6 June 1745; d. Conway, Franklin, Massachusetts 7 Jan 1772, age 24; the town or church records of Conway say “Alden died of fever Jan. 7, 1772”; m. Stafford 30 Mar 1769 Mary Merrill, b. 1 Sept 1749 to John Merrill and Sarah Fuller; one child, John Alden, b. Stafford, 3 Apr

³⁸⁶ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records*, Bridgewater, Town Records, with Births, Marriages, and Deaths, 34, (ancestry.com), 10/25/2020; *Mayflower Births and Deaths*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2013), Vol 1, Alden, 43; *North America, Family Histories 1500 – 2000, The ancestors and descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife, (1599 – 1903)*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2016), 10.

³⁸⁷ Ebenezer Alden, *Memorial of the descendants of the Hon John Alden*, (Randolph Massachusetts, SP Brown, 1867), 27, <books.google.com>, <archive.org>; *Massachusetts, Compiled Birth, Marriage, and Death Records, 1700-1850, Bridgewater Marriages*, 19, sourced from: New England Historic Genealogical Society; Boston, Massachusetts, (ancestry.com), 10/25/2020; *Massachusetts Compiled Marriages*, FHL film # 0164691, (ancestry.com), 10/25/2020; *Vital Records of Bridgewater, Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1850*, 171, (ancestry.com), 10/25/2020.

³⁸⁸ Alden, *Memorial of the descendants of the Hon John Alden*, 28, <books.google.com>, <archive.org>; Finding additional consistent information on their children was challenging and I am unsure of which data is correct and sourced. I offer what I found for those who wish to inquire further; *Mayflower Families Fifth Generation Descendants, 1700-1880*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2017), from *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations: Descendants of the Pilgrims who landed at Plymouth, Mass., December 1620*, (Plymouth, Mass., General Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1975-2015), Alden, John, Vol 16, part 3, 125-126: for children, land and probate, record information, 10/25/2020. These books were also available to me at the Albuquerque library.

1770. Jonathan's widow Mary (Merrill), m. (2) Ashfield, Franklin, Massachusetts³⁸⁹
3 Dec 1772 Moses Hayward of Conway, by Rev. Jacob Shermin.³⁹⁰
- iii. MARY ALDEN, b. Stafford 10 Apr 1749, or b. Greenwich, Hampshire, Massachusetts 10 Apr 1748; d. Greenwich 21 Oct 1778; m. Greenwich 4 Mar 1772 Moses Stone, b. 26 Nov 1748 Harvard, Worcester, Massachusetts, son of Deacon Simeon Stone; four children. One source indicates the couple settled in Ruport, New York.³⁹¹
 - iv. CALEB ALDEN, b. Stafford 9 June 1751; d. 1771/72, age 21.
 - v. AZUBAH ALDEN, b. Stafford abt. 1750-1752; may have d. abt. 1772; m. 1772 son of Jacob Ramsdale, b. abt. 1747.
 - vi. OLIVER ALDEN, b. Stafford 25 Sept 1753; d. Readsboro, Bennington, Vermont ca. 1835/6. He served in the Revolutionary War, details in his pension record S 41410; m. 1771 Azubah Randall, b. Connecticut abt. 1750/55; one son. "He called his wife Zuba, she was alive and well when he applied for his pension in 1825. He was living in Readsboro, Vermont at that time."³⁹²
 - vii. HULDAH ALDEN, b. Enfield 1754; d. Enfield 2 Oct 1817; m. Enfield 30 March 1780 (Enfield History has a date of 1783) Rufus Bush, son of Aaron Bush and Alis (French) Bush, b. Enfield 16 July 1754; between five and eight children.
 - viii. SETH ALDEN, b. Stafford, Tolland, Connecticut 27 Mar 1758; d. 1772, at age 14. (A wikitree.com entry has d. 1770 in Young, Texas!)
 - ix. HOWARD (OR HAYWARD) ALDEN, b. Stafford 17 Oct 1760; m. Suffield, Hartford Connecticut 27 Dec 1787, Rhoda Williston, b. Suffield, Hartford, Connecticut 10 Jan 1766-68, daughter of Capt. Consider Williston; d. Suffield 7 Nov 1863; twelve or thirteen children. Some online undocumented sources indicate Howard Alden, d. 27 Dec 1787 which would make him 27 and not of age to father 13 children! Other sites show Howard, d. 17 Oct 1841, age 81, again not documented but more reasonable. He was a Physician in Suffield.
 - x. EXPERIENCE ALDEN, b. Stafford 27 Feb 1766; d. Springfield, Erie, Pennsylvania Oct 1838; burial Wheeler Farm Cemetery Erie County, Pennsylvania; m. Greenwich 11 Mar 1783 Randall Wheeler, b. Greenwich, 8 Apr 1758; d. Springfield, Pennsylvania 2 June 1837; eight or nine children. It seems Experience and Randall were baptized into the Church of Latter-Day Saints in Springfield Township, Erie, Pennsylvania about 2 May 1832.³⁹³

³⁸⁹ Ashfield and Conway are today part of the Springfield, Massachusetts Metropolitan Statistical Area.

³⁹⁰ Alden, *John Alden of Ashfield, Mass., and Chautauqua County, New York: ...*, 18-19. <hathitrust.org>, 10/27/2020.

³⁹¹ *Family Memorial*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), originally Elisha Thayer, *Family Memorial: Genealogy of fourteen families of the early settlers of New England*, (Hingham, Massachusetts, J. Farmer printer, 1835), *Part I Front Matter*, "Alden," 2 – 22, <ancestry.com>, 10/27/2020.

³⁹² From the 12 Oct 1997 records of Alden Willis, 2722 Ridgeland Road, Torrance, CA 90505 (310) 326-3307). I was unable to locate this source during editing. His pension application found on Fold3 <https://www.fold3.com/image/11141596> to <https://www.fold3.com/image/11141654>, 10/27/2020.

³⁹³ <https://www.familysearch.org/tree/person/collaborate/K2QQ-ZVL>, 10/27/2020.

On 16 January 1749/50, Eleazar Alden of Bridgewater “for love, goodwill and affection” gave to his eldest son Jonathan Alden of Stafford, Connecticut, 8 acres in Stafford being the westerly end of the lot he bought from Daniel Warner. Eleazar Alden Jr. and Ezra Alden were the witnesses. (Stafford LR, 2:268) In his Will of 2 May 1769, proved 1 February 1773 Eleazar gave his son Jonathan 1/6th of his wearing apparel and books. (Plymouth Co PR 42:458)

On 10 June 1766, Jonathan Alden bought 100 acres of land in Ashfield, belonging to the right of Lot 26 from Jonathan Edson of Ashfield, Massachusetts.³⁹⁴ And the next year, on 16 September 1767, he bought Lot 83 in Conway, containing 166 acres from Thomas French, Jr. Jonathan was then of Stafford. On 24 January 1769, Jonathan Alden of Stafford, bought of William Powers of Greenwich, for about 100 pounds, a tract of land in Greenwich about 90 acres. There are also records that he sold to William Powers of Greenwich, 80 acres in Stafford with house and barn. This land was bounded on Ezra Alden’s land. Zephaniah Alden was a witness. (Stafford CT LR 4:236)

In 1770, he was of Greenwich, when he deeded to his son Amos Alden of Enfield, Connecticut, 50 acres of his lot in Conway, another 50 acres he had sold to Eleazar Alden of Bridgewater.

Jonathan Alden was a private in the American Revolution. He was probably the Jonathan Alden who served as a private in Capt. Zena Wheeler’s Company, Col. John Ashley’s Berkshire County regiment. He enlisted 21 July 1777 and was discharged 15 August 1777 with a service of 26 days. The regiment marched to Fort Edward, New York. (MSSR 1:207) He was perhaps the Jonathan Alden who served as a private in Capt. Ephraim Jennings’ Company, Col. David Wells’ regiment, enlisting 20 September 1777 and discharged 18 October 1777, with service in the northern department. (MSSR 1:112) He also served as a private in Roger Libby’s company in 1779.³⁹⁵

The remainder of his land in Conway he sold in October 1778 to James Sanderson; Jonathan was then of Greenwich. The DAR website indicates in 1782, he was a civil servant during part of the Revolution, serving as a tithingman.³⁹⁶ On 6 March 1789, Jonathan Alden of Greenwich, sold to Oliver Alden of Greenwich, 99 Acres. (Hampshire Co LR 15:576) Jonathan Alden of Greenwich is not listed in the 1790 Census for Massachusetts. In the 1800 Census, Jonathan’s household had one male, and one freeman, both over age 45. (M32-15, p. 942)

Jonathan Alden Sr., died on his farm in Greenwich, Massachusetts between 1800 and 1805. He was deceased before the 30 May 1808 Will of his brother Joshua Alden, Greenwich, Massachusetts. No probate record was found in either Franklin or Hampshire counties.

³⁹⁴ F. Wesley Alden, *John Alden of Ashfield, Mass., and Chautauqua County, New York: His Alden ancestors and his descendants*, (Printed for private circulation, (1909), 18-19, (babel.hathitrust.org), for this and following land transactions.

³⁹⁵ *DAR Lineage Book, Vol 39, 300 & Vol 84, 118*, (Washington DC, DAR, 1914), (archive.org), (babel.hathitrust.org); Ancestor #: A001033 from the DAR website, dar.org, 10/27/2020.

³⁹⁶ Ancestor #: A001033 from the DAR website, dar.org, 10/27/2020.

Records indicate he was buried First Parish Cemetery, East Bridgewater, Massachusetts.³⁹⁷ The Greenwich cemetery is now defunct.

Experience (Hayward) Alden, daughter of Nathaniel, widow of Jonathan, d. Greenwich, Hampshire, Massachusetts in 1809, some years after her husband, at 90 years of age.³⁹⁸

Hayward Family Ancestry

Recorded in the spellings of **Hayward**, Haward, and Heyward, this is an English surname. It originates from the pre 7th century words "hege" meaning hedge or fence, plus "weard", a watch or guardian. It was an occupational status surname for a person employed on an estate or settlement to check and arrange the repair of all the fences and walls, prevent unauthorized access to the royal hunting parks by poachers, and deter cattle from breaking through into the arable lands.

Experience Hayward, mother of Amos Alden, b. Bridgewater abt. 1719;³⁹⁹ d. Bridgewater 1809, age 90;⁴⁰⁰ m. Bridgewater 24 Jan 1743, Jonathan Alden Sr.⁴⁰¹ Experience was the daughter of Nathaniel Hayward III, b. Bridgewater 14 Apr 1690,⁴⁰² son of Nathaniel (Nathan) Hayward

³⁹⁷ *Abstract of Graves of Revolutionary Patriots, Volume: 1; Serial: 11999; Volume: 8: "Jonathan Alden, First Parish Cemetery, East Bridgewater, MA 56,"* (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; *Global find A Grave, Memorial #178310813* (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; *Mayflower Births and Deaths, Vol 1: 43, <online database>*, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2013), 10/27/2020.

³⁹⁸ Alden, *Memorial of the descendants of the Hon John Alden*, 27, <archive.org>, 10/27/2020; *Global, Find a Grave, Memorial #178310909*, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; *Massachusetts, Town Death Records, 1620 – 1859, <online database>*, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1999), 10/27/2020.

³⁹⁹ *Lineage Book of the Charter Members of the DAR*, 117, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; *Mayflower Families Fifth Generation Descendants, 1700-1880, <online database>*, (americanancestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2017), from *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations: Descendants of the Pilgrims who landed at Plymouth, Mass., December 1620*, (Plymouth, MA., General Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1975-2015), John Alden, Vol 16, Part 3: 125, 10/27/2020.

⁴⁰⁰ *Mayflower Births and Deaths, Vol 1, Alden: 43*, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁰¹ *Massachusetts, Compiled Birth, Marriage and Death Records 1700-1850, Bridgewater, Bridgewater Marriages*, 171, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; *Mayflower Families Fifth Generation Descendants, 1700-1880*, (americanancestors.org), John Alden, Vol 16 Part 3: 125, 10/27/2020.

⁴⁰² *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Bridgewater, Vital Record Transcripts, Bridgewater Births*, 152, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850*, (americanancestors.org), *Bridgewater V1: 152*, 10/27/2020.

Jr. and Elizabeth Crossman; d. Bridgewater, 23 Feb 1755, age 64;⁴⁰³ bur. First Cemetery, Bridgewater Section B, Grave 282.⁴⁰⁴

“Here lies Buried Mr. Nathanael Hayward
who died February 23d in ye 65th year of his age.”

Nathaniel Hayward III, m. Bridgewater 21 June 1716, Mary Harvey,⁴⁰⁵ b. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts abt. 1679, daughter of Thomas and Experience Harvey; d. 1756.

Children:

- i. NATHANIEL HAYWARD IV, b. Bridgewater, Plymouth, Massachusetts 1717; d. Bridgewater 9 Nov 1780; m. East Bridgewater 1743 Elizabeth Curtis; one daughter.
- ii. **EXPERIENCE HAYWARD**, b. Bridgewater Dec 1719; d. Greenwich Dec 1809; m. 24 Jan 1773 **Jonathan Alden**; eleven children.
- iii. SIMEON HAYWARD, b. abt. 1721; no further record.
- iv. SILENCE/SUSANNA HAYWARD, b. 2 Jan 1723; d. Plymouth 17 Nov. 1781; m. 1743 Benjamin Price; eight children.
- v. ELIZABETH (BETTY) HAYWARD, b. abt. 1727; d. Bridgewater 10 Nov 1801; bur. First Cemetery; m. 26 Sept 1751 John Bolton Jr.; three children.
- vi. MARY HAYWARD (probable), m. 1735 Jacob Tomson.⁴⁰⁶
- vii. DORCAS HAYWARD, b. 30 Jan 1727, d. 12 June 1756: buried next to her father in Bridgewater Cemetery, Section B, grave 283:
“Miss Dorcas Hayward, the daughter of Mr. Nath’l Hayward and Mary his wife, was born January 30th, 1727, died June 12th 1756.”⁴⁰⁷

⁴⁰³ *Massachusetts, Compiled Birth, Marriage and Death Records 1700-1850, Bridgewater Deaths*, 487, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Bridgewater Vol 2*: 487, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020; *Plymouth County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1686-1881*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2015), (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives), Plymouth Cases 8000-9999: Case # 9842, 3 pages, 10/27/2020.

⁴⁰⁴ Williams Latham, *Epitaphs in Old Bridgewater, Massachusetts, Illustrated with Plans and Views*, 81, (Bridgewater, Mass., Henry T Pratt, printer, 1882), (archive.org), 10/27/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #22694137, First Cemetery, Section B 282, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁰⁵ *Massachusetts, Compiled Birth, Marriage and Death Records 1700-1850, Bridgewater Marriages*, 174 (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; *NEHG Register, Vol 21, (1867)*, “Early Marriages in Bridgewater,” 227, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020, *North America Family Histories, The Harvey Book: giving the genealogies of certain branches of the America families of Harvey*, 42, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; *Vital Records, 1620-1850, Bridgewater V2*: 174, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁰⁶ Paul Dillon Hayward, *Thomas Hayward of Bridgewater* (Denver, Colorado, P.D. Hayward, 1985), available to read at familysearch.org, 10/27/2020; Nahum Mitchell, and Edward C. Mitchell, *History of the Early Settlement of Bridgewater in Plymouth County, Massachusetts, including an extensive Family Register, Hayward*: 181- 190, (Bridgewater, Mass, E. Alden, 1897), (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁰⁷ Latham, *Epitaphs in Old Bridgewater, Massachusetts...*, 81, (archive.org), 10/27/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #22694161, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

On 30 September 1731, Josiah and Isaac Hayward, Joseph Latham and wife Sarah (Hayward), and others, all of Bridgewater, sold to their brother Nathaniel Hayward III, their rights in land laid out to "our father Nathaniel Hayward" of Bridgewater deceased. The Will of their father, Nathaniel Hayward Jr. of Bridgewater, dated 17 January 1733/4 names wife Elizabeth and includes daughter Sarah (no last name).⁴⁰⁸

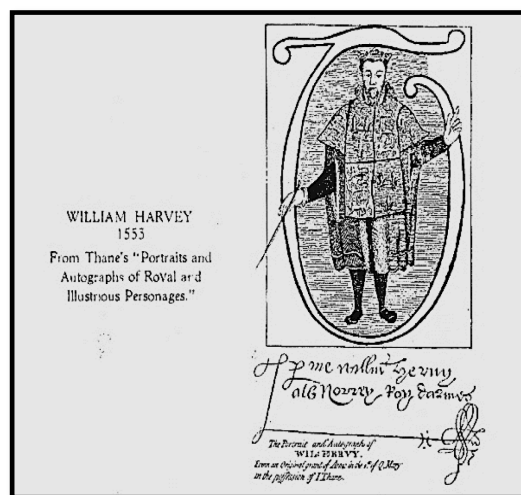
Nathaniel Hayward III, died in Bridgewater, 23 February 1755, age 64.⁴⁰⁹ Mary (Harvey) Hayward, died about a year later in 1756. *Find a Grave* indicates she is buried in First Cemetery, Bridgewater, although there is no image of her headstone.

Harvey Family Ancestry

The **Harvey** family in England traces its ancestry to the time of the Conquest. Harvey is an English and Irish family and given name derived from the Old Breton name Huiarnviu, derived from the elements hoiarn, huiarn (modern Breton houarn) meaning "iron" and viu (Breton bev) meaning "blazing." The roll of famous name bearers includes Turner Harvey, a favorite longbowman and archer of Henry VIII and his brother William Harvey a diplomat for Queen Mary (1557). His great grandson, William Harvey (1578 - 1657), discovered the circulation of the blood in 1616.

Image from Freeman, *The Abbey Memorial*: 107

Mary Harvey, wife of Nathaniel Hayward III, was mother to Experience Hayward, and grandmother of Amos Alden. Mary Harvey, b. Taunton 1679; ⁴¹⁰d. Bridgewater 1756,⁴¹¹ daughter of Thomas Harvey III and Experience Harvey. It seems reasonable that Mary Harvey would name one of her daughters Experience after her mother. If I thought the Pease genealogy was confusing with the Roberts and Johns, this one is even more so with a Thomas in every generation and all along the tree branches.



⁴⁰⁸ *Mayflower Families Fifth Generation Descendants, 1700-1880*, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020; *Plymouth County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1686-1881*, (americanancestors.org), 12/3/2020.

⁴⁰⁹ *Plymouth County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1686-1881*, Probate 9842:1 -3, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave*, Memorial #22694137, First Cemetery, Section B 282, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴¹⁰ *North America Family Histories, The Harvey Book...*, 42, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴¹¹ *U.S., Find a Grave*, Memorial #178311759, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

Thomas Harvey III, b. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts abt. 1641/43, son of immigrant Thomas Harvey II, b. 1617 and his wife Elizabeth Andrews. *The Harvey Book* indicates Thomas III, was b. Boston 18 Dec 1641 and came to Taunton with his parents 1646. Thomas married in Taunton, 1668, his 1st cousin Experience Harvey, ⁴¹² b. Boston 4 Mar 1643/44; d. Taunton 1719/1720, daughter of immigrant William Harvey, b. 1614 and his wife Joane Hucker.

Children (most born/died in Taunton, Bristol County, Massachusetts):

- i. THOMAS HARVEY IV, b. 1669; d. 1748, a proprietor of Taunton, named in the 9 July 1689 Taunton Quitclaim Deed.⁴¹³
- ii. JOHN HARVEY, b. 1671; d. 1739; m. abt. 1712 Sarah Phillips.
- iii. NATHANIEL HARVEY, b. 1673; d. unknown.
- iv. EBENEZER HARVEY, b. 1675; d. 1757.
- v. **EXPERIENCE HARVEY**, b. abt. 1677; d. bef. 1720; m. 20 Jan 1708/9 **Elisha Hayward**, b. abt. 1674; of Bridgewater.
- vi. MARY HARVEY, b. abt. 1679; d. 1756; m. 21 June 1716 Nathaniel Hayward III of Bridgewater, b. 14 Apr 1690; d. 23 Feb 1755.

Thomas Harvey III was the proprietor of the ordinary in Taunton. Here, an “ordinary” is an eating house, not merely a tavern, as was the ordinary operated by Walter Fairfield, a “rascal” of an ancestor from Volume One.

On 17 December 1673, Thomas Harvey III was a Sergeant in the military company raised to march against the Dutch in New York and New Jersey. On 20 December 1677, he is made Freeman in Norfolk County Massachusetts.⁴¹⁴ In 1678, he is described as a “husbandman” being an original owner of lot 77 in Taunton’s South Purchase. In 1682, his name appears in the list of four squadrons ordered to bring their arms to the meeting on The Lord’s Day. Note: it was necessary to carry guns for protection from Indians even on their way to church.⁴¹⁵

On 9 July 1689, Thomas Harvey III was one of the grantees named in the Bradford deed of Taunton. (Quitclaim Deed- preserved in Taunton) In 1691, he was chosen Fourth Sergeant of the First Military Company (train band) of Taunton and in 1700 he was still a member of the company.

⁴¹² *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 2:712, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴¹³ *NEHG Register*, Vol 97 (Oct 1943), 327-330 has the entire text of this deed in Richard LeBaron Bowen, “Early Rehoboth Families and Events & Major William Bradford's Quitclaim Deeds,” 311ff, (has images of original documents), (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴¹⁴ <https://www.genealogy.com/ftm/m/y/e/Ron-C-Myers>, 10/27/2020.

⁴¹⁵ Harriett Jane Stradling, *The Lamb – Merrill Family Book: Lest our Children Forget*, 3, Boston Public Library, 1960, (archive.org), 10/27/2020.

17th century colonial militia units were usually called **train bands** or, sometimes, trained bands. Typically, each town would elect three officers to lead its train band with the ranks of Captain, Lieutenant, and Ensign. As the populations of towns varied widely, larger towns usually had more than one train band.

Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 12.

He was impressed for service in King William's War and an "impress-warrant" issued 24 July, 1695 holds the following: "William Harvey, or his brother Thomas Harvey." The document is preserved in Taunton. Also, in 1695, Thomas Harvey III is among the North Purchase proprietors who signed the land grant to Thomas and James Leonard for an ironworks.

In 1709, 1717, and 1718/19 he witnessed several deeds. On 3 March 1713/14, he deeded to his son Ebenezer, his dwelling house in Taunton and the homestead of four hundred acres, adjoining the farms of his sons Thomas and Ebenezer, on the highway leading to Brown's Brook, in consideration of love, etc., and with the obligation to care for his sisters Experience and Mary, as well as his parents, while they lived. At this time, he was about 71 years of age.

His wife, Experience (Harvey) Harvey, d. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts in 1719/20. She is buried at the Plain Cemetery, Taunton.⁴¹⁶ Thomas Harvey III, d. Taunton in 1726 having survived his wife, by about six or seven years.⁴¹⁷ There is a record of a Will, but no image or transcript.⁴¹⁸

Thomas Harvey III was the son of Thomas Harvey II, b. 1617 possibly Ashhill, Somerset, England, son of Thomas Harvey I and possibly Joan Collier; d. Taunton 1651, age 34;⁴¹⁹ m. Taunton, 1642 Elizabeth Andrews, b. 1614 England, daughter of Henry Andrews Sr. d. Taunton 1717.

Children:

- i. **THOMAS HARVEY III**, b. Taunton, 1643; d. 1726; m. 1668 **Experience Harvey**.
- ii. **WILLIAM HARVEY**, b. 1645; d. aft. 1712; m. unknown; also named in the Taunton Quitclaim deed.

⁴¹⁶ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #178312245, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020;

⁴¹⁷ *North America Family Histories, The Harvey Book...*, 42, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴¹⁸ *Massachusetts, U.S., Wills and Probate Records 1635 – 1991*, 407, (ancestry.com), 12/4/2020. Without a date given, or an image, it is difficult to know if this is for this Thomas Harvey, or his father.

⁴¹⁹ <https://www.geni.com/people/Thomas-Harvey-of-the-Plymouth-Colony>, 10/27/2020.

- iii. JOHN HARVEY, b. Taunton, 1647; d. Lyme, New London, Connecticut 18 Jan 1704/5; m. Taunton, Elizabeth Wiley, b. Taunton abt. 1655; d. Lyme 9 Jan 1704/5.⁴²⁰

Thomas Harvey II came with his brother William Harvey to Dorchester, Massachusetts in 1636. Two years later he was settled at Cohannet/Taunton, as is evidenced by the following deposition recorded in *Plymouth Colony Records, Deeds, Vol I*, p. 38: 8 November 1638:

The deposition of Thomas Harvey of Cohannet yeoman aged xxj 21 years or thereabout; taken before Thomas Prince, gent., Gov., the eighth day of Nov. in the xiiij year of his Majy. Reign of England 1638:

The said Thomas Harvey deposeth and sayth, That he, this deponent, "having a bond or writing under the hand and seal of Walter Knight, Carpenter, whereby the said Walter Knight stood endebted in the sum of five pounds sterling unto Mr. Christopher Derby, which was paid for his passage over, the ** five pounds is to be payed unto Mr. Richard Derby here (Plymouth): as this deponent was reading the same (at sd Knights request) in the ship as they came over, the said Walter Knight snatched the said bond or writing out of this deponents hand and immediately tore the same in pieces."

Could this be "our" Walter Knight from Volume One? It sounds fitting.

Thomas Harvey II was not one of the "first and ancient purchasers" of Cohannet (one reason for this being that he was under 21 years of age when the purchase was made), but between 1639 and 1642 he and thirteen others were admitted as "proprietors of Taunton" upon the payment of 12 shillings each; by which amount, it was voted, the new proprietors, known as "12-shilling men," had "and shall have a right in future divisions of land."

In 1642, Thomas Harvey II, m. Elizabeth Andrews, b. England, 1614, sister of Henry Andrews of Taunton.

In 1643, by order of the General Court, a list of "all the males able to bear Arms from xvj 16 Years old to 60 years, within the several Townships," was made. Taunton's list (see *Plym. Col Rec.*, VIII.: 195) contains fifty-four names, and the only Harvey in the list is "Thom Harvey." His brother William was living in Boston at this time.

Thomas Harvey II, d. Taunton 1651, aged 34 years; and a year or two later his widow was married to (2) Francis Street of Taunton, to whom she bore a daughter named Mary, who was living in Taunton in 1724, unmarried. Francis Street died early in 1665 (William Harvey was one of the appraisers of his estate in June, '65), and on the 10th of the following December, the widow Elizabeth was married (3) Thomas Lincoln, the Taunton miller, whose grist-mill, built

⁴²⁰ I tried to research causes of death without success. There must have been a disease in the area for both to die within a few days of each other. The raid on Deerfield took place in 1704, but in Lyme, some 98 miles south.

in 1652/3, stood on the west side of Mill River, between the present Cohannet and Winthrop streets.⁴²¹

Elizabeth (Andrews) Harvey was named in her brother Henry's Will. Henry Andrews was included in the list of freemen from Cohannet dated 7 March 1636; was one of the purchasers of Taunton in 1637; was one of the seven men admitted and sworn as freemen 4 December 1638; was one of the Deputies to the General Court in 1639 when the town was first organized, and also in 1643, '44, '47 and '49. He built the first meeting house in Taunton, in payment for which (in whole or part) the town conveyed to him the "calves' pasture" in 1647.

He died at Taunton in 1652, and in his Will dated 13 March 1652 (Plymouth Col. Records), bequeathed to his sister, Elizabeth Harvey, "widow in Taunton" a cow which is now in the keeping of George Macey, which my will is shall belong to her children.⁴²²

Elizabeth (Harvey,) (Street) Lincoln's third husband, Thomas Lincoln, d. 1683, being survived by his wife. According to an affidavit made by her in 1704, and now preserved among the records in the Taunton City Hall, she was then 90 years of age. She died in Taunton, during the summer of 1717, aged 103!⁴²³

**

Thomas Harvey II was the son of Thomas Harvey of Somerset, England. The name of his wife is not known.

Children, born in Somersetshire, England:

- i. DAUGHTER HARVEY, b. abt. 1610; m. Anthony Slocum, immigrated 1636, believed to have settled at Dorchester. In 1637, Slocum was one of the forty-six "first and ancient purchasers" of Taunton, Massachusetts. He later united with the Society of Friends and disposed of his rights in Taunton and removed to Dartmouth township.
- ii. JAMES HARVEY, b. abt. 1612.
- iii. WILLIAM HARVEY, b. abt. 1614, d. Taunton 1691; came to America with his brother Thomas in 1636, settled at Dorchester, and in 1637 was also one of the forty-six "first and ancient purchasers" of Taunton.

⁴²¹ <https://www.genealogy.com/ftm/m/y/e/Ron-C-Myers/GENE30-0050.html>, 10/27/2020; *North America Family Histories, The Harvey Book...*, 35-36, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020;

⁴²² *Ibid.*, 36, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴²³ *Ibid.*, 37, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #34391507*, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

- iv. **THOMAS HARVEY II**, b. 1617, d. 1651; was under 21 years of age at the time of the Taunton purchase. After paying 12s he was admitted as a "proprietor" of Taunton.⁴²⁴

The Harvey Book begins *Part II, Genealogies* with Thomas Harvey I, but in the preceding pages, offers Part I, (b), An account of certain early representatives of the Harvey Family in England:

There we find the names of Turner Harvey, b. 1485, archer and henchman of King Henry VIII. It was said he was so strong that after his death no one was able to draw his longbow. His son William, b. 1510, who retained his office in the College of Heralds through 30 years of Tudor reigns, was alternately Protestant and Catholic. He was sent to the courts of Denmark and Germany. On 7 June 1557, Queen Mary sent him to declare war against France. She created him "Clarenceux Kings of Arms," which office he retained under Queen Elizabeth until his death. There are several images of Coats of Arms, then there follows a lengthy discussion of Harveys and their castle in the seaport town of Bridgewater, Somersetshire. Eventually the author, Oscar Jewell Harvey follows the generations to a Dr. William Harvey, (1578 - 1657), b. Folkstone, Kent, 1 Apr 1578, noted as the discoverer of the circulation of the blood. He was physician to James I and Charles I and a contemporary of Bacon, Hobbes and other persons of note. Dr. Harvey was also a contemporary of Thomas Harvey I of Ashill, Somersetshire, their fathers being second cousins.⁴²⁵

Andrews Family Ancestry

Andrews is a patronymic surname from the personal name Andrew, itself coming from the Greek personal name *Andreas*, meaning "manly."

Elizabeth Andrews, b. England abt. 1614, m. Thomas Harvey II. New DNA references seem to indicate that Henry Andrews, b. Somerset, England abt. 1582; m. Ashhill Somerset, England 22 June 1609 Elizabeth Bond, b. 1585, d. 1621 may not be her parents, nor those of her brother Henry Andrews, immigrant. Elizabeth Andrew's father emigrated to Dorchester, Massachusetts in 1636, but returned to England and d. 1638 (no sources). Elizabeth may have emigrated with her father, a Henry Andrews and/or her brother Henry Andrews Jr.⁴²⁶

⁴²⁴ *The Harvey book*, 36, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc. 2005), search Card Catalogue, 11/117/2020.

⁴²⁵ *Ibid.*

⁴²⁶ *U.S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists, 1500s- 1900s*, referencing Colket, *Founders of Early American Families*, has the year 1636, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 7, has Henry, (d. 1652), no mention of Elizabeth.

Harvey Family Ancestry Continued

Experience Harvey, first cousin, and wife of Thomas Harvey III, b. Boston, Suffolk, Massachusetts abt. 1644; d. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts 1719 or d. 1720; buried Plain Cemetery Taunton, Massachusetts;⁴²⁷ m. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts 1668 Thomas Harvey III.⁴²⁸

Note: Family trees (online and in print) say she m. (1) Jonathan Briggs and had thirteen children with him. He was b. 1636 Weymouth; d. 6 Mar 1688/9. His widow, Experience, and son, Jonathan were granted administration over his estate. The dates don't work for this assumption. Jonathan Briggs did marry an Experience ____ but not our Experience Harvey. According to an article by Mrs. John E. Barclay, FASG, in *The American Genealogist*, Volume 33, pages 83-86, despite a "diligent search" over several years, the maiden name of Experience (____) Briggs has never been found.⁴²⁹

Experience Harvey was the daughter of William Harvey of Taunton, b. 1614 Ashhill, Somersetshire, England; d. Taunton aft. 12 June 1691; m. Boston 2 Apr 1639 Joane Hucker.

Now for more fun! There were two men by the name William Harvey in early Massachusetts: both in Boston at different points in time and both named a son Thomas:

- WILLIAM HARVEY of Boston, m. 1650 Martha Copp, daughter of William Copp, cordwainer;⁴³⁰ had children William, Thomas, John, and Mary. In 1654, some 10 years after the births of our William Harvey's children, the first three of these children were baptized in Boston. William, the father, d. 15 Aug 1658. His widow Martha m. (2) Henry Tewksbury 10 Nov 1659. William Copp, father of Martha (Copp) (Harvey) Tewksbury, d. 1662; his Will was probated 31 October. He named his "daughter Tewksbury" and grandchildren William, Thomas, John, and Mary Harvey.
- **WILLIAM HARVEY** of Taunton, b. 1614 Ashill, Somerset, England;⁴³¹ d. Taunton summer 1691, buried at Neck O' Land Cemetery, Taunton.⁴³² His Will, written 12 June

⁴²⁷ *North America Family Histories, The Harvey Book...*, 37 – 39, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #178312245, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴²⁸ *New England Marriages to 1700, Vol 2*: 712, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020; *North America Family Histories, The Harvey Book...*, 41, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴²⁹ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 33:84, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴³⁰ A cordwainer is a shoemaker who makes new shoes from new leather; cobblers repair shoes. 10/27/2020, <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cordwainer>.

⁴³¹ *North America Family Histories, The Harvey Book...*, 27, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴³² *Global, Find a Grave*, Memorial #178312440, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

1691, names sons Thomas, Jonathan, and Joseph (deceased);⁴³³ m. Boston 2 Apr 1639, **Joanna Hucker**,⁴³⁴ (no intention recorded);⁴³⁵ had Abigail, Thomas, Experience, Joseph, Jonathan. *The Harvey Book* states their marriage took place in Cohannet (Taunton) and was the second marriage recorded in the new settlement.⁴³⁶

Children of William Harvey and Joanna (Hucker) Harvey:⁴³⁷

- i. ABIGAIL HARVEY, b. Boston 15 May 1640; d. Taunton 20 Aug 1691; m. Taunton 1656 Nathaniel Thayer; nine children.
- ii. THOMAS HARVEY, b. Boston 18/19 Dec 1641; d. Taunton 1728 (not recorded); m. Taunton 10 Dec 1679 Elizabeth Willis; eight children.
- iii. **EXPERIENCE HARVEY**, b. Boston 4 Mar/Apr 1644;⁴³⁸ d. Taunton 1719, buried Taunton, Plain Cemetery; m. Taunton 1668 **Thomas Harvey III**;⁴³⁹ six children.⁴⁴⁰
- iv. JOSEPH HARVEY, b. Boston 8 Dec 1645; d. Taunton 1691; m. unknown; one daughter: Sarah, m. Harvey Cobb.
- v. JONATHAN HARVEY, b. Taunton 1647, d. Taunton 1691.⁴⁴¹

It is said that William Harvey immigrated 1636,⁴⁴² with his brother Thomas Harvey II. As per a wikitree.com discussion under his "brother" Thomas Harvey II, their relationship and parentage are in question, with new and incomplete Y-DNA records.⁴⁴³

In 1637, William Harvey was one of a company of forty-six "first and ancient purchasers," so-called, who, "feeling much straitened for want of room," purchased from Massasoit, the chief sachem of the Wampanoag tribe of Indians, whose seat was at Mount Hope, the Indian title to Cohannet, lying 32 miles south of Boston, in the colony of New Plymouth.

⁴³³ *Massachusetts, Wills and Probate Records, 1635 – 1991, Probate Records 1687-1916; Index, 1687-1926*, (Bristol County, Massachusetts), Massachusetts, Probate Court (Bristol County, Massachusetts, *Probates, Vol 1-4, 1687-1723; Vol 3: 1710-1716; Vol 4: 1721*, has the text and it is fairly readable, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴³⁴ *The Mayflower Descendant, Vol 13* (1911): 85, citing *Plymouth Colony Records*, 198 in the originals, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020; *Massachusetts, Compiled Birth, Marriage, and Death Records, 1700-1850*, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴³⁵ *Massachusetts, Town Marriage Records, 1620 – 1850*, from the New England Historic Genealogical Society, <online database>, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴³⁶ *North America Family Histories, The Harvey Book...*, 28, (ancestry.com), 1/19/2021.

⁴³⁷ *NEGHR, Vol 2* (1854):189, "Records of Boston," and *Vol 8: 38, 350*, "Records of Boston," (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴³⁸ *Massachusetts Births and Christenings, 1639-1915*, FHL film #592,866, <online database>, (FamilySearch.org), <https://familysearch.org/ark:/61903/1:1:FHTB-FP2>, 10/27/2020, found 4/12/2014.

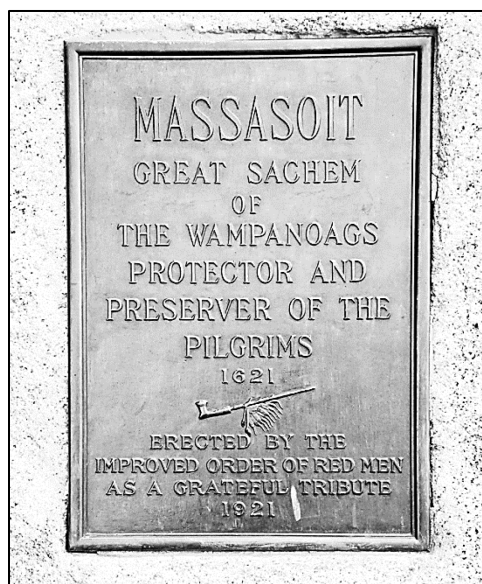
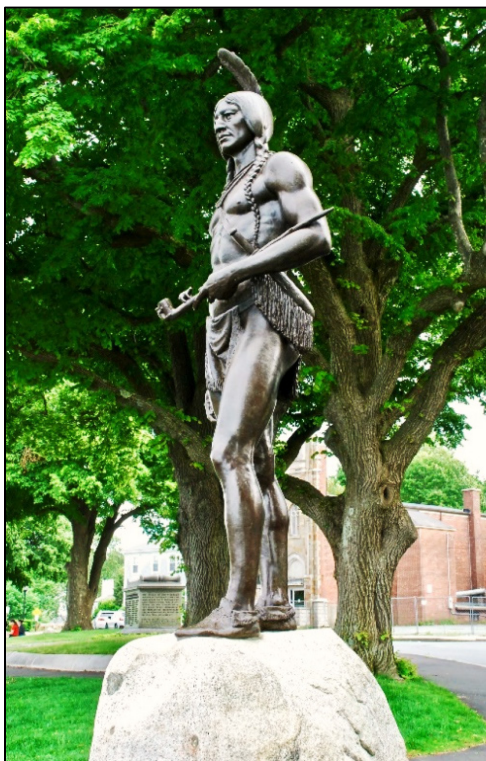
⁴³⁹ *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 350, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁴⁰ *U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #178312245*, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁴¹ Though I was unable to find an epidemic or influenza in 1691 Taunton, I did find that yellow fever spread through Pennsylvania in 1668, making its way to Boston by 1693. Most likely, they died from a particularly virulent sequence of smallpox outbreaks which took place in Boston. From 1636 to 1698, Boston endured six epidemics. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Disease_in_colonial_America, 10/27/2020.

⁴⁴² *U.S. and Canada Passengers and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s – 1900s*, referencing Colket, *Founders of Early American Families*, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

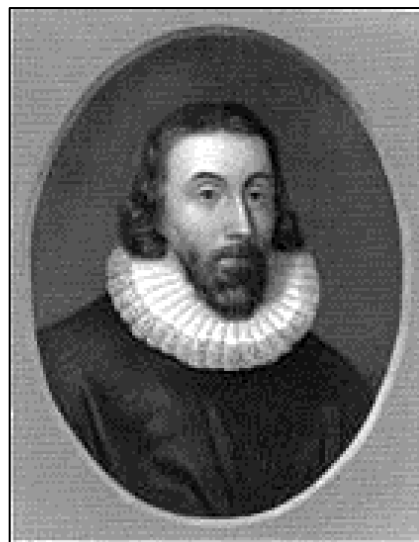
⁴⁴³ https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Harvey-243#_note-Emery, 10/27/2020.



Author's photos June 2019

Gov. Winthrop wrote in his papers:

In the summer of 1638, there came over [from England] twenty ships and at least 3000 persons, so as they were forced to look out new plantations. Looking for more room, the proprietors of Cohannet removed from Dorchester to their new plantation. As a number of these proprietors had come to America from the ancient town of Taunton, and its neighborhood, in Somersetshire, they gave to their new purchase on the 3 March 1639, the name of Taunton, "in honor and love to our dear native country, and owning it a great mercy of God to bring us to this place, and settling of us, on lands of our own bought with our money in peace, in the midst of the heathen, for a possession for ourselves and our posterity after us," as they afterward declared."⁴⁴⁴



⁴⁴⁴ At a later date, when the colony of Massachusetts was divided into counties, another Somersetshire name, Bristol, was selected for the county of which Taunton was to be, and is, the shire-town. (Another reference to a shire town.); Image of *John Winthrop* attributed to Anthony van Dyck, 1889, wikimediacommons.org, public domain, 4/25/2022.

William Harvey's name appears in the list of original proprietors. He was the owner of eight shares in the new purchase.

The first recorded marriage occurred in the new settlement 8 November 1638. In the following Spring, the second marriage took place, that of William Harvey and Joanne Hucker. It is recorded in the court records of New Plymouth. At a Court of Assistants:

"William Harvey and Joane Hucker of Cohannet
were maryed the 2 of April 1639."

At that time marriage was quite an undertaking, since both parties must travel to the town of Plymouth, if inhabitants of Plymouth Colony, or to Boston, if inhabitants of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and there have the ceremony performed by the Governor or one of the magistrates.⁴⁴⁵

Soon after their marriage, in late 1639 or early 1640, William Harvey and his wife removed to Boston, where they remained until 1646, during which time, four children were born to them. The family then returned to Taunton, where their youngest son was born.

In 1647, William Harvey is listed as a Freeman in Massachusetts.⁴⁴⁶ In 1648, a William Harvey was one of the heirs named in the "Will of Agnes Clark of Ayshill [Ashill], Somerset, widow."

At an orderly town-meeting in Taunton on 28 December 1659, it was voted that there should be "a general division of land to every inch, and to whom rights of division shall belong"; and it was agreed that the apportionment should be made upon the following plan: "2 acres to the head, (*) 2 acres to the shilling, (this is the tax per acre) and 2 acres to the home lot." Each member of the family of a proprietor, or holder of a right in the purchase, was regarded as a "head." An unmarried man was "to be looked upon as two heads."

In the list of those who participated in this distribution of Taunton lands the name of William Harvey appears, and he is charged with a "rate" of 14 shillings and credited with seven "heads"-- himself, his wife and five children. According to the apportionment plan, "2 acres to the head" gave him 14 acres, and "2 acres to the shilling," 28 acres. Adding the "2 acres to the lot" made a total of 44 acres - which was the quantity of land William Harvey received.⁴⁴⁷

⁴⁴⁵ Ministers of the gospel were not allowed to solemnize marriages in the early colonial days. The Puritans had firmly implanted in the social soil of New England the strict Protestant principle that marriage is purely a civil rite. It was not until 1692 that the Provincial statute provided that "every Justice of the Peace within the county where he resides, and every settled minister in any town, shall and are hereby respectively empowered and authorized to solemnize marriages.

⁴⁴⁶ *Massachusetts, Compiled Census and Census Substitutes Index, 1790 – 1890*, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁴⁷ Samuel Hopkins Emery, William Eddy Fuller, James Henry Dean and Taunton, Massachusetts, *Quarter Millennial Celebration of the city of Taunton, Massachusetts, Tuesday and Wednesday, June 4 and 5, 1889*, (Taunton City Government, 1889), William Harvey: 54, 244, 245, 249, 250, 259, 275, 292, 294, 298, 303, 306, 309, and possibly other references, (books.google.com), searchable, 10/27/2020.

His "home" lot was on the north side of Cohannet Street, between what is known as Taunton Green, formerly the town's commons or training-field, and Mill River (Taunton Prop. Rec., IV.: 59).⁴⁴⁸

In 1661, William Harvey was Excise Commissioner. [Plym. Records, XI.: 133] In 1664 he was a Representative to the General Court. This latter office he held again in 1677.

The law requiring towns in Plymouth Colony to elect selectmen, and giving them many judicial powers and duties, was passed in 1665, and the first "Celect Men" chosen in Taunton under that law were William Harvey and four others. The General Court approved them on 5 June 1666.⁴⁴⁹ In 1666/7, 1671, and other later years, William Harvey was a selectman. On 10 January 1669, he was one of ten men chosen by the town "to draw [up] a list of the purchasers or free inhabitants" in Taunton.

He was one of a committee of seven appointed on 2 September 1672, to manage for the "free inhabitants" the purchase of a certain tract of land from "Philip, alias Metacam, Chief Sachem," who was the son and successor of Massasoit, previously mentioned, and known in history as King Philip, the wildest and most sagacious Indian of his time. The committee immediately attended to their duty, and soon obtained from Philip, in consideration of œ143, a deed for a tract of land "lyeing three miles along ye Great River," and extending westerly four miles.

The year 1675 brought with it the horror of an Indian War; which came to be known as King Philips War. After nearly 40 years of quiet, following the vindictive struggle with the Pequots, the Colonies were terror-struck with the news that a wide-spread combination of Wampanoags, Narragansetts, and other tribes had been formed under the leadership of King Philip with the design on exterminating the white race from the land.

In March 1677, "William Harvey of Taunton" received œ (10£)" from contributions made by "Christians in Ireland" for the relief of those "impoverished by the late Indian War."⁴⁵⁰

In January 1678, William Harvey was named the first member of a committee of seven of the inhabitants of Taunton appointed to regulate the settlement of lands and attend to the confirmation of titles to purchasers and the ratification of supposed lost grants and town orders. About this period, and during some years later, William's name appears often in connection with the town's essential affairs, an indication that he continued to be a man of character and influence in the community.⁴⁵¹

⁴⁴⁸ *The Harvey Book*, 30, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁴⁹ Emery, Fuller, Dean & Taunton, Massachusetts, *Quarter Millennial Celebration ...*, 244, (books.google.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁵⁰ *The Harvey Book*, 32, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; NEHGR, Charles, Deane, *The Irish Donation in 1676*, Vol 2: 245 – 250, 248, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁵¹ <https://www.genealogy.com/ftm/m/y/e/Ron-C-Myers/GENE30-0051.html>, 10/27/2020; *The Harvey Book*, 27ff, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

A controversy arose in 1681 between Increase Robinson, referred to as owning the land formerly Capt. Pool's, and Nicholas White, owning the land originally Anthony Slocum's, concerning the dividing line between them. It was referred to William Harvey, George Macey, and Thomas Leonard, the selectmen, for a decision. They fixed the line making the brook the boundary for a large part of the way.

Macey is holding the cow bequeathed by Henry Andrews to his sister Elizabeth (Andrews) Harvey.⁴⁵²

Major William Bradford, having made some claim to all the territory comprehended within the limits of Taunton, the town paid him £20, in 1689, for his alleged rights. He gave a deed of release and confirmation to John Poole, William Harvey, Thomas Harvey Sr. (II), Thomas Harvey Jr. (III), and others, "proprietors."⁴⁵³ This is the quitclaim deed discussed earlier. The original deed is in possession of the Old Colony Historical Society, Taunton.

William Harvey, died in Taunton in the summer of 1691. As the name of his wife is not mentioned in his Will, it is supposed that her death took place sometime before. A copy of his Will is located in Bristol County, Massachusetts Probate Records, Book I, page 41.⁴⁵⁴

Hucker Ancestry

Hucker - this unusual name is medieval and relates to the traveling fairs and markets of the period. It derives from *hucke*, a middle English word meaning "to bargain" and was given to a stallholder or traveling merchant.

Joane Hucker, b. abt. 1616 Suffolk England, d. Taunton abt. Apr 1683; m. Boston 2 Apr 1639.⁴⁵⁵ Her marriage record called her "of Cohannet" (the Indian name of Taunton before it was settled). As she is not mentioned in her husband's 1691 Will, she is assumed dead by this time.

Joane was present in New England during the "Great Migration" from 1620-1640, so her marriage entry appears in Anderson's *Great Migration Directory*. No other information is given. Since Anderson's exhaustive search turned up no other information, any origins and parentage are questionable.

⁴⁵² *The Harvey Book*, 35 - 37, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020; <http://www.mdhervey.com>, 10/27/2020.

⁴⁵³ *NEHG Register*, Vol 97 (Oct 1943): 327-330 has the entire text of this deed in Richard LeBaron Bowen, "Early Rehoboth Families and Events & Major William Bradford's Quitclaim Deeds," 311ff, (has images of original documents), (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁵⁴ *Massachusetts, U.S. Wills and Probate Records 1635-1991*, (ancestry.com), 12/4/2020.

⁴⁵⁵ *The Mayflower Descendant*, 13, (1911):85, Plymouth Colony Vital Records (198 in the originals), (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

Hayward Ancestry Continued

Nathaniel Hayward III was the son of Nathaniel (Nathan) Hayward Jr., b. Bridgewater 26 Apr 1664;⁴⁵⁶ d. Bridgewater 11 July 1734; bur. Old Graveyard, East Bridgewater, Plymouth, Massachusetts, Plot: Section B, grave 277.⁴⁵⁷

Here Lies The Body Of Mr. Nathan Hayward
Who Died July Ye 11th 1734 In Ye 71st Year of His Age

Nathan Hayward Jr., m. Bridgewater 1688 Elizabeth Crossman,⁴⁵⁸ b. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts 2 May 1665; ⁴⁵⁹ d. East Bridgewater 26 Dec 1739.⁴⁶⁰

Here lies ye body of Mrs. Elizabeth Hayward,
who dec'd Dec ye 26, 1739 in ye 75th year of her age

Children (most born and died in Bridgewater, Plymouth County, Massachusetts):

- i. JOSIAH HAYWARD, b. Bridgewater 1 Mar/May 1699; d. Bridgewater 4 Feb 1764; m. (1) Bridgewater 19 July 1715 Sarah Kinsley; m. (2) 11 Oct 1738, Sarah Pryer.
- ii. **NATHANIEL HAYWARD III**, b. 14 Apr 1690; d. 23 Feb 1755; m. Bridgewater 21 June 1716 **Mary Harvey**.
- iii. ISAAC HAYWARD, b. 16 Oct 1691; d. 4 Feb 1742; m. East Bridgewater 15 May 1728 Martha (Leonard) Perkins, daughter of Solomon and Mary (___) Leonard Jr., and widow of Nathan Perkins.
- iv. HANNAH HAYWARD, b. 6 Mar 1694; d. 5 May 1729; "she did not marry."⁴⁶¹
- v. SARAH HAYWARD, b. 28 June 1696; d. 25 Apr 1781; m. 27 Nov 1717 Joseph Latham Sr.; eight children.
- vi. ELIZABETH HAYWARD, b. 9 June 1698; d. unknown; m. Samuel Reed.
- vii. TIMOTHY HAYWARD, b. 2 May 1700; d. 5 June 1750 (aged 50 years, 34 days); bur. Old Graveyard, East Bridgewater; m. Jael Peterson; four children.⁴⁶²

⁴⁵⁶ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Bridgewater, Vol 1:152*, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁵⁷ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, East Bridgewater Vol 1: 357*, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #65404891, (ancestry.com), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁵⁸ *New England Marriages to 1700, Vol 2: 732*, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁵⁹ *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records 1620-1988, Taunton, Vital Record Transcripts, Taunton Births*, 209, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020; *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register, Vol 16: 326 – 327, "Marriage, Births and Deaths at Taunton, Mass.: the children of Robert Crossman,"* (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁶⁰ *Massachusetts, Town Death Records 1620 – 1850, Bridgewater*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1999); U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #65404890, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Vol 1:357, East Bridgewater*, 10/28/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #65404890, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁶¹ U.S., *Find a Grave*, her Parents Graves: Memorial #65404891 & Memorial #65404890, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁶² U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #65404832, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

- viii. MERCY HAYWARD, b. 29 Apr 1702; d. 9 Oct 1772; m. 1727 Elisha Dunbar; two children.
- ix. MARY HAYWARD, b. 2 Nov 1705; d. 13 June 1792.; m. 1 Mar 1731 David Kingman; five children.
- x. SUSANNA HAYWARD, b. 7 Oct 1707; d. 6 Jan 1795; m. 1738 David Whitman.
- xi. BETHIA HAYWARD, b. 3 Nov 1711; d. bef. 1758; m. 17 Jan 1738 Jonathan Perkins; three children.

A second precinct was established in Bridgewater 1 June 1716. The original application was made in 1715 by petitioners calling themselves residents of the Easterly part of Bridgewater. The application was approved, after some opposition, provided the whole town paid for the 'honorable maintenance' of the town minister. The dividing line for the new 'town' of East Bridgewater ran in part between the 'dwelling house' of Edward Mitchell and the 'dwelling house' of Nathaniel Hayward.⁴⁶³

Some of the sons of the first settlers in West Bridgewater, were also among the early settlers in the East, including Elisha and Nathaniel Hayward Jr., and Isaac Alden.⁴⁶⁴ The Hayward family lived 'at Joppa' in East Bridgewater. Joppa was an area of town, later known as Elmwood, Massachusetts.

A special committee of five good and sufficient freeholders, Josiah Edson Esq., Nathaniel (Nathan) Hayward Jr., Joseph Edson, Nathaniel Brett and John Field, was appointed by Judge Isaac Winslow to determine the fair distribution of real estate. These properties were seized in the County of Plymouth after John Bolton died. Their task was completed on 5 April 1723 and included setting off the widow Sarah (Chesebrough) Bolton's Dower or Thirds of housing or lands, and also setting off an equitable portion or share of land for each of the deceased's ten children.⁴⁶⁵

Nathaniel Hayward Jr. of this generation left a Will dated 1734 and probated in Bridgewater 1734. He left lands to his children, who later sold them to their brother, his son Nathaniel III. The Will and Inventory comprise fourteen pages and are somewhat readable.⁴⁶⁶

⁴⁶³ Mitchell, *History of the Early Settlement of Bridgewater in Plymouth County ...*, 46, (archive.org), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁶⁴ *Ibid.*, 49, (archive.org), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁶⁵ <https://www.heatonbrown.com/p147.htm#c7290.3>, 10/28/2020.

⁴⁶⁶ *Massachusetts, U.S. Wills and Probate Records, 1635 – 1991, Probates, Vol 7, 1732-1738*, (ancestry.com), 12/4/202; *Mayflower Families Fifth Generation Descendants, 1700-1880*, (online database: AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2017). From *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations...*, Generation V, 89, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020; *Plymouth County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1686-1881*, Plymouth case 9841:1 – 9, (americanancestors.org), challenging to read, 10/28/2020.

Crossman Family Ancestry

Crossman is a name of ancient Anglo-Saxon origin and comes from a family once having lived in an area close to a wooden or stone cross, or a crossroads. The surname was originally derived from the word *kross*. In other cases, the surname may have denoted one who carried the cross the Christian Church's processions.

Elizabeth Crossman, daughter of Robert Crossman and Sarah Kingsbury,⁴⁶⁷ b. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts 2 May 1665;⁴⁶⁸ d. East Bridgewater 26 Dec 1739;⁴⁶⁹ m. 1686/88 Nathaniel (Nathan) Hayward Jr.⁴⁷⁰

Robert Crossman, b. abt. 1621, son of John Crossman and Isabel Moses; d. Taunton 27 Oct. 1692;⁴⁷¹ m. (1) Dedham, Suffolk County, Massachusetts 24/5 May 1652 Sarah Kingsbury,⁴⁷² b. Dedham 1 Feb 1635; d. Taunton 24 Nov 1686, daughter of Joseph Kingsbury and Millicent Ames.⁴⁷³ Robert Crossman, m. (2) Taunton 1688 Martha (Billington) Eaton.⁴⁷⁴

Children of Robert Crossman and Sarah Kingsbury:

- i. SARAH CROSSMAN, b. Dedham, 2 Mar 1652; d. Taunton 1688; m. Rehoboth, Bristol, Massachusetts 11 Nov 1675 John Woodward, a carpenter of Taunton; eight children.
- ii. JOHN CROSSMAN, b. Taunton 16 Mar 1654; d. Taunton Dec 1731, had a three-page Will recorded in Taunton; m. Taunton 7 Jan 1689/90 Joanna Thayer; nine children.
- iii. MARY CROSSMAN, b. Taunton 16 July 1655; d. Taunton 14 Dec 1711; m. Taunton 21 Aug 1673 John Gold/Gould; nine children; three children moved to Kittery, Maine.
- iv. ROBERT CROSSMAN JR., b. Taunton 3 Aug 1657; d. Taunton 1738, age 81; m. Rehoboth 21 July 1679 Hannah Brooks, daughter of Gilbert Brooks, granddaughter of Gov. Edward Winslow of Plymouth; nine children. Col. Robert Crossman built

⁴⁶⁷ *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 2:732, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁶⁸ *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records 1620-1988*, Taunton, *Vital Record Transcripts*, Taunton Births, 209, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁶⁹ *Massachusetts, Town Death Records 1620 – 1850*, Bridgewater, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1999); U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #65404890, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁷⁰ *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 2: 732, (americanancestors.org), 10/27/2020.

⁴⁷¹ *Bristol County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1686-1880*, Case #7128, 5 pages, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2017), (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives. Digitized images provided by FamilySearch.org), 10/28/2020.

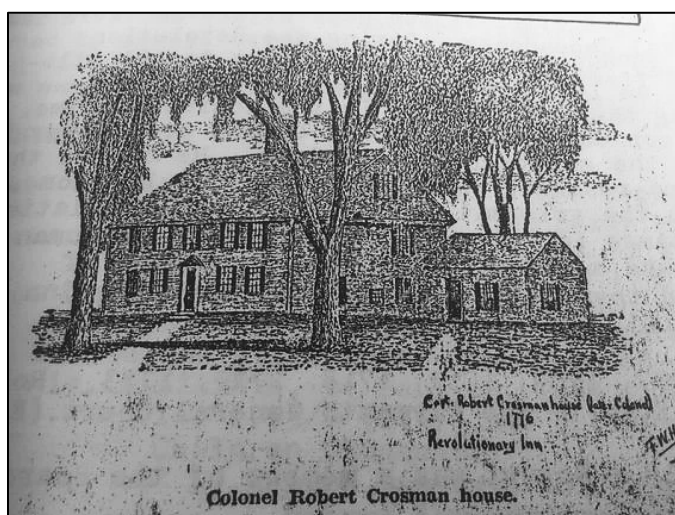
⁴⁷² *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 1:400, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850*, Dedham V 1&2: 126; *North America Family Histories*, A Pendulous edition of Kingsbury Genealogy, 17, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1026), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁷³ *Ibid.*, 17, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #166707904, some of the bio is from A Pendulous edition of Kingsbury Genealogy, and should be taken with a grain of salt, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁷⁴ *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 1: 400, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020.

his first house abt. 1700 at 78 Cohannet Street, Taunton, Massachusetts and it is still standing. It served as a home, tavern, Inn, and Revolutionary Soldiers Headquarters through the years. He was a lawyer, Clerk of the Military, eight-time deputy to Plymouth General Court, and Taunton and Rehoboth's mill owner.⁴⁷⁵

- v. JOSEPH CROSSMAN SR., b. 25/29 Apr 1659; d. bef. 29 June 1696; m. 24 Nov 1685 Sarah Alden, daughter of Joseph Alden Sr. and Mary Simmons, granddaughter of John Alden and Priscilla Mullins of the Mayflower; six children; they lived in Easton, Massachusetts.
- vi. NATHANIEL CROSSMAN, b. 7 Aug 1660; killed by Indians Wrentham, Norfolk, Massachusetts 8 Mar 1675/6.
- vii. ELEAZER CROSSMAN, b. 16 Mar 1663, d. 26 Oct 1667, age 4.
- viii. ELIZABETH CROSSMAN, b. 2 May 1665; d. East Bridgewater 26 Dec 1739, age 74; bur. East Bridgewater Cemetery; m. 1686 **Nathaniel (Nathan) Hayward Jr.** of Bridgewater; eleven children.
- ix. SAMUEL CROSSMAN, b. 25 July 1667; d. Raynham, Bristol, Massachusetts 1 May 1755, age 87/88; m. (1) 19 Dec 1689 Elizabeth Bell; m. (2) 26 Dec 1696 widow Mary (Sawyer) Gulliver; m. (3) 22 Sept 1739 Anna Case; m. (4) widow Mary (____) Jones, widow of Joseph Jones; eleven children.
- x. MERCY CROSSMAN, b. 20 Mar 1669; d. 26 Jan 1697; m. 26 Jan 1687 John Thrasher; two children; her husband was a joint administrator of her father's estate with John Crossman.
- xi. THOMAS CROSSMAN, b. 6 Oct 1671; enlisted in Capt. Gallop's company, Sir William Phipps' expedition to Nova Scotia, Canada and was killed in battle; d. Canada 1696 age 18/19.
- xii. SUSANNA CROSSMAN, b. 14 Feb 1672; d. Taunton abt. 1696; d. unmarried before her father's death.



The Home of Robert Crossman Jr.
This pen and ink sketch was by F.W. Hutt
and was printed in the August 10, 1937
edition of the Taunton Daily Gazette.

Find a Grave

⁴⁷⁵ U.S. *Find a Grave*, Memorial 173107902, has this sketch of his home, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020; <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Crossman-29> for a biography, 10/28/2020.

The town of Dedham, to the southwest of Boston, was officially established on 10 Sept 1636 with 125 subscribers. Robert Crossman and his father John, the famous miller, were among them (Robert was most likely 21 at this time), along with Robert's future father-in-law, Joseph Kingsbury. Kingsbury was the town carpenter (house-wright) and it is generally believed that Robert Crossman was apprenticed to him to learn the trade, and over the years became a skilled mechanic.⁴⁷⁶ I found a record of Robert Crossman's immigration, but not one for his father.⁴⁷⁷

On 2 January 1642/3, John Crossman, Robert's father was admitted a townsman in Dedham. Robert remained a citizen of Dedham for about 11 years, then moved to Taunton. At this time Robert Crossman was granted "2 acres of upland, laying on the playne." Also, at this time, Robert was fined for offensive speeches, 26s, and bound in 10£ to appear in the Quarterly Court.

Robert Crossman was granted 4 acres of upland at the end of the great plain next to the lot of Richard Everard on 3 October 1643. He was awarded a parcel of swamp between his land in the old mill field and the Charles River so far as his lot ranges against the river on 17 May 1644. In October 1644, he changed his 2 acres in Island Plain for 2 acres next to his land in the Old Mill Field.



In 1644, Robert Crossman is listed as a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Co of Boston. (In 1661, Captain John Pease, an ancestor from Enfield, Connecticut and discussed in Volume One, is also listed as a member.)⁴⁷⁸

On 1 January 1644/45, Robert Crossman is noted present at the first meeting in America where people voted to tax themselves for a free school. On 4 February 1645, he is granted liberty to build a house, near the meeting-house; he also drew lot #72 of one (1) acre of woodland.

At an 8 February 1647/48 selectman's meeting these items were among the things to be considered: 1) the former order about viewing fences; 2) concerning hunting wolves; 3) concerning Robert Crossman's satisfaction. What that was, regrettably is not stated. In 1648, there are several records regarding the taxes he paid.

⁴⁷⁶ *One Bassett Family in America*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004), *The Crossman Family*, Vol 1: 210 – 222, 210-217 for our purposes, 212, 10/28/2020. Unless otherwise noted, all the data on Robert Crossman and his father John Crossman is from this source. There are notations with each fact of original records. I have trusted that these are correct. Author, Buell Burdett Bassette, (pub 1988); also see *Moore and allied families: the ancestry of William Henry Moore*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), 334 – 347, 10/29/2020.

⁴⁷⁷ Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 24.

⁴⁷⁸ <http://www.americanwars.org/ma-ancient-artillery-company/roll-of-members-1600.htm>, 1/19/2021.

On 20 April 1649, Anthony Fisher Sr. and Robert Crossman gave notice of their discovery of “a mine of mettall,” claiming the privilege of the town order to their heirs and assignees, lying above or westerly of the place where the Neponset River divides. On 19 Dec 1649, Robert Crossman was among the 25 citizens who were delinquent in their dues for highway work, Joseph Kingsbury is listed as well. Also, in 1649, Robert Crossman is given leave to build a house on his land near the meeting house.

A valuation of houses is taken on 20 September 1651, Robert Crossman 2£ (a very “poor” place), Joseph Kingsbury 13£. In 1655 Kingsbury’s house is valued at 16£. On 30 December 1651, a bill lists the names of about seventy townsmen to be called to the General meeting, Robert Crossman’s name appears in brackets with a star, probably indicating he has already moved to Taunton.

Early the next year, 6 January 1652 in Dedham, Crossman had the liberty to erect a watermill upon the Charles River but he declined,⁴⁷⁹ most probably because he was moving to Taunton where his father was living. The Dedham tax list of 29 August 1652/3 does not hold the name of Robert Crossman.

On 18 March 1652/3 at the selectman’s meeting in Dedham, a bill is presented to pay Robert Crossman 20s for serving as Constable. This is the last mention of him in Dedham records, except that twenty years later, the town gave him the contract for building the mill at Wollomonuppoag. Moving beyond simply a “skilled mechanic” it seems he acquired the managerial ability to handle such a large contract.

The wedding day of Robert Crossman, who is about 31 years of age, takes place on 25 May 1652 in Dedham. His bride is Sarah Kingsbury, b. in 1635. She is 17.



Robert Crossman was known as “the Drum Maker of New England.”⁴⁸⁰ He moved from Dedham to Taunton, some 30 miles south, in 1654 where he was largely employed in making and repairing arms. He assisted in building the ancient ironworks of Taunton.

Colonial Field Drum

⁴⁷⁹ *Little Compton Families*, Vol 1, 221, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2006), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁸⁰ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 51: 174, 180-181, article titled, “Nathaniel Woodward of Boston,” (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020; <https://pabbott.wixsite.com/abbott-feld-family/single-post/2017/12/20/A-Family-of-Craftsmen>, for drum image, 10/28/2020.

A small memorial marks the site of the
Iron Works of Taunton
Image from commons.wikimedia.org



He fitted out with guns and drums, the soldiers in Capt. Samuel Gallop's Co, for the Canada expedition under Sir William Phipps in 1690. His son Thomas was enlisted in this company and later died in Canada. Robert Crossman was as prominent in Taunton as he had been in Dedham. Sadly, in 1848, Taunton records burned in a fire. In Taunton's history, Robert Crossman is among the thirty-five settlers, who following the original forty-six purchasers, and one who "acted a conspicuous part in those eventful years," paid their 12s and by virtue thereof, have and shall have right in all future divisions.

On 15 May 1655, it is agreed and granted that Robert Crossman shall have that parcel of land lying between the mill lot that is now Thomas Lincoln Sr.'s and the house lot of William Harvey as his home lott. It may have belonged to "Abimeleck," and one family historian wonders who that might have been. On a 1657 list of inhabitants of Taunton, containing the names of those who had taken the oath of fidelity, the forty-eighth name is Robert Crossman. And in 1659, Taunton History records that during this year's division of land, Robert Crossman has seven heads in his household and so receives 33 acres.

In the 9 January 1660/61 Will of Margaret Kingsbury of Dedham, wife of John Kingsbury:

"I give unto Sarah Crossman, the wife of Robert Crossman of Taunton, 5£."⁴⁸¹

On 6 June 1668, the deed to the North Purchase of Taunton, begun 2 June 1662, is signed. Fifty-two proprietors are listed including Robert Crossman. The cost was 100£ for the ten men to divide.

At a Dedham town meeting on 28 June 1672, regarding building a mill at Wollomonuppoag, John Crossman is asked to oversee the project. He states he will select teams, come "in a convenient time, hoping to finish before winter." A deed to an additional 4-mile tract bought from King Phillip on 26 November 1672 made up the South Taunton purchase and Robert

⁴⁸¹ Fredrick John Kingsbury and Mary Kingsbury Talcott (ed.), *The genealogy of the descendants of Henry Kingsbury of Ipswich and Haverhill, Mass.*, 82, (archive.org), 10/28/2020.

Crossman's name is listed among the eighty-seven purchasers. The cost was 273£ in all, divided among all the proprietors.⁴⁸²

In 1675, King Phillips War began. The names of the heads of ninety-six households of Taunton are listed, including Robert Crossman. The Indians made their first attack on Taunton on 24 June 1675. On 4 November 1676, the General Court grants privilege to five or six Indians to dwell within the court's jurisdiction, except one *Crossman*, who is accused of having "a special hand" in the murder of Mr. Willet.⁴⁸³ I have been unable to determine why this Native American bore the name of *Crossman*.

In 1675, Robert Crossman Sr., of Taunton was fined 40s for abusing the constable, throwing a stick at him, and drawing a knife and threatening to stab him.⁴⁸⁴ One has to wonder what the reason might have been. Between the years of 1678 -1687, there are several lists of town proprietors, deeds, and depositions involving Robert Crossman. He is listed in the 14 May 1678 list of the North Purchase and on 25 May 1680, he is on a list of original purchasers or proprietors of Taunton, "in his own right."⁴⁸⁵

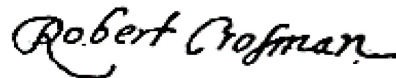
On 3 June 1679, the court appoints Joseph Bassett and Joseph Alden "surveors of the highwaies" for Bridgewater ..., Robert Crossman for Taunton. This is the same day on which Josiah Winslow, Esq. (1629-1680), commander in chief of the allied forces in King Phillips War, was re-elected governor – the first Massachusetts Governor to be born on American soil.⁴⁸⁶

About 1686, Sarah (Kingsbury) Crossman dies.⁴⁸⁷ She is buried in Plain Cemetery, Taunton.

On 31 May 1687, Robert Crossman writes to Lieut. George Macey about military affairs. The letter bears his signature.⁴⁸⁸

18. ROBERT CROSSMAN.

From a letter to Lieut. George Macey about military affairs, May 31, 1687.



⁴⁸² Samuel Hopkins Emery, *History of Taunton, Massachusetts: From Its Settlement to the Present Time*, (Syracuse, N. Y., D. Mason & Co., 1893), 120-121, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁸³ New Plymouth Colony, *Records of the colony of New Plymouth in New England*, (Boston, Press of William White, 1855-1861), 242, (books.google.com), 10/28/2020. I tried to research if native peoples assumed the surnames of families for whom they were servants or slaves, without a definitive answer; it seems reasonable.

⁴⁸⁴ Eugene Aubrey Stratton, *Plymouth colony, Its History & People 1620-1691*, (Salt Lake City, UT., Ancestry Pub, 1986), 216, (books.google.com), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁸⁵ Emery, *History of Taunton, Massachusetts...*, 133-134, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁸⁶ *One Bassett Family in America*, 12, (ancestry.com), 1/19/2021.

⁴⁸⁷ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial # 166707904 – images of kings and royalty! (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁸⁸ Emery, *History of Taunton, Massachusetts...*, 757, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/28/2020.

In a marriage agreement on 7 December 1687, Robert Crossman Sr., pledges to leave to his “new” bride, Martha (Billington) Eaton: land, moveable goods, and chattel to provide for her during her lifetime. The marriage followed that same day. He was 67 and died only a few years later.

An accounting on 1 December 1690 of work done for the soldiers who went to Canada:

Mending of several guns, and the provision of drums, hats, etc. for various soldiers, and the repairing of many drums shows that Robert Crossman Jr. was active, as his father’s assistant, in the drum trade.⁴⁸⁹

In Oct 1692, Robert Crossman Sr. died, a few years after his second marriage, giving over a considerable portion of his estate to his new widow, namely, all he bought of Capt. Foster of Dorchester, with all ye buildings, half my right in a tract of land in Taunton and all my implements in the house for her improvement during her natural life, etc.

His widow was so old and infirm that the Judge of Probate exempted her from attending probate court. (p 34& 73 Do) His estate was administered 26 November 1692.⁴⁹⁰ Martha (Billington) (Eaton) Crossman, died in 1694/5.

On 25 July 1696, Robert Crossman Sr.’s estate was divided among his children:⁴⁹¹ John, Robert Jr., Sarah Woodward, Mary Gould, Elizabeth Hayward, Samuel, and Mercy Thresher, and the children of his son Joseph.

Inventory of the estate of Robert Crossman Sr.

Goods and chattels including considerable iron and lumber also drums, drum heads and drum rims totaling 35£, 19s, 1d.

Items the widow Eaton brought with her, including one cow and one steer.

Extra items discovered “later” 23 January 1692/3. Land, appraised 24 Nov 1692, on both sides of the river – total: 84£, 15s.

His substantial estate totaled: 127£, 5s, 1d.⁴⁹²

⁴⁸⁹ *One Bassett family in America*, 216, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁹⁰ *Bristol County (Mass.) Probate Records 1690-1881*, Film #246 – 250: Inventory, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020; *Massachusetts, U.S. Wills and Probate Papers, 1635 – 1691*, (ancestry.com), 12/4/2020.

⁴⁹¹ *Emery, History of Taunton, Massachusetts...*, 86 - 87, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁹² *One Bassett family in America*, 216, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

Crossman Antiques



1725-1730 Painted Pine Box with Drawer by Robert Crossman

Robert Crossman was a drummer from Taunton, Massachusetts. About a dozen chests and boxes attributed to him survive, all with similar decorative painting, and a number with painted dates ranging from 1729 to 1742. This is thought to be a particularly early example of his work. It was a prized belonging of renowned folk art collectors Bertram and Nina Fletcher Little and ornaments the guest bedroom at their summer home *Cogswell's Grant*. In the Collection of Historic New England, gifted by Bertram K. and Nina Fletcher Little, 1991.

Among examples of "pilgrim furniture," the painted chests made and decorated by the Taunton, Massachusetts Drummer Robert

Crossman are among the most distinctive and original treasures of the early colonial period. Although not as expensive or as serviceable as the chests of drawers and high chests then in vogue among affluent urbanites, Crossman's Taunton chests are almost unrivalled in innovation and exuberance of design.

Given the dates, this chest maker must be a grandson or other descendant of our ancestor Robert Crossman. At a recent Christies Americana sale, a paint decorated chest initials R. C. for Robert Crossman, inscribed "Tautn Ton: and dated 1729 went to dealer George W. Samaha for \$2,928,000!

Taunton is also known as the Silver City, as it was a historic center of the silver industry beginning in the 19th century when companies such as Reed & Barton, F. B. Rogers, Poole Silver, and others (including Babbitt, Crossman and Co.) produced fine-quality silver goods in the city.

The above information and photos came from *Find a Grave Memorial* 166703615 for Robert Crossman Sr. and is attributed to June Faulkner Crossman – Battisti. I wrote to her on 4/26/2022 with no reply.



TEAPOT, 1827

BABBITT, CROSSMAN & CO.

From the Collection of the Old Colony History Museum, Taunton, MA

Taunton, Massachusetts



Taunton Green

Image by Kenneth C. Zirkel, commons.wikimedia.org



The Taunton flag used in the American Revolution in 1774.

Kingsbury Family Ancestry

The ancestry of Sarah Kingsbury, wife of Robert Crossman

Kingsbury is a habitation name from any of several places, named in Old English as *cyninges burh*, "the king's stronghold, castle, manor or fort."

In 1901, Addison Kingsbury wrote *A Pendulous Edition of Kingsbury Genealogy* (ancestry.com). Kingsbury, he states, is a family name earlier than the Norman rule of AD 800. He writes of a Kingsbury parish, England, 8 miles northwest from London and also of a Kingsbury parish, in Somerset County, in the East of England. Perhaps these two have given rise to claims for baptisms in London and Somerset County. In another Kingsbury genealogy, written in 1905

by Frederick John Kingsbury,⁴⁹³ Kingsbury Parish in Warwickshire County belonged to the famous Countess Lady Godiva. It seems other family historians place 'our' Kingsburys in Suffolk County. More on that to follow.

Several pages at the front of the first volume mentioned above, are concerned with the Kingsbury coat of arms. Five separate ones are pictured. The author outlines the values and characteristics of each aspect. He then moves to discuss "Traits of Character" including:

A remarkable attachment to agricultural pursuits; from the Kingsbury's first settlement in America, they lived in the common temperate style of New England farmers, yet with patriotic fervor and love of military tactics. Nobel-hearted, industrious, ingenious, intelligent, of the strictest integrity, disdaining the low art of dissimulation, shunning the ways of vice and walking in the paths of virtue and piety – a reticent nature having a personal holy of holies into which few are admitted – reverent, cherishing love of God, family, and county, with the courage of their convictions, the word Faithful defines the most marked characteristic of a Kingsbury. You find occasionally one who like the son in the parable, says, "I will not - but afterward repented and went." This is a clean record of a growing flock with "black sheep" few and far between.⁴⁹⁴

It is said that "four Kingsbury brothers came together from the southwest of England," Joseph, Eleazer, Ebenezer, and John, but there are no details regarding Eleazer or Ebenezer.

The author says about the early days in Colonial America:

Gov. (John) Winthrop was not satisfied with Salem. The Winthrop fleet then moved down the coast eventually settling in Shawmut (now Boston). In about 1635, they sent an exploring party up the Charles River and Kingsburys were part of this party. They established a settlement at Watertown. The community flourished and they quickly organized in what was referred to as a "Contentment," recording all important events. The Kingsbury brothers were apparently of hardy pioneer stock and considered Watertown too crowded. A small band of like-minded individuals again used the Charles River which turned south just beyond Watertown and settled in Dedham.⁴⁹⁵

Winthrop's Journal also indicates Henry and Joseph settled in Dedham; John (no children) in Newbury, proprietor of Watertown 1636-7, removed to Dedham; Henry the younger (a nephew) in Haverhill. Joseph applied for admittance to the church first formed at Dedham and was rejected for "want of grace, or too much addicted to the world."⁴⁹⁶

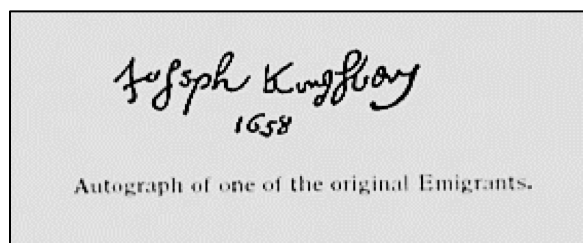
⁴⁹³ Kingsbury, *The genealogy of the descendants of Henry Kingsbury of Ipswich and Haverhill, Mass.*, (16, map on 17, (archive.org), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁹⁴ *A Pendulous edition of Kingsbury Genealogy*, 9, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁴⁹⁵ <http://www.ancestryarchives.com/2014/05/the-clark-kingsbury-home-medfield-ma.html>, 10/28/2020.

⁴⁹⁶ *One Bassett family in America*, 458-459, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

Joseph Kingsbury Sr., b. Boxford, Suffolk, England 1605; d. Dedham, Massachusetts 1676; m. Boxford, Suffolk, 1628 Millicent Ames,⁴⁹⁷ b. possibly Fordington, Dorset, England 1611; they immigrated between 1628 – 1630;⁴⁹⁸ resided Dedham Massachusetts;⁴⁹⁹ where Joseph was one of the original proprietors of Dedham, 1638.



Children (all born in Dedham, Norfolk, Massachusetts):⁵⁰⁰

- i. **SARAH KINGSBURY**, b. 1 Feb 1635; d. Taunton 24 Nov 1686; m. Dedham 24/25 May 1652, **Robert Crossman Sr.**
- ii. **MARY KINGSBURY**, b. 1 Sept 1637; d. Rehoboth, 18 Sept 1700; m. abt. 1657 Thomas Cooper III, eight children.
- iii. **ELIZABETH KINGSBURY**, b. 14 Sept 1638; d. Roxbury Suffolk, Massachusetts 25 June 1661; m. bef. 1660 Nathaniel Brewer, b. 1 May 1635, son of Daniel and Joanna Brewer; one daughter; bur. Roxbury 25 June 1661. Nathaniel, son-in-law of Joseph Kingsbury, and Joseph's granddaughter Elizabeth Brewer were named in his 1675 Will.⁵⁰¹
- iv. **JOSEPH KINGSBURY JR.**, b. 17 Feb 1640; d. Wrentham, Norfolk, Massachusetts 16 Dec 1688; m. (1) Mary ___, d. 31 July 1680; m (2) Mary Donier; d. Wrentham 16 Dec 1688.
- v. **JOHN KINGSBURY**, b. 15 Aug 1643; d. Dedham 30 May 1669; m. 29 Nov 1666 Elizabeth Fuller; one daughter; Elizabeth survived her husband, m. (2) 19 Sept 1672 Michael Metcalf.
- vi. **ELIEZER (ELEAZER) KINGSBURY**, b. 17 May 1645; d. Dedham 2 Feb 1723; m. 30 Oct 1676 Esther Judson; five children: four boys, one girl. Records of the Suffolk County Courts, session 24 Apr 1677, found Eleazer Kingsbury and Judith his wife, formerly Judson, guilty by their own confession, of committing Fornication before Marriage. In lieu of whipping with fifteen stripes apiece, they paid 40 shillings in fines and the court costs. His Will was made 2 Dec 1720, and proved 1 Mar 1722. The discrepancy in the records between his year of death and year in which his Will is proven, is no doubt due to the 1752 calendar change. His Will reads:

⁴⁹⁷ *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 2:899, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020,

⁴⁹⁸ Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 43, only Joseph is listed.

⁴⁹⁹ *NEHGS Membership Applications, 1845-1900*, Vol 1897, 17: 6, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2020), 10/28/2020.

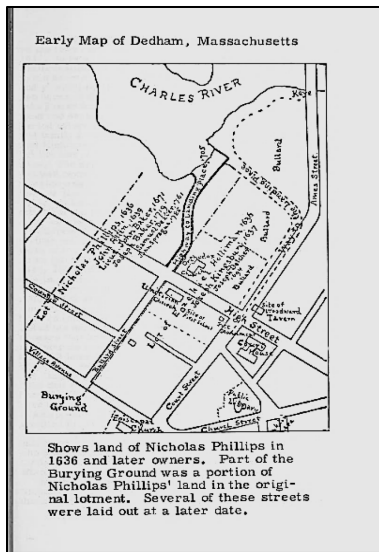
⁵⁰⁰ *A Pendulous edition of Kingsbury Genealogy*, 13, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁵⁰¹ *Massachusetts, Wills and Probate Records, 1635 – 1991*, Massachusetts Probate Court (Suffolk County), *Suffolk County (Massachusetts) Probate Records, 1636-1899; Probate Records, Vol 5-7, 1666-1674: 198 – 200* for Joseph Kingsbury Senr., (ancestry.com) 10/28/2020.

"Whereas I have settled my four sons by giving each of them deeds of their said lands but more especially to my youngest son Noah, I have given my homestead. I now give him my husbandry tools, etc., and my dear and well-beloved wife in her Last Will did give my youngest son, Noah, the most of her lands and meadows."

- vii. NATHANIEL KINGSBURY, bapt. 2 Feb 1650; d. Dedham, Norfolk, Massachusetts 14 Oct 1694; m. 14 Oct 1673 Mary Bacon; five sons, one daughter.

The Dedham Town Records for 1 November 1637, indicate that Joseph Kingsbury deeded part of his land to the town for the purpose of building a town meeting hall. He was to "contrive the fabric of a meeting house to be in length 36 foote & in bredth 20 foote, and between the upper and nether sell in ye studs 12 foote."



In 1638, Joseph Kingsbury, with Nicholas Phillips, set apart a portion of his home lot, "for the use of a public burial place for the town forever."⁵⁰² He may also have deeded one (1) acre of his land abutting on High Street to the town of Dedham for a church site. The town records go on to note that Joseph was in turn given another acre of land to replace what he had given for the church. However, this land was rocky swamp land, and the land he had given was prime land. Joseph held this against the town fathers for some time. This exchange was apparently the basis for a long feud between Joseph and the church fathers. In several official writings of the church, Joseph Kingsbury is noted as having a bad temperament and was not allowed into the church body. For his part, it seems, Joseph didn't want to be a part of the church, anyway.⁵⁰³

At the formation of the church, 8 September 1638, Joseph Kingsbury was not one of the originators. He was considered:

Too much addicted to the world to be admitted. It was also stated that he remained stiffe and unhumbled and not clering himself to satisfaction neither being zealous of his hart in respect to those evils we feared in him remained long under the admonition of ye company but at last... the Lord left him, without any p'vocation thereto unto such a distempered passionate flying out upon one of ye Company ..., that we thought him unfit for the church. His wife admitted later that he was, "a tender-hearted soul full of fears and temptations, but truly breathing after Christ;" he was finally admitted in 1641.⁵⁰⁴

⁵⁰² *Historical annals of Dedham*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004), *Part II Statistical history*: 69-70, 10/28/2020.

⁵⁰³ *U.S. Find a Grave*, Memorial # 100486090 (ancestry.com), citing *Dedham Church Records*, 24-25, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020.

⁵⁰⁴ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850*, *Dedham Church Records*, 24-25, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020; *NEHGS Membership Applications, 1845-1900*, Vol 1897, 17: 6, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020; *A Pendulous edition of Kingsbury Genealogy*, 13, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

Apparently, he repented of "his evils and temptations."⁵⁰⁵ According to records, his wife, Millicent, was admitted to the Dedham church between November 1638 and 24 April 1639. She was noted as a strong and faithful member.

In 1641, Joseph Kingsbury, upon consideration, granted to the church in Dedham, and the use of the same forever, 3 acres of land.⁵⁰⁶

On 2 June 1641, Joseph Kingsbury became a Freeman of the Massachusetts Bay Colony.⁵⁰⁷ He served as Selectman two years; and in 1645 sold the lot on which the First Church stands for:



"A seat for a publique meeting house, with one other, upon other satisfaction in Land laid out from the town unto each of them doe lay down one p'call of the south end of their house lotts and betwixt the same and the swamp, there is as it is at present set out for the use of a public burial place for ye town forever."

Today the church is a Unitarian Universalist church, a liberal religion characterized by a "free and responsible search for truth and meaning and a deep regard for intellectual freedom and inclusive love." A far cry from its Puritan beginnings. For a detailed history of the church see First Church and Parish in Dedham @ Wikipedia.org,

Image by John Phelan, commons.wikimedia.org

⁵⁰⁵ U.S. Find a Grave, Memorial # 100486090 (ancestry.com), citing *Dedham Church Records*, 24-25, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020.

⁵⁰⁶ *Lectures on the history of the First Church in Cambridge*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004), Back matter, Appendix: 272, 10/28/2020.

⁵⁰⁷ *Massachusetts: Miscellaneous Census Substitutes, 1630-1788, 1840, 1890*, S1a, line #1897352, (original) MA Census Substitutes 1630-1788, 2347, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020; *A Volume of records relating to the early history of Boston*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), Vol 29, *Miscellaneous papers*, 176: *Names of the male persons in Dedham, who have taken the Oath of Allegiance*, 10/28/2020.

Joseph Kingsbury, d. Dedham 1676, age 76.⁵⁰⁸ His Will was probated that same year.⁵⁰⁹ A transcript/abstract follows:

On the 22nd day of the third month called May 1675, I Joseph Kingsbury Sr. of Dedham in yon County of Suffolk yeoman ... given & delivered to my two eldest sons Joseph & John their portions and what was due them from me by the gift of my brother John Kingsbury deceased. To Melecent my dear & well-beloved wife the use of my whole estate till (son) Eleazer [not yet married] shall dispose of himself in marriage; to daughter Sarah Crossman, 5£; to son-in-law Thomas Cooper of Rehoboth, Massachusetts 7£; to son Eleazar, and to my son Nathaniel the cellars they work in, and the houses they live in; to grand-daughter Elizabeth Brewer 5£, at 20 years of age; to son-in-law Nathaniel Brewer 5s; to son-in-law Robert Crossman 5s. Proved first of June 1676.

The Inventory, Suffolk Probate 5-346, 1676

Wearing apparel, one fouling piece, three spinning wheel, nine books including Dr. Preston's work Paules Repentance and The Deceatfulness of the hart. Also included were two houses and various parcels of land in different locations.⁵¹⁰

Millicent (Ames) Kingsbury, died in Dedham after 1 June 1676, when her husband's Will was probated, at the age of 65 or older. She may be buried in the Old Village Cemetery.⁵¹¹

The ancestry of Millicent (Ames) Kingsbury is uncertain, she may have been an Ames, however, she is not the daughter of Anthony Ames/Eames and Margery Pierce. Their daughter married William Sprague.⁵¹²

A John Ames is noted as having immigrated along with Thomas Hayward and settled in Duxbury. I was unsuccessful in determining any further information on him and any possible relationship with Millicent.

Joseph Kingsbury was the son of James Kingsbury II, bapt. Boxford, Suffolk, England 6 Sept 1562;⁵¹³ m. Boxford, Suffolk, England 22 Oct 1584 Anne Francis.⁵¹⁴

"James Kingburye & Anne Ffrauncis the xxij'd of October."⁵¹⁵

⁵⁰⁸ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Dedham, Vol 1&2: 15*, (americanancestors.org), 10/28/2020; Dedham (Mass.), Carlos Slafter, and Don Gleason Hill, *The Early Records of the Town ... Vol 1&2: 15* (Dedham, Mass., Dedham Transcript Press, 1886-99) entry as "Joseph Kingsbury, deceased-- 76", (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/28/2020.

⁵⁰⁹ *Massachusetts, Wills and Probate Records, 1635 – 1991*, Massachusetts Probate Court (Suffolk County), *Suffolk County (Massachusetts) Probate Records, 1636-1899; Probate Records, Vol 5-7, 1666-1674: 198 – 200* for Joseph Kingsbury Senr., (ancestry.com) 10/28/2020.

⁵¹⁰ Arthur Murray Kingsbury, *Kingsbury genealogy: the genealogy of the descendants of Joseph Kingsbury of Dedham, Massachusetts, together with the descendants in several lines of Henry Kingsbury of Ipswich, Massachusetts, and our Canadian cousins*, (Minneapolis, Burgess-Beckwith Printers, 1962), 14 -15, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/28/2020.

⁵¹¹ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #165321044, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁵¹² https://www.werelate.org/wiki/Family:Joseph_Kingsbury_and_Millicent_Ames_%281%29, 10/28/2020.

⁵¹³ Kingsbury & Talcott, *The genealogy of the descendants of Henry Kingsbury, of Ipswich and Haverhill, Massachusetts*, 32, Extracts from parish registers - Boxford, Co Suffolk, (archive.org), 10/28/2020.

⁵¹⁴ U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560 – 1900, Source #5867.0, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁵¹⁵ Kingsbury & Talcott, *The genealogy of the descendants of Henry Kingsbury, of Ipswich and Haverhill, Massachusetts*, 33, Extracts from parish registers - Boxford, Co Suffolk, (archive.org), 10/28/2020.

Children, born Boxford or Assington, Babergh District, Suffolk, England:⁵¹⁶

- i. THOMAS KINGSBURY, b. Boxford 3 Mar 1585; d. Assington 1650; may be buried Brandon Cemetery, Brandon, Forest Health District, Suffolk, England; agreed to immigrate but did not, instead he sent his son Henry, age 15.
- ii. ALYICE KINGSBURY, possibly b. 1587; named in her father's Will.
- iii. ELIZABETH KINGSBURY, b. Assington 1591; m. 29 Sept 1622 George Sheldrak; named in her father's 1622 Will.
- iv. HENRY (HENERIE) KINGSBURY, immigrant; b. Assington, Babergh District, Suffolk, England 1596; d. Boston, Suffolk County, Massachusetts; m. 18 May 1621 widow Margaret Alabaster of Assington.⁵¹⁷
- v. SARA KINGSBURY, bapt. 5 May 1597; d. Boston, Suffolk, Massachusetts 24 Jan 1645; m. John French, named in her father's Will.
- vi. JOSEPH KINGSBURY SR., b. abt. 1600; immigrant; m. Dedham 1638 **Millicent Ames.**
- vii. ANNE KINGSBURY, bapt. 21 Oct 1605; d. bef. her father's Will; may have m. William Pollard.
- viii. JOHN KINGSBURY, bapt. 25 May 1615; d. Dedham, Norfolk, Massachusetts 12 Sept 1660, age 65; he mentions brother Joseph in his Will; m. Assington 8 Mar 1618 Margaret Whisson, immigrant of Dedham; d. May 1662.
- ix. JAMES KINGSBURY JR., b. ____; d. Boxford Nov 1655; made his Will 4 Sept 1655; m. 8 Jan 1614 Joane Hogge.

In his Will, dated 9 April 1622, James Kingsbury left a sum of money to be given to the poor of the parish, to "Mr. Joseph Byrd, of Boxford, twenty shillings, with condition that he shall preach a Sermon at my buryall," and disposed of much livestock and moveables to his wife, his children, grandchildren, and godchildren.

He left much to his wife, but "If she marry again all goods to her herein given shall be taken from her, and equally p'celed (parceled) among all my children." He gave instructions that he be buried in the churchyard at Boxford.⁵¹⁸ The Will was proved in the Archdeaconry Court of Sudbury, 2 October 1610.⁵¹⁹ A full transcript follows:

⁵¹⁶ *Colonial Families of the USA*, 320, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020; Kingsbury, *Kingsbury genealogy: the genealogy of the descendants of Henry Kingsbury, of Ipswich and Haverhill, Massachusetts*, chart opposite p. 44, this book also has maps and many photos and illustrations, (archive.org), 10/28/2020; *One Bassett family in America*, 456 – 457, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁵¹⁷ *Ibid.*, 456, Margaret Alabaster was a relative of Gov. Winthrop, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁵¹⁸ *UK and Ireland, Find A Grave*, Memorial #154364865, this says buried St. Edmund King and Martyr Churchyard, Assington, Babergh District, Suffolk and all other records indicate St. Mary's Boxford, Suffolk.

⁵¹⁹ Kingsbury & Talcott, *The Genealogy of the Descendants of Henry Kingsbury Ipswich and Haverhill, Massachusetts*, 52 -53, (archive.org), 10/28/2020.

**The Will of James Kingsberie of Boxford in the County of Suffolk, yeoman
and in the Diocese of Norwich, made 9 April 1622
Proved 3 May 1622 in the Archdeaconry Court of Sudbury.**

Weakly in body yet in good and perfect remembrance. To be buried in the pisse Churchyard of Boxford. To sonne James Kinsberie some cattle, and also some corn. To James Kinsberie, my granchild, two ewes, and to Anne the daughter of my sonne James, one ewe, and to Bridget, daughter of the said James, my said son, one ewe. To Henrie Kingsberie, my sonne, one bullock of a year old, one mare and colt of five years of age, and eight bushels of barley, being now in his hands. To Henrie Kinsberie, my grandchild, a one-year-old bullock. To John Kingsberie, my son, one grey mare with her colt by her side, a two-year-old colt, and six ewes, and four bushels of malt. To Sara Kingsbery, my daughter the wife of John ffrench, some cattle and a livery bed-coveing, and blankets, one latten candlestick, two pieces of pewter, and other articles. To James French, my grandchild, two ewes, and to my above said daughter Sara, certain malt. To Elizabeth Kingsberie, my daughter, cattle, corn and furniture. If Elizabeth die unmarried then what is given to her to be equally divided among all my children then living. To Jospheh Kingsberie, my son, certain furniture and other things. To Thomas Kingsberie, my sonne, 5£ at 21 or within three months next after. To the said Thomas two ewes and various specific articles. My sons, James, Henry, and John, to have what is by this my Will given to them within a month after my death. As to Sarah, my daughter and Alyce, my daughter, my meaning is that if Ann my wife keep house, and have use for my cart and tumbrel, and such things as do belong to husbandry, she shall keep them to her proper use, but if not, to be divided between John and Joseph, my sons. To William Chubb, my god-child. To Euestis Gryme, my god-child. To Abraham Kingsberie, my brother, five shillings. To Henry Kingsberie, and James Kingsberie, my godchildren, my brothers' sonnes and my god-children, five shillings apiece. To Rachel Cooper god-child five shillings. These to be paid to my godchildren William Chubb, Euestis Gryme, Henry Kingsberie and James Kingsberie my brothers' sons, and Rachel Cooper, within three months. To Mr. Jospheh Byrd of Boxford, twenty shillings, with condition that he shall preach a Sermon at my buryall. To the poore people of the parish of Boxford twenty shillings to be distributed at the discretion of Mr. Jospheh Byrd, and the churchwardens, at my funerall. To the Curate that now is, Mr. Peecke, viz viij4.. To Mr. Thomas Chamber, of Assington, ten shillings, and to the poore people of Assington, ten shillings. All the residue of my moveables to Anne my wife for life, and on her death, to be dividied among all my children then living. My wife to dispose of all my linen between my two daughters, Sarah and Elizabeth. If she marry again all goods to her herein given shalbe taken from her, and equally pceld among all my children.

Wife sole executrix. Witnesses Peter Betts, the Elder and Peter Betts the yonger. The Mark of James Kingsberid. (Harold 300)⁵²⁰

Ann Francis, wife of James Kingsbury , b. Boxford County, Suffolk, England 1563; parents unknown. She was named as executrix to her husband James' Will.

The widow Kingsbury was buried the 13 of April 1624.⁵²¹

⁵²⁰ Kingsbury & Talcott, *The Genealogy of the Descendants of Henry Kingsbury Ipswich and Haverhill, Massachusetts*, 52-53, (archive.org), 10/28/2020.

⁵²¹ Global, *Find A Grave*, Memorial #198207647, has partial information, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020; *One Bassett family in America*, 455, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

Joseph Kingsbury's Brothers

John Kingsbury, b. England 16__; came to America with his wife Margaret and his brother Joseph; was a freeman in Massachusetts 3 March 1635-6. He was a proprietor of Dedham and held several offices. No children. From his Will made 1659: 'To my brother Joseph, one book. To my kinsman John K, the son of my brother, my bible and my psalm book, and each of Joseph's children a portion of the estate. There is mention of kinsman Henry K of Ipswich. Kingsbury is spelled Kingsbery and Kingsbura.

Henry Kingsbury, b. about 1596, based on the date of marriage, d. after 1636; m. Assington, Suffolk, 18 May 1621 Margaret Alabaster, (probably Margaret (Blythe) Alabaster, widow of Thomas Blythe). According to *The Great Migration*, he immigrated from Assington, Suffolk in 1630, to Boston in the ship *Talbot*, the flagship of Gov. Winthrop's squadron.

Henry Kingsbury and Margaret his wife, admitted to Boston church as members #25, & #26, with the annotation "dead since" after Margaret's entry. From the church annotation, it seems she died in Boston, within a few years of arrival. In her Will, she gave Sarah Crossman 5£.

Children, both baptized Assington, Suffolk:

James Kingsbury, bapt. 1 Sept 1622, came to New England, 1630, no further record.

Sarah Kingsbury, bapt. 1 Aug 1624, came to New England, 1630, no further record.

The children may have succumbed to measles in 1630. Gov. Winthrop, aboard the *Arabella*, wrote (New England I 369), "Henry Kingsbury hath a child or two in the *Talbot* sick with measles, but like to do well.

Thomas Kingsbury, the brother who remained in England, had a 15-year-old son also named Henry Kingsbury, nephew to Joseph, John, and Henry. This Henry immigrated with his uncles.

Kingsbury, Fred, J. [from old catalog], *The Genealogy of the Descendants of Henry Kingsbury*; Case, Lockwood & Brainard Co., 1905, Hartford Connecticut Hartford, 1905. Joseph and family 82-84. (hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020; Kingsbury, Frederick John and Talcott, Mary Kingsbury, *The Genealogy of the Descendants of Henry Kingsbury Ipswich and Haverhill, Massachusetts*, (Hartford Press, Hartford, Connecticut, 1905).

Kingsbury Family Ancestry Concluded

James Kingsbury was the son of James Kingsbury I, b. Boxford 1530; d. Boxford 1590 and Agnes Waller of Boxford, b. 1534; d. 1602.

James Kingsbury I was the son of John (de) Kingsbury of Edwardstone, b. Suffolk 1502; living in 1578; d. aft. 1578 Edwardstone, Babergh District, Suffolk, England; may have m. Alice Samway.

John Kingsbury was the son of John Kingsbury and Elyn, b. 1479; d. 1530 (unsourced). His Will dated 10 Aug 1539, "to be buried in the churchyard of Saynt Andrewes of Cornathe."

John Kingsbury was the son of William Kingsbury, b. 1412, Little Cornard, Suffolk, England. William Kingsbury, was the son of John de Kingsbury, Little Cornard ca. 1369-1414, temp Edward III – Henry IV.⁵²²

In his family history, Arthur Murray Kingsbury writes,

The years 1625-1649 in the reign of Charles I were momentous of the clan Kingsbury. The Kingsburys of Suffolk County had embraced Puritanism, and a number of them set sail for America in the month of March 1630 with Gov. Winthrop's fleet. Other members of the clan fled to Scotland and Ireland to escape the forces of Oliver Cromwell, Lord Protector of the Commonwealth.⁵²³

I close this Kingsbury section with a mention of the Find a Grave listing for Joseph Kingsbury:

THE KINGSBURY FAMILY IS OF ANCIENT AND ROYAL HERITAGE! Descended from Royal ancestors of medieval England, from the Kingdom of Mercia and Descendant of Alfred the Great, 871-899 AD, King of England.⁵²⁴

Perhaps, but then again... this is a family whose historians have a great, and at times, an exaggerated, reverence for their ancestors.

⁵²² Kingsbury & Talcott, *The genealogy of the descendants of Henry Kingsbury, of Ipswich and Haverhill, Massachusetts*, chart opposite pg 44, (archive.org), 10/29/2020; Kingsbury, *Kingsbury genealogy; the genealogy of the descendants of Joseph Kingsbury of Dedham, Massachusetts...*, 1-2, 13, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

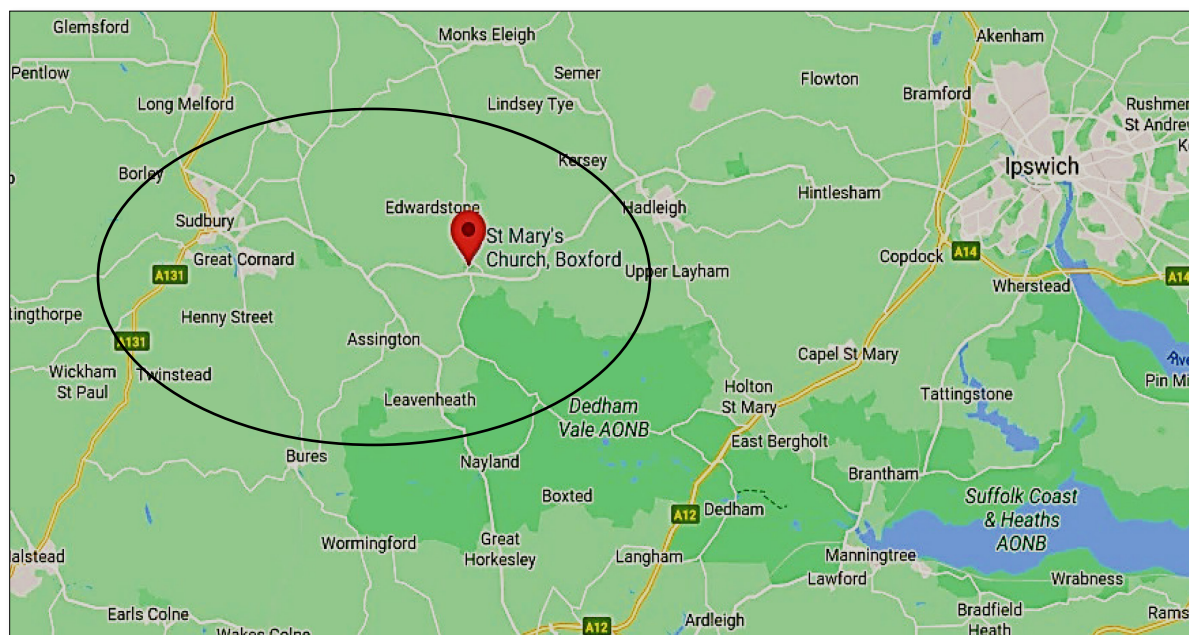
⁵²³ Kingsbury, *Kingsbury genealogy; the genealogy of the descendants of Joseph Kingsbury of Dedham, Massachusetts...*, 13, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵²⁴ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial # 100486090 (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

“As the Kingsbury’s were so closely connected with **Suffolk, England**, some description of that region may be interesting. To visit Assington, Boxford, Groton, and Edwardstone, one goes from London to Sudbury, a distance of about 50 miles by rail across Essex, and then obtains a conveyance at the ‘Rose and Crown Inn’ to drive through Great Cornard, on the River Stour, and then through Newton to Boxford. The county is gently rolling, fertile, and well cultivated, and the landscape is very pleasing. The frequent windmills remind one of Holland and Nantucket. Boxford is a typical England village with two closely built winding streets, (like the Boston cow paths), old red-brick buildings with thatched roofs, not a few of them probably of 17th century date.

There is also a free grammar school, founded by Queen Elizabeth for twenty boys. Opposite the Fleece Inn at the upper end of the village and reached by a footbridge over the little River Box, is the pleasant old house occupied by Mr. Kingsbury, a house builder in Boxford, with flower gardens and a lawn.” The author, continues with a lovely description of “the great flint church, the masonry of cut flint being a marked characteristic of Suffolk churches.” There are numerous drawings of the churches and towns and I invite the reader to google this text.

Frederick John Kingsbury, *The Genealogy of the Descendants of Henry Kingsbury, of Ipswich and Haverhill, Mass.*, (Hartford Press 1905), 25; books.google.com, 10/29/2020.



The reader may recall this map from the section on our French Family Ancestry in England. Though not named on this map, Groton is located around a mile north of the A1071 between Hadleigh and Sudbury.

On a site called Town and Villages Around Sudbury, Suffolk @ visitoruk.com, I found the following information:

Assington is situated about 5 miles southeast of Sudbury. Brampton Gurdon – which could do well for a place name – was in fact the name of the most prominent member of that expansive 17th century family of Assington Hall, the Gurdons. He was the son of John Gurdon, mentioned in the French family ancestry. His domestic achievements can still be seen in the church monument where he proudly poses with a wife on each side of him and beside each wife, her considerable offspring, in total ten sons and six daughters.

Groton, located about 5 miles east of Sudbury was the birthplace of John Winthrop, first governor of the colony of Massachusetts. John grew up to be a chest-beating religious zealot with strict views. He was as stiff-necked as the church that drove him and his like away. John Winthrop lived to introduce as narrow a conception of religion in America as he had renounced in England. For all that, he rejected the opportunity to enter the church and became a lawyer, worldly enough to be very successful and to marry four times. There were fifteen children, doubtless all well-indoctrinated with fire-and-brimstone theology.

Winthrop held on to the governor's office until his death in 1649. His government was stern and unequivocally concerned with his own concept of godliness and righteous behavior. Soon after his appointment, religious covenant was drawn up ensuring that only church members would be entitled to civil rights.

Readers of Volume One will recall Gov. Winthrop's extensive arguments with ancestor William Vassall of Scituate, Massachusetts.

An outright Puritan, if ever there was one, **Gov. Winthrop** abolished all signs of frivolity, as well as clothing fripperies such as lace. He regarded the days of the week and the names of months as idolatrous and made sure his followers were as much afflicted with sackcloth and ashes as he was. Just the same, he worked hard with his hands and was one of the most successful of the new colonists in settling Massachusetts upon the path of prosperity.

Harold Miles West, *Suffolk Villages Books*, (Countryside Books), visitoruk.com, 5/2/2022.

Crossman Family Ancestry Concluded

Robert Crossman was the son of John Crossman, b. Somerset, England abt. 1588;⁵²⁵ d. Newport, Newport, Rhode Island 26 Jan 1687/8 age 100 years;⁵²⁶ m. England abt. 1610 presumably a woman named Isabel (Moses) said to have been b. England ca.1580;⁵²⁷ d. Rhode Island 4 Oct 1678. John Crossman immigrated 1637/39, age 50 or 51 years, with son Robert.⁵²⁸

He may have been widowed at the time of his arrival in Taunton, which, if correct, would mean his marriage to Isabel took place in the colonies, not England. There are no definitive records.



His only known child is Robert Crossman, b. abt. 1621; m. 25 May 1652 Sarah Kingsbury.

Our centenarian John Crossman, was born approximately within the excitement and throes of the ocean battles with the Spanish Armada when Queen Elizabeth struck the medal with the inscription *Dues Flavi, et dissipate sun*, "God blew and they were scattered." A very proper birth of a mariner. We get this date of birth (about 1588) from the Rhode Island Friends' records.⁵²⁹

In 1638, the Tetiquet Purchase took place. This was land from Ousamequin, that is Massasoit, eight miles square, which became the town of Taunton.

Whereas the Providence of God, in the year 1638 and 1639, it pleased God to bring most of the first purchasers of Taunton over the great ocean into this wilderness from

⁵²⁵ *Rhode Island, Vital Extracts, 1636 – 1899*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2014), Vol 7, *Rhode Island Friends and Ministers: Births, Baptisms, Marriages, Deaths: 97, Rhode Island Friends Record – Deaths*, "Crosman, John, aged 100 years, Newport 26 Jan 1687 -8," 10/29/2020; <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Crossman-31> has: "baptized London, St. Gregory by St. Paul 5 Sept 1588," (source: Family Search, *England Births and Christenings. 1538 – 1975*), tradition says he was from Somerset half-way across England, so this record doesn't make sense.

⁵²⁶ *Rhode Island: Historical Cemeteries, 1647-2000*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2018), (Transcriptions by volunteers of Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries Transcription Project; compiled by John Sterling. *Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries Database*, 2017), *Quaker Death Records*: 143618, Newport: 174420, (no image), 10/29/2020; *Rhode Island, Vital Extracts, 1636 – 1899*, Vol 7:97, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

⁵²⁷ The dates and locales found online for Isabel don't make sense; many sites have Isabel Moses married to John Tripp, not John Crossman.

⁵²⁸ Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 24 has listing for Robert, bef. 1642 – but no mention of his father John Crossman.

⁵²⁹ *One Bassett family in America*, 210, for much of the information on John Crossman, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

our dear and native land and after some small-time, we found this placed called by the native the land Cohannet... (Vol III, P 13 LR, Plymouth) ⁵³⁰

The Taunton history (1893) says John Crossman, came from Somerset County, England when he was about 50 years of age, and settled in Taunton where he was one of the original forty-six purchasers of land from the Indians.⁵³¹ His name however is not found on the lists until 1661, among the papers of the Ancient Ironworks. This list proves he did have a residence in Taunton before his removal to Providence, and before the 1651 records where he was banished from Massachusetts for "running amuck in bad language." His offense perhaps was not so much against God, as against the Government for its harsh treatment of the Quakers, who he later joined in Rhode Island. In the meantime, he may have been about his business as a mariner upon the high seas.

On 14 October 1651:

Whereas the court and jury did not agree in Crossman's case, who is now a prisoner for blasphemy, & so, it is necessarily coming to this court to be deterred... the Court of a full hearing of the case, upon the evidence given in due order and determined as follows vizt: that the said Crossman be severely whipt in the open market place & immediately after to be burnt in his forehead with a hott iron, with the letter: B, and also to be banished forever out of our jurisdiction. (Vol III, P 328 MBC)

24 October 1651, The Court and Jury did not agree in Crossman's case and on 28 October 1651, by "nine of the clock in the morning," John Crossman was brought out of prison, where he appealed to the whole court. However, his "crimes" are proven, his sentence confirmed and is to be carried out after Sunday Services the 30th of October, in Boston, and he will be banished forever from the 20th of November next, not to return at his peril.

I have been unable to determine if the branding took place. (Vol IV, pt 1, p 71, MBC)

Five years later, March and April 1656/7, in Providence, Rhode Island, John Crossman is to be accommodated in the Cow-pen provided he "damnifie not ye Highway and subscribe to the Towne Brooke." The "Cow-pen" is an area of land, not an actual cow pen. I'm not sure what this means exactly, but it indicates John Crossman removed to Rhode Island from Massachusetts. (Vol II p 82 T V, Providence, RI)

⁵³⁰ Taunton, Mass., *Quarter millennial celebration of the city of Taunton, Massachusetts: Tuesday and Wednesday, June 4 and 5, 1889*, (Taunton, Mass., Published by the City Government: Charles H. Buffington, 1889), Appendix: 247, (books.google.com), 10/29/2020.

⁵³¹ James Savage, O. P. (Orrando Perry) Dexter, & John Farmer, *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England: Showing Three Generations of Those Who Came Before May, 1692, On the Basis of Farmer's Register ...*, (Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1860-62), 478, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

A pay order of the Ancient Iron Works dated 1 September 1661 was written to pay Elizabeth Pointing (perhaps John Crossman's housekeeper or servant), 4s, and charged to his account. (NEH&G Vol 57, p 332)

On 6 May 1673, John Crossman and four others were all voted freemen of the town of Providence and admitted freemen of this colony. (Vol II, p 482, GC, RI) At a town meeting on 10 April 1674, John Crossman was chosen to serve on a jury at the court of trials for his Majesties colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations. On 27 September 1675, he served on the Grand Jury. (Vol III, Pt 2, p 121 TV)

A deed dated 7 December 1677, states that John Crossman sold for 40s silver, "all my rights of land in the township, for the benefit of the people called Quakers: all fences, houses, stones, at a place called Cow Cove chiefly bound by the sea..." (Vol I, p 38 LR)

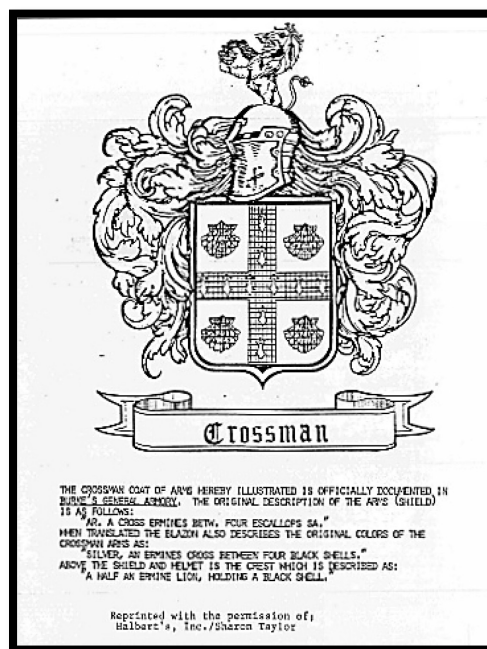
In another transaction dated 27 July 1680, John Crossman mariner, gives a deed to Walter Clarke and John Easton of land at Cow Cove, bounded by sea or river. (Vol III, p 80 LR) In Rhode Island, contrary to their reception in general, the Quakers were well received from the first, and in 1672, the Colony was practically controlled by them. In 1673, those having conscientious scruples were exempted from Military service.

His wife, Isabel (___) Crossman, dies in 1678.

Friends' records of 6 September 1687, state that money was paid from John Crossman's estate to Mr. Johnson who cared for him in his last sickness. John Crossman, a mariner, died at Newport Rhode Island, 26 January 1688. (Gen. Dict. Of RI, 62)

I looked to Somerset, England which is where the Taunton History claims the family originated. I found records for a Sir Lawrence, a Nicholas, Thomas, and Phillip and others with the Crosse surname. I could not find any online records that link our immigrant ancestors back to any of these names.

There is a Crossman family at Crosse in Cornwall, England, descended from John Crossman, Gentleman in 1500, with Coat of Arms: Argent, a cross ermine between four escallops sable. Crest: A demi-lion ermine holding an escallop sable. Motto: Veritas Vincite (Truth Conquers).⁵³²



⁵³² John Roland Crossman, *The Sons and Daughters of Elijah Crossman of Crown Point, New York 1802*, (familysearch.org), 10/29/2020.

John Crossman, one of the first settlers of Taunton, Massachusetts, is better known to us through his son Robert and his numerous descendants, that by reason of any prominence of his own. But his name will be held in fond remembrances as the progenitor of a family which has filled a large place in the history of Taunton and laid the present and future generations under great obligation to it for the foundations of growth and prosperity upon which they are permitted to build.⁵³³

Hayward Family Ancestry Continued

Nathaniel (Nathan) Hayward Jr. was the son of Nathaniel Hayward Sr., b. Bridgewater 1639; d. Bridgewater 15 Oct. 1701;⁵³⁴ m. by 1664 Hannah Willis;⁵³⁵ (their eldest known child, b. Bridgewater 26 Apr 1664), b. Bridgewater abt. 1644 daughter of Deacon John Willis Sr.; d. aft. 1680. In his Will of 15 June 1692, "John Willis Senior" of Bridgewater included a bequest to "my eldest daughter Hannah Hayward." (PPR 1:169; Gen Adv 3:93)

Children:

- i. **NATHANIEL HAYWARD JR.**, b. 1664; m. **Elizabeth Crossman**.⁵³⁶
- ii. JOHN HAYWARD, b. Bridgewater, 20 Apr 1667; m. Bridgewater, Plymouth Massachusetts 24 Dec 1706 Sarah Willis.
- iii. SAMUEL HAYWARD, b. Bridgewater 1670; d. (possibly) Mendon, Worcester, Massachusetts 29 Jul 1713; m. Dorchester, Suffolk, Massachusetts 27 Dec 1699 Elizabeth Barbor.
- iv. PATIENCE HAYWARD, b. East Bridgewater 20 Apr 1672; d. Bridgewater 1730; m. 1689 Israel Alger.
- v. ELISHA HAYWARD, b. Bridgewater 1674; d. Bridgewater 28 Sept 1748; m. Bridgewater 20 Jan 1709 Experience Harvey; five children; m. (2) 1721 Bethia Snow; three children.
- vi. BENJAMIN HAYWARD, b. Bridgewater 25 Nov 1677; d. Bridgewater 20 Jan 1733; m. 1701 Sarah Aldrich.
- vii. SARAH HAYWARD, m. ____Richardson, b. 1655 – 1717?

⁵³³ Emery, *History of Taunton, Massachusetts: From Its Settlement to the Present Time*, 36, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵³⁴ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #73353118, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

⁵³⁵ *North America, Family Histories, 1500-2000, Dunham Genealogy: Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth, Massachusetts: 1589-1669 and his descendants*, (ancestry.com) 300-301, Marriage to Hannah Willis and children, 10/29/2020; *New England Marriages to 1700*, (americanancestors.org), Vol 2: 731, 10/29/2020.

⁵³⁶ Paul Dillon Hayward, *Thomas Hayward of Bridgewater* (Denver, Colorado, P.D. Hayward, 1985), 1, Author states in the Preface that this book is his third compilation on the Haywards and that most of the data he obtained from previously published sources. He warns that there are undoubtedly many errors, some of which may invalidate entire sections, including: "the wife of Nathaniel Hayward Sr. was *Elizabeth Fobes* – an error which I found repeated in numerous online trees.

- viii. THOMAS HAYWARD, m. Susanna, daughter of John “of the Plain” Hayward, his first cousin.

In a Bridgewater town meeting on 17 December 1674, it was voted:

That Goodman Bayley should sit in the second seat (of the Church) and Lieut. Hayward and Goodman Laden Jr, the third seat, and that Goodman Hayward and Willis should sit with the Deacon, and that the Elder’s wife and old Goodman Hayward’s wife and the Deacon’s wife should sit in the fore seat by the pulpit, and that Goodman Lean, headman of the fourth seat and that Nathaniel Hayward in his uncle Willis’ his pew. The seats here mentioned were places of honor in the sanctuary, and places of distinction were not assigned in those early days to the undeserving or out of favoritism. Giles Leach (and these others including the Haywards) ranked among the first inhabitants of the town. The title “Goodman,” suggests they were prominent and esteemed members of the Bridgewater Church.⁵³⁷

In 1675, Nathaniel Hayward Sr. had one share of the Young Men’s shares Bridgewater’s Eastside.⁵³⁸ Also in the 1675 record:

It was agreed that there be two wares to catch fish; and the parties for Satucket should be from the elder’s, William Brett’s, and so all the families along to Satucket with John Washburn, Guido Bailey, John Leonard, Samuel Leonard, and Nathaniel Hayward, and all the rest of the town for Mill river.

Also, in the 1675 record: All the householders and male children twenty years old and upwards, now found to be sixty-four in number, shall be proprietors in the lands at Titcut, just bought of the Indians. Satucket was a river/pond, the name stemming from a contraction of the Indian name Sasquatuckett.⁵³⁹

In the Spring of 1676, during King Phillips War, Nathaniel Hayward Sr. is mentioned in a report from Town Trooper Comfort Willis.⁵⁴⁰ On 5 February 1682, Nathaniel Hayward is listed as a resident of Bridgewater.⁵⁴¹

⁵³⁷ *Three hundred colonial ancestors and war service their part in making American history from 495 to 1934*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2005), 194, under entry for Giles Leach.

⁵³⁸ Mitchell, *History of the early settlement of Bridgewater, in Plymouth County, Massachusetts, ...*, 34, (archive.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵³⁹ Mitchell, *History of the early settlement of Bridgewater in Plymouth County, Massachusetts...62-63*, (archive.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁴⁰ *A description of Bridgewater*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2004), Original data: Mitchell, Nahum, *A description of Bridgewater: 1818... A description of Bridgewater, 1818*, (Bridgewater, Massachusetts, unknown, 1989), 157/158.

⁵⁴¹ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988*, Bridgewater, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

In 1686, 10 acres of woodland were to be laid out to each purchaser nearest to their habitation – as the land will afford it to be laid out. Lots on the north side of the town river included John Willis Sr. (Deacon) and John Willis Jr., Nathaniel Hayward and Lieut. Thomas Hayward. All the lands within the most extensive limits of the town seem to have been ‘fairly’ purchased from the Indians.⁵⁴²

And from the extent of this, 7 miles of those on the north, those on the east are to begin on the north lie and to run a line due south till it meets with Mr. Alexander Standish’s land or Middleborough (now Halifax) bounds. All the lands being easterly betwixt the above said line so run, and the line that was run by the agents of Bridgewater and Middleborough, (now Halifax) and the Major’s purchase (now Hanson), belongeth to these fifteen men whose names and lots, as they fell out, are in order as followeth: The name of the men of the east, included Nathaniel Hayward, also John Hayward and John Ames.⁵⁴³

Nathaniel Hayward Sr., born Bridgewater 1639; died Bridgewater 15 October 1701;⁵⁴⁴ his wife died after 1680. I was unable to locate a Will for Nathaniel Hayward Sr.

Willis Family Ancestry

Willis is a surname of French and English origin. Spellings of Willis, Willys, and Wyllys appear in records from 1330. The name derives from the name *de Welles* (under which name the family was Lincolnshire noblemen) which comes from the Norman name *de Vallibus*, meaning “of the valley.” Or, more simply it is a patronymic surname from the personal name Will or William, composed of the elements *wil*, meaning “will or desire,” and *helm*, “a helmet or protector.” An interesting name-bearer, recorded in the *Dictionary of National Biography*, was Francis Willis (1718 - 1807), a physician who attended King George 3rd in his first attack of madness in 1788, and who became popular at court.

Hannah Willis, b. Duxbury, Plymouth, Massachusetts abt. 1644, was the daughter of John Willis Sr. (Deacon) and Elizabeth Hodgkins; d. Bridgewater 11 July 1734; m. bef. 1664 Nathaniel Hayward; eight children.

⁵⁴² Mitchell, *History of the early settlement of Bridgewater in Plymouth County, Massachusetts*...63, (archive.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁴³ Mitchell, *History of the early settlement of Bridgewater in Plymouth County, Massachusetts*...31, (archive.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁴⁴ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #73353118, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

John Willis Sr. (Deacon), b. England abt. 1610;⁵⁴⁵ d. Bridgewater 27 Aug 1693; m. Duxbury, 2 Jan 1637 Elizabeth Hodgkins.⁵⁴⁶

Children:

- i. JOHN WILLIS JR., b. Duxbury 1635; d. Bridgewater 1712; m. Experience Byram; three children.
- ii. NATHANIEL WILLIS, b. Duxbury 1637; d. Bridgewater 29 Nov 1716; m. 16 Jan 1639 Bridgewater, Lydia ____; nine children.
- iii. JONATHAN WILLIS, b. Duxbury 1639; d. 1716. Not named in his father's Will.
- iv. COMFORT WILLIS, b. Duxbury 14 June 1641; d. West Bridgewater 1692; m. Hannah ____; two children. He was a trooper for the town in King Phillips War, a 5-year position that provided a horse and "all furniture" belonging to the horse, a pair of pistols, and pay.
- v. HANNAH WILLIS, b. Duxbury 1645; d. Bridgewater 11 July 1734; m. bef. 1664 **Nathaniel Hayward Sr.**; eight children.
- vi. ELIZABETH WILLIS, b. Bridgewater 18 Dec 1647; d. Taunton abt. 1719; m. Taunton 10 Dec 1679 Thomas Harvey; eight children.
- vii. JOSEPH WILLIS, b. Bridgewater 1651; d. Worcester 31 Jan 1704; OR b. 1644; d. Taunton 31 Jan 1704/5?
- viii. SARAH WILLIS, b. West Bridgewater 1 Mar 1651; d. West Bridgewater Dec 1771; m. Bridgewater 1 Mar 1672 John Ames; eight children.
- ix. BENJAMIN WILLIS, b. Bridgewater 1657; d. Bridgewater 12 May 1696; m. Bridgewater by 1690 Susanna Whitman; seven children.

On ancestry.com, there is a lengthy essay on the possible ancestries of Deacon John Willis and his brothers, *Theories on the English Origin of Deacon John Willis*. Highlights can be found at <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Willis-93>. The conclusion: his origins are unknown. Anderson in *The Great Migration* agrees.

John Willis Sr. arrived in Duxbury, Massachusetts in 1636/37. He married Elizabeth (Hodgkins) Palmer, widow of William Palmer Jr.⁵⁴⁷ They were original proprietors and first settlers of Bridgewater. John was the first Deacon in Bridgewater and sustained many town offices, both at Duxbury and Bridgewater; represented Bridgewater at the old Colony Court for 25 years; sold his estate in Duxbury to William Paybody in 1657; was appointed to solemnize marriages and administer oaths to witnesses and others.

⁵⁴⁵ *England: Births and Christenings, 1538-1975*, 19 Aug 1610, Staplehurst, Kent, film #1866585, p. 23252332, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁴⁶ *New England Marriages to 1700: Vol 3: 1686*, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁴⁷ *New England Marriages to 1700, Vol 3:1686*, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

His name appears on *The List of Those Able to Bear Arms in The Colony of New Plymouth* in 1643. Also included are Moyses Symons, John Heyward, Thomas Heyward Sr. and Jr.⁵⁴⁸ There is also a John *New* Willis in the Massachusetts Census Substitute this same year.⁵⁴⁹

John had four brothers, Nathaniel, Lawrence, Jonathan, and Francis who lived in Bridgewater or nearby. Nathaniel's son Elkanah ties four of the five siblings together.

He settled his father's estate in 1686 and asked his Uncle John Willis to help him. He settled his Uncle Lawrence Willis' Boston estate in 1703. In 1704, he sold Boston land which was described as being part of the estate of his Uncle Francis Willis, deceased. 18 January 1656, in the Bridgewater records:

Be it known unto all men by these presents, that we, Nathaniel Willis and Lawrence Willis, inhabitants of the town of Bridgewater, do bind ourselves to free the said town of Bridgewater from any charge or damage that may come upon the said town by the keeping of our brother Jonathan Willis.⁵⁵⁰

John Willis was the first representative for Bridgewater to the Court at Plymouth in 1657; he retained the position for seventeen years, ending 1681.⁵⁵¹ In 1671, he witnessed a deed,⁵⁵² involving John and Elizabeth Ames. Elizabeth (Hayward) Ames was sister to Nathaniel Hayward, husband of John Willis's daughter, Hannah. In 1672, John Willis and Thomas Hayward are mentioned in a land transaction between John Holmes and Benjamin Church.⁵⁵³

John Willis Sr. of Bridgewater wrote his Will on 15 June 1692 naming his son Nathaniel executor. The Will mentions son John; son Nathaniel and his sons Nathanael, Jonathan, and John; son Joseph and his eldest son Joseph; son Comfort; son Benjamin; eldest daughter Hannah Hayward; daughter Elizabeth Harvey; grandchild Patience Augur; and daughter Sarah Ames. On 27 August 1693, John Willis died. An Inventory was taken on 31 August 1693. The two handwritten pages can be found on americanancestors.org⁵⁵⁴ and an abbreviated transcript follows:

⁵⁴⁸ *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register*, Vol 4: 256, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁴⁹ *Massachusetts: Miscellaneous Census Substitutes, 1630-1788, 1840, 1890, S1a, 256, MA Census Substitutes 1630-1788, 3410, 3411*, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020. *New* may be a transcription error, 12/1/222.

⁵⁵⁰ Mitchell, *History of the early settlement of Bridgewater, in Plymouth County, Massachusetts, ...* 345 – 346, (archive.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁵¹ *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register*, "Marriages and Deaths, Vol 5 (1851)," 476, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁵² *Massachusetts: Plymouth Colony Deeds, 1671-1673*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2019). From *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England, Deeds, &c., Vol III, pt. 2*, 10-11, 195, 10/29/2020.

⁵⁵³ *Massachusetts: Plymouth Colony Deeds, 1671-1673, Deeds Vol 3, part 2*, 175-176, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁵⁴ *Plymouth County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1686-1881, Case # 23089, Plymouth Cases: 22000-23593*, 3 pages, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

**The Will of John Willis senr. of Bridgewater
dated, "The 15 of ye 4th month June 1692"**

Son Nathaniel Willis to be executor. To son John the 10 acres his house stands on, and my farm of threescore acres lying below Titticut, also 10 acres not yet laid out; to son Nathaniel the homestead and other lands "only let it be Remembered that after his Decease the seventy Acres of the far field be divided unto his three sons Nathanael, Jonathan and John; to son Joseph during his life, 15 acres at the far field on that side next Taunton, and 25 acres of my last fifty that is yet to be laid out, and after his decease shall go to his eldest son Joseph; to son Comfort, 16 acres at the Indian field, etc.; to son Benjamin lands; to eldest dau. Hannah Hayward, household goods; to dau. Elizabeth Harvey; to grandchild Patience Augur one of my cows and my Bible; rest of estate to be divided among my three daus., Hannah Hayward, Sarah Ames and Elizabeth Harvey; my desire is that Mr. Keith and Captain Hayward would see my will fulfilled.

Witnessed by Thomas Hayward and Elihu Brett who made oath to the same 20 September 1693, the former being styled Capt. Thomas Hayward. (170)

Inventory of the estate of said John Willis, "who deceased the 27th of August in ye year 1693," taken by Thomas Hayward, John Ames Sr. and Elihu Brett "ye last of August 1693", and presented at court by the executor, said Nathaniel Willis, "20 September 1693." ⁵⁵⁵

Hodgkins Family Ancestry

Hodgkins in a variety of spellings is the patronymic (i.e. meaning "son of") form of the diminutive "Hodge", itself a pet form of the personal name Roger. It was introduced into Britain by the Normans after 1066 and combined with the pre-existing Anglo-Saxon "Hrodgr".

The English often created pet forms of French names beginning with "R" into one with an "H", it is a more effortless sound to pronounce, so we have "Hobb" from Robert, "Hick" from Richard, and "Hodge" from Roger.

Elizabeth Hodgkins, b. possibly Stephany, London, England 1 Nov 1619; d. Bridgewater bef. 15 June 1692; m. (1) Plymouth 27 Mar 1634 William Palmer Jr.,⁵⁵⁶ m. (2) Duxbury 2 Jan 1637 John Willis.⁵⁵⁷

Her parents and birthplace are unknown, so her birth must be estimated. Because she was still having children during the 1650s, she was most likely born ca. 1600-1618. She was not born in Duxbury, Massachusetts, which did not exist. Her first husband, b. 1610, came from London in 1621 on the *Fortune*, with his father, William Palmer Sr. , who was a "nailer."⁵⁵⁸

⁵⁵⁵ Lucy Hall Greenlaw, (editor), *Plymouth Colony Probate Records, The Genealogical advertiser*, [from old catalog] (Cambridge, Mass., Lucy H. Greenlaw, 1898), 93, (archive.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁵⁶ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Plymouth Vol 1*: 652, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁵⁷ *New England Marriages to 1700, Vol 2*: 1133, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁵⁸ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III*: 1383-86, 1384: his inventory included all the tools needed for nail making, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

They were married in America in 1634. William Palmer Jr., d. by 25 Aug 1636, the date of his Inventory.⁵⁵⁹ The couple had one child, Rebecca Palmer, b. 1635.

Elizabeth (Hodgkins) Palmer, m. (2) Duxbury 2 Jan 1637 John Willis. At a General Court on 2 January 1637/8 John Willis and his wife Elizabeth (Hodgkins) (Palmer) Willis, sued the executors of the estate of William Palmer, Sr. for damages, for a lot of land which the complainants contended he “had a right to by the marriage of his wife, who had formerly been the wife of William Palmer, the younger, son of William the elder.” However, the jury found for the defendants.⁵⁶⁰

Elizabeth (Hodgkins) Willis, died before 15 June 1692, the date of Deacon John Willis’ Will.

Hayward Family Ancestry Continued

Nathaniel Hayward Sr. was the son of Thomas Hayward, b. abt. 1600; immigrated from Aylesford, Kent, England; d. Bridgewater bef. 8 Mar 1681; m. possibly Aylesford, Kent, England abt. 1622/1624 Susanna Towne;⁵⁶¹ Because he immigrated from Aylesford, it is reasonable to believe he was born there. However, because no records exist of the Aylesford, St. Peter and Paul Parish before 1654, we will never know. Also, there are no reliable records for his parents.⁵⁶² Based on the estimated date of marriage (1620-1628), Thomas was probably born by 1600.

Children - five of whom were born before their March 1634/35 departure for the Colonies:

- i. THOMAS HAYWARD JR., b. England, ca. 1624; d. bef. 17 Apr 1699 killed by fall from a horse; m. abt. 1664 Sarah (possibly Ames).
- ii. JOHN “OF THE PLAIN” HAYWARD, b. Aylesford, England 1625, d. Bridgewater abt. 1710; m. 1662 Sarah Mitchell, daughter of Experience Mitchell. “Of the plain” is to distinguish him from John Haward/Howard, husband of his sister Martha.
- iii. ELIZABETH HAYWARD, b. England ca. 1628; dsp ‘died without issue’ (children) bef. 28 May 1705; m. 20 Oct 1645 John Ames; no children.

⁵⁵⁹ C. Henry Pope, *The Plymouth scrap book: the oldest original documents extant in Plymouth archives, printed verbatim*, (Boston, Mass., C. E. Goodspeed & company, 1918), 9: for a copy of the original list, <hathitrust.org>, 10/29/2020.

⁵⁶⁰ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III*: 1386, (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁶¹ Her surname is uncertain, but Towne is ‘accepted’ as probable, <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Hayward>, (extensively researched and documented), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁶² Aylesford, SS, *Peter and Paul Parish Records*, Kent County Council, Kent History and Library Centre, 10/29/2020. The absence of Aylesford parish records prior to 1654 was confirmed through communications by Chase Ashley on 17 Dec 2018 with the Archive Collections Officer at the Kent History and Library Centre as per <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Hayward>, 10/29/2020.

- iv. SUSAN/SUSANNA HAYWARD, b. England 10 Jan 1632; d. 4 Nov 1661; m. by 1654 John Richmond.
- v. MARTHA HAYWARD, b. England 1 Jan 1631, or abt. 1634; d. Bridgewater 12 May 1693. On 8 June 1651 Martha Hayward was one of seven men and women of Plymouth and Duxbury who were "presented for vain, light and lascivious carriage at an unseasonable time of the night." And on 7 Oct 1651 she was one of four of that group who were released with admonition to "take heed of such evil carriages for the future;" (PCR 1:172)⁵⁶³ m. Duxbury abt. 1653 John Howard (Haward), first of the name in Plymouth.

These children born, Duxbury or Bridgewater: ⁵⁶⁴

- vi. NATHANIEL HAYWARD SR., b. ca. 1639; d. aft. 28 May 1705 ; m. by 1664 **Hannah Willis**, daughter of Deacon John Willis.
- vii. JOSEPH HAYWARD, b. 1646; d. Bridgewater 20 June 1718; m. (1) by 1673 Alice Brett (eldest known child b. Bridgewater 15 Dec 1673); m. (2) 1683 Hannah daughter of Experience Mitchell.
- viii. ELISHA HAYWARD, b. 1649/50; d. Bridgewater 6 Aug 1710; never married.
- ix. MARY HAYWARD, b. Bridgewater abt. 1651; d. Bridgewater abt. 1707; m. 1688 Edward Mitchell.

The passenger list for the *William & Francis*, which embarked at London on March 7, 1631/2 and arrived in Boston on 5 June 1632, included a "Thomas Haeward."⁵⁶⁵ Savage suggested that this record might also relate to "our" Thomas Hayward and might show that Thomas first came to New England with Winslow in 1632 and, satisfied with the prospects, went home to bring his family.⁵⁶⁶ Anderson, in his *Great Migration* series, found no evidence either for, or against, this proposition.⁵⁶⁷

Records for 14 March 1634/5 show the enrollment for passage to New England aboard the *Hercules*, under a minister's certification, of "Thos Hayward of Aylesford in Kent, *Taylor*

⁵⁶³ *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins...*, Volume III, G-H: 292, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁶⁴ *North America Family Histories, 1500 – 2000, The Dunham Genealogy: Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth, Massachusetts: 1589 – 1669: and his descendants*, 300, also gives Mehitable Hayward, b. 1643; m. 1668 Daniel Dunham, but no reliable evidence is found for such a daughter, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁶⁵ James Camden Hotten, *The Original Lists of Persons of Quality; Emigrants; Religious Exiles; Political Rebels; Serving Men sold for a term of years; apprentices; children stolen; maidens pressed; and others who went from Great Britain to the American Plantations, 1600-1700...*, (London, Hotten, 1874), 149, (archive.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁶⁶ Savage, Dexter & Farmer, *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England...*, Vol II: 394, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁶⁷ *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins...*, Volume II G-O: 900, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

(tailor) & Susanna his Wife" and children "Thomas, John, Elizabeth, Susan, and Martha."⁵⁶⁸ They sailed from Sandwich to Boston landing on 14 May 1634.

Thomas and his family appear to have initially settled in Cambridge in the Massachusetts Bay Colony by 4 January 1635/36. The first known record of Thomas Hayward in New England is the grant to him, on this date, by the town of Cambridge of "about 2 Acks within wstend field gate beyond the Claypits," There are no other records of Thomas or his family in Cambridge.⁵⁶⁹

By 5 November 1638, Thomas appears to have moved from Cambridge to Duxbury in the Plymouth Colony. The first record of Thomas at Duxbury is a grant to him by the Plymouth Colony Court of Assistant of 10 acres of land "lying on the Duxborrow side, which George Slawson had fenced in and sold to Thomas Heywood for iij sterling."⁵⁷⁰

In his *History of Bridgewater*, Mitchell says, "Thomas Hayward came from England in the same vessel with John Ames, and settled in Duxbury before 1638. He was made freeman in 1646."⁵⁷¹ I researched (unsuccessfully), John Ames, to determine if he was a relative of Millicent Ames, wife of Joseph Kingsbury Sr., the father-in-law to Thomas Hayward's son Nathaniel.

Thomas Hayward received additional grants of land in Duxbury: The Court of Assistant held at Plymouth on 6 April 1640:

Granted eight men, including Thomas Hayward, the lands lying on the northwest side of the North hill in Duxborrow, including the liberty to set corn at Namassacussett, and to mow grass for their cattle there, and to build a house on the south side of the brook there. The Court of Assistant held at Plymouth on 31 August 1640 granted land lying at the Namassacussett River to nine men, including 50 acres to "Thom Heywood."⁵⁷²

The list of males of the Plymouth Colony able to bear arms, 16-60 years of age on August 1643, included, at Duxbury: Thomas Heyward Senior and [his sons] John Heyward and Thomas Heyward Junior.⁵⁷³

⁵⁶⁸ NEHGR, Vol 75, (1921), 219, Eben Putnam, "Two Early Passenger Lists, 1635-1637," (americanancestors.org), 10/29/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins...*, Volume III, G-H: Thomas Hayward, 288 – 294, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁶⁹ *Ibid.*, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020; Cambridge, Mass., *The Records of the Town of Cambridge (formerly Newtowne) Massachusetts 1630-1703*, (Cambridge, 1901), 15, (archive.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁷⁰ Nathaniel Bradstreet Shurtleff, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth, In New England*, (Boston, Press of W. White, 1855-61) Vol 1 1633 – 1640: 101, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020. Note: A fellow researcher believes the iij sterling meant King George III sterling. I have been unable to find another explanation.

⁵⁷¹ *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins...*, Volume III, G-H: Thomas Hayward, 289, (ancestry.com), 10/29/2020; <https://plymouthcolony.net/bridgewater/mitchell/181.html>, 10/29/2020.

⁵⁷² Shurtleff, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth, In New England*, Vol I 1633-1640: 161, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁷³ *Ibid.*, 190, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

On 2 June 1646, at the General Court held at Plymouth, Thomas Heyward was among the men who were members of the Grand Inquest.⁵⁷⁴ On 28 October 1645, The General Court held at Plymouth ordered "Thomas Heyward of Duxborrow" to pay "Wannapooke, a Neipnet Indian," half a bushel of Indian corn for venison he took of him.⁵⁷⁵

On 1 June 1647, Thomas was admitted as a Freeman⁵⁷⁶ along with Thomas Howes, Edward Jenkine, and John Allen. He was chosen as constable of Duxbury in 1648.⁵⁷⁷ In 1650, Thomas Heward Senior was among the twelve men who marked out a new way from Joaneses River to the Massachusetts Path.⁵⁷⁸ And in 1656, Thomas was one of the original proprietors of the Duxborrow "New Plantation," incorporated as the town of Bridgewater,⁵⁷⁹ the first interior settlement in Plymouth County. By 1665, he sold the land, given to him by the Plymouth Court, to George Russell, and in 1669, he sold his Duxbury land to William Pabodie.⁵⁸⁰

By 1658, Thomas was living in Bridgewater. He was an original proprietor and among the earliest and, at his death, the eldest settlers of Bridgewater. He was included in lists of freemen of Bridgewater in 1658 and 1670.⁵⁸¹ On 5 June 1667, Thomas Haward Senior and Lieutenant Thomas Howard [his son] are among the twelve men appointed by the General Court of Election as a jury to lay out all ways requisite in the township of Bridgewater. At the Court at Plymouth on 7 July 1668, they reported on the roads most suitable to the inhabitants of Bridgewater.

The list of freemen of New Plymouth made in May 1670 included, at Bridgewater, Thomas Haward Senior and [his son] Lieutenant Thomas Haward.⁵⁸²

⁵⁷⁴ Shurtleff, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England, Court Orders: Vol II 1641-1651*: 102, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁷⁵ *Ibid.*, 89, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁷⁶ Shurtleff, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England, Court Orders: Vol I 1633-1640*: 161, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020; Shurtleff, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England, Court Orders: Vol II 1641-1651*: 114, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁷⁷ *Ibid.*, 123, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁷⁸ *Ibid.*, 160, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁷⁹ Mitchell, *History of the Early Settlement of Bridgewater in Plymouth County, Massachusetts, ...*, 10-11, 26, (archive.org), 10/29/2020; Shurtleff, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England, Court Orders: Vol III 1651-1661*: 101, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁸⁰ <https://sites.google.com/site/theneverendinghobbydunbarline/home/hayward--thomas-hayward-us>, 10/29/2020.

⁵⁸¹ Shurtleff, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England, Miscellaneous Papers: Vol VIII 1633-1689*: 202, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020; Shurtleff, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England, Court Orders: Vol V 1668-1678*: 278, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020.

⁵⁸² Shurtleff, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England, Court Orders: Vol V: 1668-1678*: 278, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020. Various spellings of the surname are not uncommon; Shurtleff, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England, Court Orders: Vol IV: 1661-1668*: 155, 193, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/29/2020

On 29 June 1678, Thomas Hayward made his Will. He described himself as "Thomas Heyward Sr. of Bridgewater in ye Colony of New Plymouth, yeoman." He made bequests to his son Joseph, son Elisha, grandson Joseph Heyward, and mentioned lands he had previously given to his son Nathaniel. He named his son Joseph as his executor. William Brett Sr. and Thomas Hayward Jr witnessed the Will. (PCPR 4:1 81-82, 86-87)⁵⁸³

Inventory of Thomas' estate was taken on 8 March 1680/1, by Elder Brett and Lieutenant Hayward and totaled 46£, 11s, 9d, with no real estate listed. (PCPR 4:1: 84) The Inventory shows that he possessed:

Mr. Sheppard's book, *Upon ye parable of ye ten virgins* and Mr. Sheppard's, *Upon ye sincere Convert*; Mr. Ralph Allen of *ye riches of the covenant of grace*, also his *Victory over ye world*: and Doctor Presson's, *Of God's all-sufficiency* and several other sermons, Annexed thereunto and Mr. Dod's, *Upon ye Commandments* and Mr. Cooper's book of *Jacob's Wrestling with God*, Mr. Byfield's, *His marrow & his principles*, along with a Bible and "some other small books."⁵⁸⁴

An impressive library for a farmer of modest means! Based on the March 8, 1680/1 date of his Inventory, Thomas probably died in about February 1680/81. His Will was probated on 7 June 1681. (PCR 4:1:84)⁵⁸⁵

The Will of Thomas Hayward Senior of Bridgewater Dated 29 June 1678 and proved 7 June 1681

Thomas Hayward Senior of Bridgewater...yeoman bequeathed to my son Joseph my house lot with the dwelling house, barn & all other outhouses whatever standing upon the same lot which lot contains six acres...(and) twenty acres of land more joining to the house lot; to "my son Elisha forty acres of land lying upon the river called John's River which he hath built upon; to my son Joseph forty acres of land lying upon John's River & joining to my son Elisha's; to my son Elisha thirty acres of land which is a part of a fifty-acre lot lying on the easterly side of the Great River; to my grandchild Joseph Hayward sixty acres of land lying upon Titticut River below the weir, granted & given to me by the county; to my grandchild Joseph Heyward my share of land purchased by the town of the Indian called Titticut Peter, I being one of the purchasers; to my sons Elisha & Joseph all those several parcels of meadows as followeth equally to be divided between them: two shares of meadow at Eagle's Nest..., one share of meadow lying at West Meadow ..., one lot of meadow near Satuckett Plain, one lot of meadow lying at Paine(?) Meadow, one lot of meadow lying in Coaster's Kitchen on a place usually so-called; to my sons Elisha & Joseph all the remainder of my lands belonging either to my own grant as also the purchase I bought of Experience Mitchell excepting only some lands I have given to my son Nathaniel belonging to one of the purchases; to my son Elisha liberty & power to

⁵⁸³ Massachusetts Plymouth Colony Probate Records 1683 – 1967, *Plymouth Colony Records, Wills, Vol 4: 1683-1686, Part 1*, p 82: Images 519 – 520 on familysearch.org, 10/30/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins...*, Volume III G-H: 289-290, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁵⁸⁴ Massachusetts Plymouth Colony Probate Records 1683 – 1967, *Plymouth Colony Records, Wills, Vol 4: 1683-1686, Part 1*, p 82: Images 519 – 520 on familysearch.org, 10/30/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins...*, Volume III G-H: 289-290, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁵⁸⁵ *Global Find A Grave*, Memorial #37073450, has no date of death and incorrect location, does have bio from *The Great Migration* resource, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Massachusetts Plymouth Colony Probate Records 1683 – 1967, Plymouth Colony Records, Wills, Vol 4: 1683-1686, Part 1*, p 82: Images 519 – 520 on familysearch.org, 10/30/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins...*, Volume III G-H: 289-290, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

dispose, give or bequeath twenty acres of the forty lying upon John's River to whom he shall choose; I give all my moveable goods of all sort to my son Joseph and do make him executor. (PCR 4:1: 81-82, 86-87)⁵⁸⁶

Thomas Hayward was one of the eldest of all the settlers in Bridgewater. He died in 1681, and his descendants are more numerous than those of any other name in town. The present (1818) Registrar of Probate, the High Sheriff of the county and the Minister at Barnstable, are of this family.⁵⁸⁷



Towne Family Ancestry

Towne is an English topographic name for someone who lived in a village, as opposed to an outlying farm or hamlet, from Middle English *toun* (Old English *tun*, which originally meant fence and then enclosure, although the sense of settlement, and village was already firmly established in the Old English period.)

Thomas Hayward's wife was Susanna Towne, b. possibly Aylesford, Kent, England, prior to 1607 or abt. 1602 (based solely on immigration records), parents unknown.

There is a lengthy discussion on <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Towne-491>, and in Anderson's *Great Migration*, about her possible relationship to the Towne family. Susanna was related to Peter Towne and his father William Towne, of Cambridge, Massachusetts (not the William Towne of Topsfield, Massachusetts).⁵⁸⁸ William Towne of Cambridge was, most likely, Susanna's brother.

Torrey's *New England Marriages* asks was Susanna (Towne) Hayward the "aunt of Peter Towne?"⁵⁸⁹ The Will of Peter Towne includes a bequest to his "first cousins at Bridgewater, Nathaniel Hayward, Joseph Hayward, Elisha Hayward, and Mary Mitchell, who were the five living children of Thomas Hayward and his wife Susanna (Towne) Hayward."⁵⁹⁰

⁵⁸⁶ *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins...*, Volume III G-H: 289-290, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁵⁸⁷ *Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, (pub by The Society, 1826), 151, (books.google.com), 10/30/2020.

⁵⁸⁸ *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins...*, Volume III G-H: 289-290, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁵⁸⁹ *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 2:733, (americanancestors.org), 10/20/2020.

⁵⁹⁰ *Great Migration 1634-1635*, Vol VII T-Y, 78, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020; *NEHGR*, Vol 20 (1866), (americanancestors.org), William B. Towne, "Notes and Memoranda Relating to Persons of the Name Towne,"

Susanna may have been the daughter of Peter Towne of Aylesford, England, or as another source suggests, the daughter of Thomas Towne and his wife Elizabeth Hayward of Tonbridge, Kent, England. She was not the daughter of William and Joanna (Blessing) Towne of Topsfield. Several online sites incorrectly list her as their daughter. To keep things confusing, this couple did have a daughter Susan(nah) baptized 26 October 1625, Great Yarmuth, Norfolk, England and died there 19 July 1630.

“Our” Susanna (Towne) Hayward’s place and date of death are uncertain. Since she is not mentioned in her husband’s Will of 29 June 1678, Bridgewater, Massachusetts, she most likely died in Bridgewater before this date.

367- 371, see 370-371, 10/30/2020; *Probate Records, 1648 – 1924, Middlesex County, Massachusetts, Vol 12*: 104-107, FHL Film #007554523, *Middlesex County Probate Records, Vol 12*, pp 104-7, (familysearch.org), 10/30/2020.



Chapter Four

The Fourth Generation of the Alden Ancestral Line in America

Hannah (Alden) Abbey's Great-Grandparents

*Eleazar Alden and Martha (Shaw) Alden
1694 - 1773*

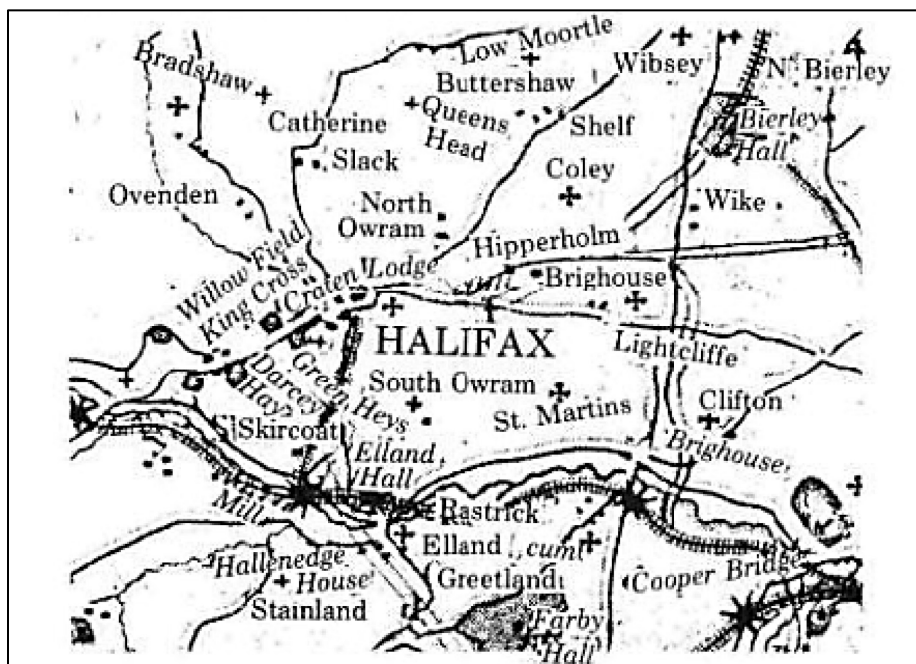
Including the Shaw Family Ancestry

*and the Allied Families of
Whitmarsh, Harding, Phillips
Jewson/Kipping
Best, Swift, Redenbaugh, Ingle
Longbotham, Mawd and Mason*



*Scolecite Crystals*⁵⁹¹

Our Shaw family ancestors came from Northowram, Halifax, Yorkshire, England. They owned and passed down land called Scolecote Brow. I was unable to determine if they mined Scolecite, a hydrated calcium silicate mineral. I did not find any historical uses, though there are references to its contemporary 'energetic' properties.



⁵⁹¹ Commons.wikimedia.org (public domain) image by Robert M. Lavinsky, 05/24/2022.

Chapter Four
The Fourth Generation of Aldens in America

Eleazar Alden and Martha (Shaw) Alden
1694 - 1773

Jonathan Alden was the son of Eleazar Alden Sr., b. Bridgewater 27 Sept 1694, second son of Deacon Joseph Alden (1667 - 1747), and Hannah (nee Dunham) Alden (1670 - 1747);⁵⁹² d. Bridgewater 29/30 Jan 1773, in his 79th year.⁵⁹³ He died on his farm near Pine Hill, South Bridgewater⁵⁹⁴ and is buried in the Old Graveyard of Bridgewater (Section A, grave 15).⁵⁹⁵

Eleazar Alden Sr., m. Bridgewater, Plymouth, Massachusetts 11 May 1720, Martha Shaw, daughter of Joseph and Judith (Whitmarsh) Shaw⁵⁹⁶ and sister of Rev. John Shaw, b. Bridgewater 6 Jan 1700; d. Bridgewater 6 Jan 1769, age 69 (this date from contemporary private records, the gravestone in the old graveyard has been transcribed as 1760.)

Children of Eleazar and Martha (Shaw) Alden, born at Bridgewater:⁵⁹⁷

- i. **JONATHAN ALDEN**, b. 22 June 1721; d. 1801; m. 24 Jan 1743 **Experience Hayward** (1719 – 1809).
- ii. **ELEAZER ALDEN JR.**, b. 30 Aug 1723; d. Bridgewater 2 May 1803, age 80 years; m. 22 Nov 1748 Sarah Whitman, daughter of Nicholas Whitman; she, d. 1818 age 91.
- iii. **ABRAHAM ALDEN**, b. 31 Aug 1725; d. Bridgewater 2 Sept 1726.

⁵⁹² *Massachusetts, Compiled Birth, Marriage, and Death Records, 1700-1850, Bridgewater Births*, 26, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Mayflower Births and Deaths, Vol 1 and 2*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2013), Vol 1, 42, 10/30/2020.

⁵⁹³ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Bridgewater, Town Records, with Births, Marriages and Deaths*, 34, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Mayflower Births and Deaths, Vol 1*: 42 (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁵⁹⁴ Samuel White Thayer, Elisha Thayer, & Stephen Winchester Jackson, *A Family Memorial: Part I, Genealogy of fourteen families of the early settlers of New England...*, (Hingham, Massachusetts, Jedidiah Farmer, Printer, 1835), 19, (archive.org), 10/30/2020;

⁵⁹⁵ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial # 21773794, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁵⁹⁶ *Massachusetts Compiled Marriages, 1633 – 1850*, FHL film # 0164691, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Mayflower Marriages*, <online database>, (ancestry.com), *John Alden*, 14, 10/30/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol 21* (1867), "Early Bridgewater Marriages," 228, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁵⁹⁷ *Mayflower Births and Deaths, Vol 1*, 43, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Mayflower Family Tree*, by user CC; (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; John Adams Vinton, *The Vinton Memorial, comprising a genealogy of the descendants of John Vinton of Lynn, 1648...*, (Boston, SK Whipple & Co, 1858), 293, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/30/2020.

- iv. DAVID ALDEN, b. 18 June 1727; d. Ashfield, Franklin, Massachusetts 12 Aug 1809 at age 80; m. Middleborough, Plymouth, Massachusetts 1 Nov 1753 Lucy Thomas (1733 – 1818), daughter of Noah Thomas of Middleborough; they removed to Ashfield.
- v. JOSHUA ALDEN, b. 19 Apr 1729; d. 21 Mar 1809, in his 90th year; buried at Bridgewater; m. Bridgewater 16 Apr 1781 Mary (Carver) Alden, 1st wife of his cousin Seth Alden, son of Capt. Seth Alden. Mary (Carver) Alden, d. 2 Dec 1811, age 63 years.
- vi. CALEB ALDEN, b. 20 Apr 1731; d. 21 Apr 1733, age 2 years.
- vii. EZRA ALDEN, b. 22 June 1734; deacon at Greenwich, Hampshire, Massachusetts; d. there 1818, age 84; m. (1) Stafford, Tolland, Connecticut, 16 Oct 1760 Miriam Richardson (1743 – 1769) of Stafford; m. (2) Hardwick, Worcester, Massachusetts 2 Jan 1772 Sarah (Ruggles) Harwood (1743 -) of Hardwick.
- viii. TIMOTHY ALDEN, b. 24 Nov 1736; H.C. 1794;⁵⁹⁸ ordained pastor, 13 Dec 1769 Yarmouth, Barnstable, Massachusetts; d. 13 Nov 1828, age 92 having been a pastor for 59 years; m. Attleborough 22 Nov 1770 Sarah Weld (1738 – 1796), daughter of Rev. Habijah Weld; she, d. 1796, age 58.

Division of the estate (particularly his Weymouth lands), of Joseph Shaw, weaver, late of Bridgewater, was ordered on 22 April 1719. His eldest son Joseph Shaw Jr. was to receive all the land and make payments to his brothers and sisters including Martha Shaw 10£, 18s, 2d. apiece (Suffolk Probate, 21: 374-375).⁵⁹⁹ A division dated 24 July 1719 is also filed at Plymouth. (Suffolk Co PR #4,162, 21:374-375; Plymouth Co PR, #17,969, 4:186-187)⁶⁰⁰

Her sisters Abigail Alden, Ruth Snow and Hannah Snow married Eleazar's brother Daniel and his cousins James Snow and Isaac Snow (respectively).

On 18 March 1724/5, Deacon Joseph Alden made a deed of gift to his son Eleazar Alden for lots of 20 acres, 15 acres and 1/3 acre. (Plymouth Co LR 20:13) On 12 September 1733, the Selectmen of Bridgewater warned Elizabeth Hedge to depart town and warned Eleazar Alden not to “entertain her any longer.” (Plymouth Co Ct Recs, 2:182) Eleazar and Martha Alden, with Isaac and Elizabeth Harris and Daniel and Abigail Alden, sold to David Dunbar on 3 October 1734, their rights in one half of the 20 acres 12th lot near the upper end of West Meadow in Bridgewater, it being 3/11th's part of the half lot. (Plymouth Co LR 36:12)

⁵⁹⁸ My best guess is that H.C. is Harvard College. His son, the Rev Timothy Alden graduated from Harvard University, and went on to found Allegheny College in Pennsylvania;
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Timothy_Alden

⁵⁹⁹ Weymouth Historical Society, et. al, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts, Vol 4*: 613-614 (going back to p. 611 for immigrant ancestor Abraham Shaw), (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶⁰⁰ Esther Littleford Woodworth-Barnes, compiler, Alicia Carne Williams, editor, *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations*, (General Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1999), Vol 16, Part 1, *Family of John Alden*, 340-342, found at Albuquerque/Bernalillo County Library Systems/Downtown Albuquerque, second floor Genealogy Center.

On 1 February 1735/6, Eleazar Alden and his wife Martha, Daniel Alden and his wife Abigail, widow Hannah Snow, Eleazar Snow, John Shaw, Eleazar Washburn and Noah Washburn, all of Bridgewater, and Hannah (Washburn) Whitmarsh of Weymouth, Suffolk county, sold to Zecheus Shaw of Bridgewater, their right, title and interest in the reversion in a tract of land in the estate of their father and grandfather Joseph Shaw of Bridgewater which was set off to their mother Judith Shaw, as her dowry in the estate,⁶⁰¹ this together with the Grist Mill, one half of the dwelling house, and one third of the barn and was bounded on their brother Joseph Shaw. (Plymouth Co LR, 34:126)⁶⁰²

Eleazar Alden Sr. and his son Eleazar Alden Jr. were at Poughkeepsie, New York in October 1744 when he lodged a complaint against Robert Jones of Stoughton, innholder, for a note made 18 August 1741. (Dutchess Co NY, Ancient Documents #2003)

Eleazar Alden of Bridgewater gave land in Stafford Connecticut to his eldest son Jonathan Alden and his son David Alden, both of Stafford, on 16 January 1749/50; Jonathan got the west half and David the east half of a lot Eleazer Sr. had bought from Daniel Warner. Eleazer Alden Jr. and Ezra Alden witnessed both deeds. (Stafford LR 2: 263, 268)

Ebenezer Alden of Stafford, Eleazar's first cousin, sold 14 acres in Stafford to Ebenezer (sic for Eleazar) Alden of Bridgewater on 14 January 1756. On that same day, Eleazar Alden of Bridgewater, yeoman, gave to his son Ezra of Bridgewater, laborer, two tracts in Stafford, 60 acres he had purchased of Timothy Jones and 14 acres he had purchased of Ebenezer Alden. (Stafford LR 3:264, 294)

On 6 January 1769, at age 69, Martha (Shaw) Alden died and was buried in First Cemetery, Bridgewater.⁶⁰³ Several months later, on 2 May 1769, the Will of Eleazar Alden, was dated at Bridgewater, Plymouth Co, Massachusetts, and recorded.

In 1772, the year before his death, Eleazer Alden Sr. sold a piece of land in Bridgewater to Benjamin Whitman. The deed details the sale for the sum of 29£ 6s 8p (still using antiquated measurements, which isn't surprising, considering the date). This deed is in excellent shape with two wax seals. It contains the following names: Eleazer Alden, Sarah Alden, Benjamin Whitman, Nicholas Whitman.⁶⁰⁴

⁶⁰¹ http://maltbyfamily.net/genealogies/washburn/washburn_plymouth_26.html citing: *Plymouth County Land Records*, Vol 34:136, from microfilm #0558825, recorded 13 June 1741, (Website has live link), 10/30/2020.

⁶⁰² *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations*, Vol 16, Part 1, Family of John Alden, 341.

⁶⁰³ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850*, Bridgewater Vol 2, Bridgewater Deaths, 424 (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020; *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations*, Vol 16, Part 1, Family of John Alden, 340; U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #21765874, (ancestry.com), 10/30//2020.

⁶⁰⁴ Native Soil, *Native Soil Manuscripts Index*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1999), #0927, *Property Deed*, 1772, Bridgewater, Massachusetts, 10/30/2020.

Eleazer Alden Sr., died in Bridgewater, Massachusetts 29 January 1773, and is buried in the Summer Street Cemetery, Bridgewater, Massachusetts.⁶⁰⁵ His tombstone reads:

Here lies buried Eleazar Alden, who died 29 January 1773 in the 79th year of his age,
Laid in the dust he must abide, There sleeping by his consort's side;
Ye children living come and see Where both your lov'd parents be.
Then follow in the paths they trod, Till you shall rest with Christ in God.⁶⁰⁶

The Will of Eleazer Alden is presented (probated) and the bond dated 1 February 1773

Eleazer Alden, advanced in years...He named his son Joshua Alden executor and gave him part of his homestead, "the north side of the road leading by my door," land adjoining the Great River on the Northeast corner of Bailey's Plain, 1/6 of his wearing apparel and books and all cases livestock and personal estate not disposed of otherwise. To his son Eleazar, he gave part of his homestead, one half of a cedar swamp lot and purchase rights, and 1/6 of his wearing apparel and books. To his other sons Jonathan. , David, Ezra and Timothy, he left besides what he had formerly given them, 1/6 of his wearing apparel and books. (Plymouth Co PR, #87, 21:228-29)

Sureties were Josiah Richards, Christopher Sever. Witnesses: Samuel Baldwin, Edward Winslow Jr.⁶⁰⁷

On 28 March 1785, Joshua Alden, Gentleman, and Eleazer Alden (Jr.), yeoman, both of Bridgewater, sold 1½ acres of Cedar same that had been purchased by their father Mr. Eleazar Alden, deceased.

Martha (Shaw) Alden, wife of Eleazer Alden Sr., mother of Jonathan Alden, grandmother of Amos Alden, was the daughter of Joseph (1664-1718) and Judith (Whitmarsh) Shaw (1669-1760), b. Bridgewater, Massachusetts 9 Jan 1700;⁶⁰⁸ d. 6 Jan. 1769, age 69;⁶⁰⁹ m. 1720 Eleazar Alden. Her tombstone reads:

Here lies buried Mrs. Martha Alden, the wife of Mr. Eleazar Alden,
who died 6 January 1769 aged 69 years.
The Resurrection Day will come, And Christ's strong voice will burst this tomb,
The sleeping dead we trust will rise,
With joy and pleasure in her eyes, and ever shine among the wise.⁶¹⁰

⁶⁰⁵ *Mayflower Births and Deaths*, Vol 1, Alden, 42, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records*, 1620-1988, *Bridgewater Town Records*, 34, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *North America Family Histories 1500 – 2000*, *The ancestors and descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife, (1599 – 1903)*, 9-10, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶⁰⁶ Williams Lathan, *Epitaphs in Old Bridgewater, Massachusetts*, 63, #15, <archive.org>, 10/30/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #21773794; Personal email from cousin Thomas Skinner, 9/7/2021.

⁶⁰⁷ *Massachusetts, Wills and Probate Records*, 1635 – 1991, Plymouth Massachusetts Probate Estate Files #72-112, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Mayflower Deeds and Probates 1600 – 1850*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2013), Alden 27, 10/30/2020.

⁶⁰⁸ *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records*, 1620-1988, *Bridgewater, Vital Record Transcripts, Bridgewater Births*, 289, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *North America Family Histories 1500 – 2000*, *The Ancestors and Descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife, (1599-1903)*, 10, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶⁰⁹ *Massachusetts: Vital Records*, 1620-1850, *Bridgewater Deaths* 424, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020; *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations*, Vol 16, Part 1, *Family of John Alden*, 340; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #21765875, (ancestry.com), 10/28/2020.

⁶¹⁰ Williams Lathan, *Epitaphs in Old Bridgewater, Massachusetts*, 63. <archive.org>; Personal email from cousin Thomas Skinner, 9/7/2021.

Shaw Family Ancestry

Shaw is a locational surname. As a topographical name, Shaw was used for someone who lived by a copse, wood, or thicket, derived from the Old English pre 7th century *sceaga*, “a copse or small wood.” Or from the Scotch: “a plain surrounded by trees or open space between woods.”

Martha Shaw, was the daughter of Joseph Shaw, b. Weymouth, Norfolk, Massachusetts 15 Apr 1664, son of John and Alice Shaw;⁶¹¹ d. Bridgewater, 14 Sept 1718, age 54;⁶¹² m. Weymouth 1686/87 Judith Whitmarsh,⁶¹³ b. 2 Sept 1669, daughter of John Whitmarsh Jr. and Sarah Harding, d. 1760.

Children:⁶¹⁴

- i. ELIZABETH SHAW, b. Weymouth, Norfolk, Massachusetts 26 Sept 1687; d. unknown; m. Noah Washburn; m. (2) Isaac Harris.
- ii. JOSEPH SHAW JR., b. Weymouth 11 Jan 1691; d. Weymouth 25 Mar 1742; m. 1716 Mary Blanchard.
- iii. JUDITH SHAW, b. Weymouth 4 May 1693; d. Weymouth 8 Feb 1716 (unsourced).
- iv. ABIGAIL SHAW, b. Weymouth 17 July 1695; d. Stafford, Tolland, Connecticut 12 July 1755 m. Daniel Alden of Bridgewater, brother to Eleazar Alden.

About 1696, the family moves to ancient Bridgewater, now the town of East Bridgewater.⁶¹⁵ The following five children are born there:

- v. RUTH SHAW, b. Bridgewater 25 Jan 1698; d. Plymouth 1736; m. East Bridgewater 7 Feb 1759 Joseph Snow.
- ix. **MARTHA SHAW**, b. Bridgewater 9 Jan 1700; d. Bridgewater 6 Jan 1760; m. Bridgewater 11 May 1720 **Eleazer Alden**.

⁶¹¹ *North America, Family Histories 1500 – 2000, The Damon family: listing some of the Ohio descendants of Amos Damon of Chesterfield, Mass...*, 140, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register, “Early Records of Weymouth, Vol 3:”* 72, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶¹² *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Bridgewater Vol 2: Bridgewater Deaths*, 554, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020; *North America, Family Histories 1500 – 2000, The Damon family: listing some of the Ohio descendants of Amos Damon of Chesterfield, Mass...*, 140, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #116249608*, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶¹³ *North America, Family Histories 1500-2000, The Damon Family...*, 140, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *New England Marriages to 1700, Vol 2*, 1358, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶¹⁴ *North America, Family Histories 1500-2000, The Damon Family...*, 140, 10/30/2020.

⁶¹⁵ *Representative men and old families of southeastern Massachusetts: containing historical sketches of prominent and representative ...* <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), Vol 2: 886, 10/30/2020.

- x. HANNAH SHAW, b. Bridgewater 31 July 1704; d. Bridgewater 30 Mar 1762; m. Bridgewater 1743 Isaac Snow.
- xi. EBENEZER SHAW, b. Bridgewater 13 July 1706; d. Bridgewater 24 May 1776; m. Bridgewater 14 Jun 1733 Mary Reed.
- xii. JOHN SHAW, b. Bridgewater 13 Apr 1708; d. Weymouth 29 Apr 1791.
- xiii. ZACHARIAH SHAW (Deacon), b. Bridgewater 28 June 1711; d. Bridgewater 23 Jan 1792; m. Bridgewater 1733 Sarah Packard, daughter of Daile Packard. Zachariah served in the Revolutionary War.

In 1676, Joseph Shaw is found in the listing of *Massachusetts Officers and Soldiers in the 17th C Conflicts*, Savage Regiment.⁶¹⁶ In 1691, he is listed among the Freeman of Massachusetts Bay Colony.⁶¹⁷ He is a Petit Juror for the Inferior Court of Common Pleas beginning 17 December 1700.⁶¹⁸ He is listed as a Grand Juror for the year ensuing 1715-16.⁶¹⁹ The name Joseph Shaw appears in other Plymouth Court Records, but I am unsure if it is “our” Joseph Shaw.

Joseph Shaw, died in Bridgewater, 14 September 1718, age 54.⁶²⁰ His handwritten Will is found on americanancestors.org.⁶²¹ His wife Judith was appointed executrix. After he died, a division of his land in Weymouth was ordered on 22 April 1719.⁶²² Eldest son Joseph should have the land and pay a certain sum to each of his siblings, among them Abigail (Shaw) Alden, wife of Daniel:

**Property Deed # 0983 - Bridgewater, Massachusetts - 1719
Joseph Shaw, Isaac Harris, Isaac Alden, Josiah Edson, ____ Cary ...**

This is a property deed from 1719 describing the sale of a piece of land from a husbandman farmer named Joseph Shaw, to a yeoman farmer Isaac Harris, for the sum of one hundred and forty pounds. Apparently, Shaw had seized this land and had it appraised by three other parties for the said amount. The transaction was made on "April the Twenty Seventh in the Fifth year of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lord George King of Great Britain!"⁶²³

⁶¹⁶ *Colonial Soldiers and Officers in New England, 1620-1775*, 212, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2013), 10/30/2020.

⁶¹⁷ *Massachusetts: Miscellaneous Census Substitutes, 1630-1788, 1840, 1890*: S1s, line 2751735, *MA Census Substitute 1630-1888*: p.13229, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶¹⁸ *Plymouth County, MA: Plymouth Court Records, 1686-1859, Vol 1*: 48, (CD-ROM New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2002, ©2002, Pilgrim Society, Boston, MA), <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2008), 10/30/2020.

⁶¹⁹ *Plymouth County, MA: Plymouth Court Records, 1686-1859, Plymouth Court Records 1686-1859, Vol 1*: 85, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶²⁰ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Bridgewater Vol 2: Bridgewater Deaths*, 554, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020; *North America, Family Histories 1500 – 2000, The Damon family...*, 140, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave*, Memorial #116249608, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶²¹ *Plymouth County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1686-1881*, (americanancestors.org), 12/15/2020.

⁶²² *Suffolk County, MA: Index to Probate Records, 1636-1895, Case #4162, Suffolk Probate Index V. 3*, 149, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020; *Suffolk County, MA: Probate File Papers, Case type: division, Suffolk Cases 4000-5999, 4162:1 -27*, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶²³ *Native Soil, Native Soils Manuscripts Index*, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

Judith (Whitmarsh) Shaw, died in Bridgewater, 8 February 1760, at 91 years of age.⁶²⁴ Her epitaph is said to be quoted at page 319 of Anthony Adverse, the 1933 epic historical novel by Hervey Allen.⁶²⁵

Whitmarsh Family Ancestry

Whitmarsh is most likely a habitational name from White Marsh, a 'lost' hamlet in the parish of Sedgehill, county Wiltshire. It is a "from" name. That is to say, the surname was given to people when they left White Marsh and moved somewhere else. It comes from the Old English *hwit*, "white" (i.e. chalky or phosphorescent) and *mersc*, "marsh."

Martha Shaw, wife of Eleazar Alden Sr. was the daughter of Joseph Shaw; m. Weymouth, Massachusetts 1686/87 Judith Whitmarsh,⁶²⁶ b. 2 Sept 1669,⁶²⁷ daughter of John Whitmarsh Jr. and Sarah Harding; d. Bridgewater, Plymouth, Massachusetts 8 Feb 1760, age 91.⁶²⁸

John Whitmarsh Jr., bapt. 7 Mar 1624 Shepton Mallet, Mendip District, Somerset, England;⁶²⁹ d. 15 Dec Weymouth 1709, age 84/85.⁶³⁰ Arrived Massachusetts in 1635 with his father and other members of his family, age 11; ⁶³¹ m. Weymouth ca. 1654, age 30, Sarah Harding.⁶³²

⁶²⁴ *North America, Family Histories 1500 – 2000, The Damon family...*, 140, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #116249847, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶²⁵ *Alden Genealogy, Fourth Generation*, 212, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004), 10/30/2020; Hervey Allen, *Anthony Adverse*, 319, (Farrar & Rinehart, Inc., 1933), (books.google.com, not fully searchable.) I have been unable to locate the epitaph as of 10/30/2020. At the top of page 319 is reference to the epitaph of Martha Alden, (Mrs. Eleazer); https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Anthony_Adverse, 8/3/2020.

⁶²⁶ *Massachusetts Compiled Marriages*, FHL film # 0164691, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Mayflower Marriages, John Alden*, 14, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 21 (1867), "Early Bridgewater Marriages," 228, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Mayflower Marriages, John Alden*, 14, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶²⁷ *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, Weymouth Vital Record Transcripts, Weymouth Births*, 351, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; Savage, Dexter & Farmer, *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England...*, Vol IV: 525, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶²⁸ *Representative men and old families of southeastern Massachusetts*, 866 (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #116249847, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶²⁹ *England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1918*, FHL Film #95273, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶³⁰ *Genealogy of the descendants of John Whitmarsh of Weymouth, Mass.*, 14, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005); U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial # 63359624, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶³¹ *U. S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists*, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020, citing Charles Edward Banks, *Planters of the Commonwealth...*, 125, (Boston, Houghton Mifflin Co, 1930), (archive.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶³² *New England Marriages to 1700, 1657*, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020.

Children all born, and if not noted, died in Weymouth, Norfolk, Massachusetts:⁶³³

- i. SARAH WHITMARSH, b. abt. 1653; d. 20 Mar 1717; m. 1671 Joseph Pittee.
- ii. JOHN WHITMARSH III, also called INCREASE, b. 23 Aug 1655; d. Weymouth bef. 12 May 1695, date of probate.
- iii. EBENEZER WHITMARSH (DEACON), b. 14 May 1658; d. Abington, Plymouth 8 Apr 1718; m. 1683 Christian Bayley; seven children.
- iv. SIMON WHITMARSH, b. 11 May 1661; d. bef. 1695 when his father's Will was made.
- v. MARY WHITMARSH, b. 4 Aug 1663; d. Weymouth 21 Dec 1715; m. 1682 Increase Bates; nine children; d. 21 Dec 1715.
- vi. DEBORAH WHITMARSH, b. 1665; d. Weymouth 1718; m. 1686 Nicholas Shaw, son of John and Alice (Phillips) Shaw.
- vii. ZACHARIAH WHITMARSH, b. 1 Sept 1667; d. At Sea 1695/6. (Perhaps he and his younger brother James were aboard the same ship?)
- viii. JUDITH WHITMARSH, b. 2 Sept 1669; d. Bridgewater, Plymouth, Massachusetts 8 Feb 1760; m. **Joseph Shaw Sr.**; eleven children.
- ix. EZRA WHITMARSH, b. 13 Oct 1670; d. Weymouth 1 Aug 1754; m. Boston 20 Jan 1693 Bethsheba Richards; ten children. .
- x. JANE WHITMARSH, b. 8 Sept 1675; d. 22 May 1695, not mentioned in her father's Will.
- xi. JAMES WHITMARSH, b. 8 Sept 1676; d. At Sea 22 May 1695.
- xii. RUTH WHITMARSH, b. 29 Sept 1677; d. Weymouth abt. 1706; m. 16 Dec 1696 David Carver of Weymouth; three children; named in her father's Will.

The General Court of Massachusetts passed an order on 8 July 1635, permitting Rev. Joseph Hull's company of twenty-one families to settle at Wessaguscus, incorporated under the name Weymouth on 2 September 1635.

Town records show John Whitmarsh Sr. owned several pieces of land in Weymouth before 1644, including 2 acres upon the plain, 3 acres upon King Oak Hill, 2 acres in the west field, 2½ acres of fresh marsh, 5 acres on King Oak Hill, besides other lands. In the description of John Harding's land, mention is made of "half an acre of fresh marsh which he gave to John Whitmarsh Jr., (his son-in-law), son of the aforesaid John Whitmarsh Sr." This description establishes the fact that John Whitmarsh, immigrant, had a son John. (Weymouth History 1:189)

John Whitmarsh Jr. enlisted in the Weymouth Militia in King Phillips War, Capt. Torrey's Co. on 10 December 1675.⁶³⁴ He is listed in the 1675 *Massachusetts Early Census Index*, being of

⁶³³ *Genealogy of the descendants of John Whitmarsh of Weymouth, Mass.*, 14, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *North America, Family Histories 1500 – 2000, The Damon family...*, 143, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; Weymouth Historical Society, et. al, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts*, Vol 4: 759, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶³⁴ *Colonial Soldiers and Officers in New England, 1620-1775*, 251, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020; *Genealogy of the descendants of John Whitmarsh of Weymouth, Mass.*, 14, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Vital Records from The NEHGS*

Weymouth.⁶³⁵ Administration of the estate of John Harding of Weymouth, deceased (Sarah (Harding) Whitmarsh's father), was granted to John Whitmarsh on 31 October 1682, in right of his wife, only child of said Harding.

There is a Freeman's Application for John Whitmarsh on 18 April 1691.⁶³⁶ It seems that John Whitmarsh Jr. was a bit older than most men who applied to be Freeman, perhaps this is a record for his son John III?

Several acres of land once belonging to John Whitmarsh Jr. were granted to Joseph Shaw (his son-in-law) and Stephen French. The French family name appeared in Chapter Two of this Peter and Hannah (Alden) Abbey line. (Weymouth History 1:184,185, 192)

Sarah (Harding) Whitmarsh, d. Weymouth, before 22 May 1693,⁶³⁷ which is the date of her husband's Will, and she is not mentioned. As his Will was probated 15 December 1709,⁶³⁸ he long outlived his wife. His handwritten Will gives the names of children: Sarah, Deborah, Ruth and Mary, not named in the Weymouth records, and a grandson Richard. John Whitmarsh Jr. may have been 84-85 years old at the time of his death. His Will can be viewed on americanancestors.org.

He bequeathed to sons John, Ebenezer, Zachariah (to be executor if he returned from sea), and Ezra; daughters Sarah, Mary, Deborah, Judith Shaw and Ruth. "If son Zachariah should miscarry as my son James did and not come home his portion to be divided between my three grandchildren, Joseph Petty (Sarah's son), John Bates (Mary's son), and Richard Whitmarsh."⁶³⁹

John Whitmarsh Sr. the immigrant ancestor of the Whitmarsh family in America, was from Shepton Mallet, Somerset, England;⁶⁴⁰ b. abt. 1596 (age 39 on 20 Mar 1634/5) (Hotten 284);⁶⁴¹ d. Weymouth, Norfolk Co, Massachusetts, bef. 1644;⁶⁴² m. (1) Shepton Mallet, Margaret ____;

Register, Vol 8: 242; *Indian War Papers*, Capt. Johnson's Company (Abiel Lamb of Roxbury is also in this company), (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶³⁵ *Massachusetts, Compiled Census and Census Substitutes, Index, 1790 – 1890*, 242, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Massachusetts: Miscellaneous Census Substitutes, 1630-1788, 1840, 1890*, S1a, line 3465696, p. 8137, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶³⁶ *Massachusetts Application of Freeman 1630-1691, Vol 3:10*, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020; *Massachusetts: Miscellaneous Census Substitutes, 1630-1788, 1840, 1890*, Vol S1a line 3465697 p. 13248, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020.

⁶³⁷ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #63359607, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶³⁸ *Suffolk County, MA: Probate File Papers*, Will: Suffolk Cases 2000-3999, Case #3216:1, 3 pages, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020; *Suffolk County, MA: Index to Probate Records, 1636-1895, Suffolk Probate Index V. 3: 338*, (americanancestors.org), 10/30/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #63359624, (ancestry.com), 10/30/2020.

⁶³⁹ *Genealogy of the descendants of John Whitmarsh of Weymouth, Mass*, 14, (ancestry.com), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁴⁰ *Great Migration 1634-1635, Vol VII, T- Y*, 363 – 366, (americanancestors.org), 10/31/2020,

⁶⁴¹ Hotten, *The Original lists of persons ...*, (archive.org), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁴² U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #63359758, (ancestry.com), 11/16/2020.

m. (2) Shepton Mallet 9 June 1623 Alice Garment (Dwelly 2:229),⁶⁴³ bapt. Batcombe, Somerest, England 26 Apr 1697, daughter of Richard Garment.⁶⁴⁴

Children by his first wife:

- i. ALICE WHITMARSH, b. by 1623, bur. 12 Jan 1623/4, daughter of John Whitmarsh. (Dwelly 2:229)

Children by his second wife:

- ii. **JOHN WHITMARSH JR.**, bapt. 7 Mar 1623/4 (Dwelly 2:229)⁶⁴⁵ age 11, 20 Mar 1634/5 (Hotten 284); deposed aged abt. 40 years of age, 26 July 1655 (SJC case 815); m. by 1655 **Sarah Harding** (their eldest known child, b. Weymouth 23 Aug 1655), daughter of John Harding. On 31 Oct 1682, administration of the estate of John Harding, late of Weymouth deceased, intestate, is granted unto John Whitmarsh in right to his wife the only child of said Harding. (SPR 9:92, Weymouth History 3:254)
- iii. JANE WHITMARSH, b. abt. 1628; age 7 on 20 Mar 1634/5, (Hotten 284); sailed for New England with family, no further record.
- iv. ONESIPHORUS WHITMARSH, bapt. 17 Jan 1629/30 (Dwelly 2:235); age 5 on 20 Mar 1634/5 (Hotten 284); living at Weymouth in 1643 (Weymouth History 189); d. Weymouth 1719 (unsourced).
- v. RICHARD WHITMARSH, b. abt. 1633; age 2 on 20 Mar 1634/5 (Hotten 284); m. Weymouth 2 Dec 1658 Hannah Reed.

John Whitmarsh Sr. was one of Rev. Joseph Hull's company that sailed from Weymouth, England 20 March 1635 aboard the *Marygould*. The family is given in the passenger list as follows:⁶⁴⁶

- Jno. Whitmarsk, aged 39 yeare
- Alce Whitmarke, his Wife, aged 35 yeare

⁶⁴³ *England: Marriages, 1538-1973*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org. New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), (Original index: *England Marriages, 1538-1973*, FamilySearch, 2014.) FHL Film #95273, pg. 48490127; *New England Marriages to 1700*, 1657, (americanancestors.org), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁴⁴ *England, Select Births and Christenings*, FHL film #95274, (ancestry.com), 10/31/2020; Wells, Somerset, England, Bishops' transcripts 1594-1736, *The Bishop's Transcripts at Wells, Vol 1:61*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2014), originally published 1914 by E. Dwelly as *Dwelly's Parish Records*, (see other references to Dwelly), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁴⁵ *England: Births and Christenings, 1538-1975*, FHL film #95273, pg. 65722251, (americanancestors.org), 10/31/2020,

⁶⁴⁶ *Passengers to America, More Passengers for New England*, 77, <online database>, (ancestry.com), 10/31/2020.

- Jms Whitmarcke, his sonne, aged 11 yeare, (b. abt. 1624). There is no further mention of James and some historians believe this should be John Whitmarsh Jr. who arrived, age eleven.⁶⁴⁷
- Jane, his daughter, aged 7 yeare (b. abt. 1628)
- Onseph Whitemark, his sonne, aged 5 years (b. abt. 1630)
- Rich Whytemark, his sonne, aged 2 years (b. abt. 1633)

Other sons include:⁶⁴⁸

- vi. SIMON WHITMARSH, b. Weymouth ca. 1637; d. Weymouth 1708; m. (1) by 1667 Sarah Holbrook (eldest known child, b. Weymouth 29 Sept 1667), daughter of John Holbrook, who in his Will of 12 July 1669: "John Holbrook of the town of Weymouth, bequeathed to my son in law Simon Whitmarsh, 20 pounds, and to my grandson Simon Whitmarsh, 20 pounds (SPR 14:111-114); m. (2) by 1695 Elizabeth ____ (eldest known child b. Weymouth 14 Nov 1695.)⁶⁴⁹
- vii. NICHOLAS WHITMARSH, m. Hannah Reed; eight children. Note: We have no data to show the age of Nicholas. *The Great Migration* offers a Weymouth birth in 1673 for Simon, which would mean he owned land at age 7, which isn't likely. One author writes, "possibly Nicholas, along with Simon, were elder sons who came over after the family was established in the colonies."⁶⁵⁰ Without better records, the question won't be answered.

The English home of the immigrant is not positively determined. Still, there is reason to think he came from Batcombe, Somerset Co, England, as *The Genealogy of Richard Porter of Weymouth*, mentions among those who came to Weymouth, Massachusetts, were John Whitmarsh and a William Reed of Batcombe. Batcombe is about 6 ½ miles southeast of Shepton Mallet and 26 miles south of Bristol. There are Whitmarsh families in the south of England today.

On 8 July 1635, the General Court of Massachusetts passed an order permitting Rev. Joseph Hull's company of twenty-one families to settle, "sit down" at Wessaguscus, incorporated under the name of Weymouth 2 September 1635. The shipping list turned up in England in 1870, some 235 years later.

In the Weymouth Land Inventory of about 1643, there is also a description of lands belonging to Nicholas, Richard, Onesiphorus and Simon Whitmarsh, mentioning 9 acres in the wester-neck, first given to their father, John Whitmarsh Sr., deceased. The record proves that John

⁶⁴⁷ *The New England Ancestry of Dana Converse Backus*, <online database> (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), Whitmarsh, 185 – 186, 10/31/2020; *Planters of the Commonwealth in Massachusetts, 1620-1640, Lists of Passengers and the Ships Which Brought Them – 1635*, 126, <online database>, (ancestry.com), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁴⁸ *Representative men and old families of southeastern Massachusetts, Vol III*: 1537, (ancestry.com), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁴⁹ Dwelly, found in footnote #566 on the previous page and Hotten, found in footnote #564 on the previous page.

⁶⁵⁰ *Ibid.*, (ancestry.com), 10/31/2020; *Genealogy of the descendants of John Whitmarsh of Weymouth, Mass*, 11-15, (ancestry.com), 10/31/2020.

Whitmarsh, immigrant, died before 1644. It also confirms the existence of two sons Nicholas and Simon, not mentioned in the passenger list. (Weymouth History 1:189) Town records show that John Whitmarsh owned several pieces of land in Weymouth, before 1644, including "2 acres upon the plains, 3 acres upon King Oak Hill, 2 acres in west field, 2 ½ acres of fresh marsh, 5 acres on King Oak Hill besides other lands."

There is no record of the death of John Whitmarsh Sr., or his wife Alice, except for the fact that he died before 1644. (Weymouth History 189)

Harding Family Ancestry

Harding was a name for a hard working or arduous person, deriving its origin from name the Old French word *harding*, which meant "hard." It can also be from Germanic compound personal names beginning with *hard*, "hardy, brave, strong."

Sarah Harding, wife of John Whitmarsh Jr., b. England abt. 1634/5,⁶⁵¹ to John Harding and ____; d. Weymouth, Massachusetts bef. 22 May 1695.⁶⁵²

Her father, John Harding, appears in Weymouth, Massachusetts records in 1641-1651, in Gloucester, Massachusetts in 1652-1655, and back in Weymouth in 1656-1682. John Harding's parents are unknown. Several different theories have been proposed, but they have all either been disproved or found to be not supported by reliable evidence. For a lengthy discussion of these see: <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Harding-456>.

Wilbur J. Harding, in *Hardings in America*, stated John was born in 1620. However, like many of the claimed facts in *Hardings in America*, that date is implausible given his daughter's estimated date of birth, and the fact that John was on Weymouth's governing body in 1641.⁶⁵³ John Harding was very probably born somewhere in England, married there between 1630 and 1635. Because there is no evidence of his wife in New England, she may have died before John and his daughter Sarah, immigrated. She certainly died before April 1652, when John, married in Gloucester, Massachusetts, (2) "Widdow Tibbit."⁶⁵⁴ There is no evidence that John had any other children.

⁶⁵¹ U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560 – 1900, (ancestry.com), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁵² U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #63359607, (ancestry.com), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁵³ Wilbur J. Harding, *The Hardings in America; a genealogical register of the descendants of John Harding, of England, born A.D. 1567*, (Keystone Ia, The Harding Printing Co., 1925), 17-24, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁵⁴ Gloucester, (Mass.), *Vital Records of Gloucester, Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849*, Vol II: 258 Marriages, (The Topsfield Historical Society, Topsfield, Mass, 1917 – 1924), (archive.org), 10/31/2020.

The first record that relates to John Harding is that of a Weymouth town meeting in December 1641. However, there is a record of a John Harding being made a freeman of the Massachusetts Bay Colony on 13 May 1640.⁶⁵⁵ It is generally believed (and seems probable) that this record relates to “our” John Harding. Based on the assumption that the May 1640 record does relate to him, he likely immigrated in 1639, or perhaps slightly earlier.

In 1641, John Harding was one of five men who were part of Weymouth’s governing board. A listing of the lands held by various Weymouth townsmen, made about 1643, showed that John Harding held three different parcels, totaling 12 acres, 10 of which he had apparently purchased from John Whitmarsh (father of his future son-in-law) and two from Thomas Holbrooke. In February 1651/2 John was listed among the men who received a lot in a Weymouth division of land on the Great Pond’s east side.⁶⁵⁶

It appears that John Harding was one of several men who removed from Weymouth to Gloucester, and then left Gloucester in the mid-1650s. The Rev. William Perkins moved from Weymouth to Gloucester in 1650, and then moved from Gloucester to Topsfield in 1655, while Robert Tucker moved from Gloucester to Weymouth in 1651 and then, like John Harding, returned to Gloucester in 1656-7. The same William Perkins, and Robert Tucker witnessed the June 1651 Will of Walter Tibbot. The fact that Perkins and Tucker were apparently in Gloucester before John Harding, and were close to Walter Tibbot, suggests that they played matchmaker and convinced John to move to Gloucester to marry Walter's widow.⁶⁵⁷

On 22 February/April 1652, John Harding of Weymouth and Gloucester married Walter Tibbot's widow.⁶⁵⁸ Several deeds between John Harding and a grandson of Walter Tibbot, Richard Dicke/Dike, further confirm that the John Harding who returned to Weymouth in the 1660's was the one who married the “Widdow Tibbit”, or Jone (Hill) Tibbot.

Since Walter Tibbot's Will gave his widow the right to his house and lands in Gloucester during her lifetime, when he married her, John acquired her right to the house and lands during her lifetime. In June 1652, a few months after his marriage, John purchased 4 acres of

⁶⁵⁵ Henry Franklin Andrews, *List of Freemen, Massachusetts Bay Colony, from 1630 to 1691, with the Freemen's Oath, the first paper printed in New England*, (Exira Iowa, Exira Print Co, 1906), 20, (archive.org), 10/31/2020; Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts, Vol 3 Genealogy of Weymouth Families*, 254, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/31/2020; Massachusetts General Court, Nathaniel Bradstreet Shurtleff, *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, Vol I: 1628-1641, Miscellaneous Records*, 377, (Boston, W. White, printer to the commonwealth, 1853-54), <babel.hathitrust.org>, 10/31/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 3 (1849), p. 187 <babel.hathitrust.org>, 10/31/2020; U.S. and Canada, *Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500's-1900's*, citing Lucius R. Page, *List of Freemen of Massachusetts, 1630-1691*, (ancestry.com), 12/15/2020.

⁶⁵⁶ Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts, Vol 1, General History*, 200, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁵⁷ For an extensive study of Walter Tybbot, see Chase W. Ashley, “The English Origins of Walter Tybbot of Gloucester, Massachusetts, and His Wives and Daughters,” *The NEHG Register, Volume 174, No 4, Fall 2021*, 330-341, (Boston, Massachusetts, The New England Historic and Genealogical Society).

⁶⁵⁸ *Massachusetts, Compiled Marriages, 1633 – 1850*, FHL film #086459 & 0864861-0864862, (ancestry.com), 12/15/2020; *Vital Records of Gloucester, Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849, Vol II, Marriages*, 258, (archive.org), 10/31/2020.

additional land on the north side of "John Harden's which was formerly Walter Tibbitts" and an additional 3 acres of salt marsh.⁶⁵⁹ Stage Fort Park in Gloucester is where "our" Walter Knight (Volume One, Chapter III) may have first worked on the fishing stage.⁶⁶⁰

The fact that a 1659 deed refers to land, "that had been given to Walter Tibbatt now in the possession of John Hardinge"⁶⁶¹ means that Jone was still alive as of that date. However, the fact that she was not mentioned in John Harding's estate records and the fact that no right to land in Gloucester is mentioned in John's Inventory,⁶⁶² probably means that she predeceased him. Walter Tybbitt's land in Gloucester may have, sometime earlier reverted to Walter's grandson Richard Dick, per the terms of Walter's Will.⁶⁶³

As one would expect for a man who had been a selectman at Weymouth, John was quickly involved in civic matters after moving to Gloucester. In November 1652 and June 1653, he served on grand juries at Essex County Courts in Salem. In 1654, John was chosen as one of the selectmen of Gloucester. In Essex County Court records of March 1654 and May 1655, John Harding and Robert Tucker were referred to as "commissioners" of Gloucester.⁶⁶⁴

The Essex County Court record from May 1655 is the last record indicating that John was living in Gloucester. However, several later records show that John continued to hold land in Gloucester well after he moved back to Weymouth. A January 1657 deed of land in Gloucester described the land as opening upon John Harding's marsh on the southeast. A June 1659 deed of land in Gloucester described the land as adjoining ten acres "that had been given to Walter Tibbatt now in the possession of John Hardinge." The last Gloucester record of any sort that has been found relating to John Harding is a 7 March 1667/8 deed in which John Hardain of Weymouth deeded to [step-son] Richard Dicke, four ackers of upland.⁶⁶⁵

John Harding appears to have returned to Weymouth. At a town meeting on 24 November 1656, he was elected as one of the Weymouth town selectmen for the following year. In December 1658, he was one of ten men granted additional land by the town of Weymouth. John was also allocated a lot of land in the first and second divisions by the town of

⁶⁵⁹ *Transcript of the First Volume of Gloucester Town Records Commencing 164*, FHL Film #007901750, p. 42, image 202 of 945, viewable only at Family History Centers, 10/31/2020; For his marriage to the widow Tibbit <https://www.ma-vitalrecords.org/MA/Essex/Gloucester/aMarriagesH.shtml>, 10/31/2020.

⁶⁶⁰ Fishing Stages are located at the water's edge or "landwash", and consist of an elevated platform on the shore with working tables and sheds at which fish are landed and processed for salting and drying. Wikipedia.com

⁶⁶¹ *Transcript of the First Volume of Gloucester Town Records Commencing 1642*, FHL Film #007901750, p. 57, image 216 of 945, viewable only at Family History Centers, 10/31/2020.

⁶⁶² *Suffolk County Probate Records, Vol 9: 92*, case 1250, FHL Film # 007703072, image 348 of 502, (familysearch.org), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁶³ *The Probate Records of Essex County, Massachusetts, Volume I (1635-1664)*, 132-133, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁶⁴ Massachusetts County Court (Essex Co.), and George Francis Dow, *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts*, (Salem, Mass., Essex institute, 1911-1975), 329, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/31/2020.

⁶⁶⁵ *Gloucester Town Records, Vol 1*, p. 64, (archive.org), not readable as they are in old script with damaged pages.

Weymouth in late 1663. The last record found for John Harding before his death is his inclusion in a 1678-9 list of persons in Weymouth who took the Oath of Allegiance.⁶⁶⁶

The only evidence whatsoever that suggests what John's occupation was is:

- 1) a Weymouth town record in which the town ordered that John Harding be paid 4s for making a staple for the pound, hooks and hinges for the meeting house and work about the pound.⁶⁶⁷
- 2) the Inventory of John's estate, which included a barn, pasture land, 3 cows, 5 sheep and 2 lambs, and some lumber.

The presence of livestock in John's Inventory suggests that, like many early colonists, John engaged in some farming and husbandry, but does not indicate that that was his primary occupation, at least in his younger years. The payment by the town of Weymouth for John's "making a staple for the pound, hooks and hinges for the meeting house and work about the pound" and having lumber in his Inventory, however, seems more significant and suggests that John may have been a wright or builder of some sort, perhaps a house wright like his son-in-law John Whitmarsh.⁶⁶⁸

John Harding died intestate sometime shortly before 2 October 1682, when John Holbrooke, Samuel White and Stephen French appraised his estate's Inventory.

**The Inventory of John's estate totaled 167£ 06s 00d
and included:**

His dwelling house, barne and adjoining land (60£), pastureland and swampland (30£), 1 ½ acres of salt meadow on the Back River (13£), 12 acres of land in ragged plain (12£), one (1) acre of salt meadow at Buring Island (10£), three cows, five sheep and two lambs (9£), furniture (8£), wearing apparell (5£), various household items (3£,06), lumber (2£), and books (1£).⁶⁶⁹

On 31 October 1682, full power and authority of administering the estate of "John Harding late of Weymouth dec'd intestate" was granted to John Whitmarsh Jr., "in right of his wife the only child of said Harding." John Whitmarsh made an oath in court regarding the accuracy of the Inventory appraisal on 1 Nov 1682. John Whitmarsh and John Holbrooke posted a bond

⁶⁶⁶ Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts. Vol 1: Historical*, 203, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020.

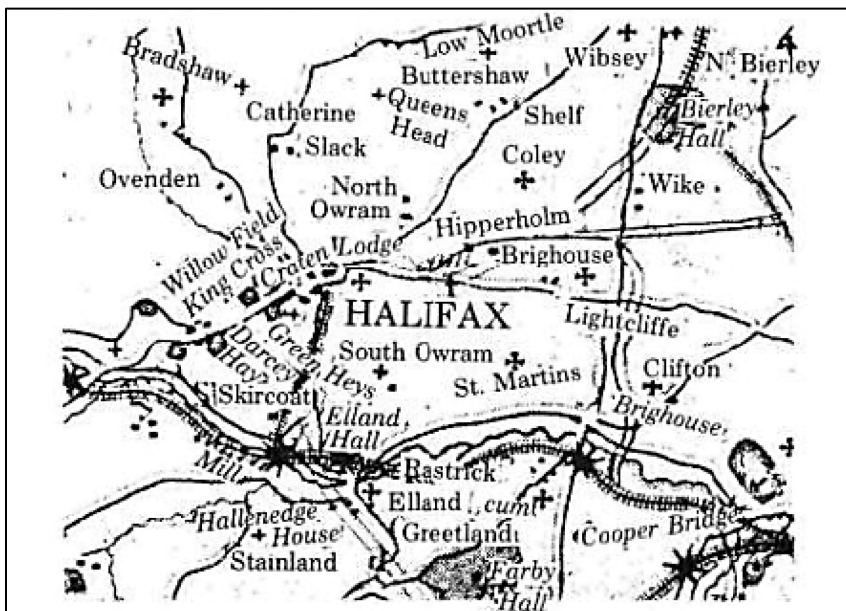
⁶⁶⁷ Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts. Vol 2: Historical*, 511, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁶⁸ *Suffolk County, MA: Index to Probate Records, 1636-1895*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2016.) Originally published as: *Probate Records of the County of Suffolk, Massachusetts, from the year 1636 to and including the year 1895*, (Rockwell & Churchill, City Printers, 1895), Vol 2: 79 (viewed 10/29/2020), indicates a Will and administration papers, though the Will is not viewable; *Suffolk County, MA: Probate File Papers*, (americanancestors.org), 12/15/2020; *Suffolk County Probate Records, Vol 9: 92*, case 1250, FHL Film #102889990, image 92 - 94 of 12,000, (familysearch.org), though I found these 11/1/2020, on 12/15/2020 I was unable to locate them on familysearch.org. *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins...*, Volume III, G-H: Thomas Hayward, 289, (ancestry.com),

⁶⁶⁹ *Suffolk County Probate Records, Vol 9: 92*, case 1250, FHL Film # 007703072, image 348 of 502, top of left page, (familysearch.org), 11/1/2020.

of £300 for the administration, by John Whitmarsh, of the estate of "his late father-in-law John Harding of Weymouth" on 2 November 1682.⁶⁷⁰

Shaw Family Ancestry Continued



The immigrant John Shaw Sr. was born in Halifax, West Yorkshire, England and the townships of North Oram and Hipperholme play a role in this family's ancestry in England.

Joseph Shaw was the son of John Shaw Sr. (Lieut.) bapt. 23 May 1630 Halifax, West Yorkshire, England,⁶⁷¹ son of Abraham, came to New England (1636); d. Weymouth, Massachusetts 16 Sept 1704;⁶⁷² m. Weymouth abt. 1650/1653 Alice Phillips,⁶⁷³ daughter of Nicholas Phillips and Elizabeth Jewson/Jenson. Alice survived him, and with his son John, administered his estate.

⁶⁷⁰ Suffolk County Probate Records, Case 1250, FHL Film #102889990, image 92 - 94 of 12, 000, (familysearch.org), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁷¹ North America, Family Histories, 1500-2002, The Damon family...139, (ancestry.com), 11/1/2020; West Yorkshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1512 - 1812, <online database>, (Lehi, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2011), West Yorkshire Archive Service, Wakefield, Yorkshire, England, Yorkshire Parish Records, New Reference # WDP53/1/1/5, 11/1/2020.

⁶⁷² Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records 1620 - 1988, Weymouth, Vital Records Transcripts, "Weymouth Deaths," 336, (ancestry.com), 11/1/2020; North America, Family Histories, 1500-2002, The Damon family...139, (ancestry.com), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁷³ Memoirs of the Leonard, Thompson and Haskell Families, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), Chap. XXIV, Our Best Line, 272., 11/1/2020; New England Marriages to 1700, Vol 2: 1357, (americanancestors.org), 11/1/2020.

Children: ⁶⁷⁴

- i. JOHN SHAW JR., b. Weymouth, between 1653-55; d. 1718; m. Hannah Whitmarsh, daughter of Nicholas Whitmarsh.
- ii. ELIZABETH SHAW, b. Weymouth 26 Feb 1655/56; d. 1723; m. Weymouth abt. 1673 Joseph Poole, son of Edward Poole.⁶⁷⁵
- iii. ABRAHAM SHAW, b. Weymouth 10 Oct 1657.
- iv. MARY SHAW, b. Weymouth 24 Mar 1659/60; may have d. Norton, Bristol, Massachusetts 8 Aug 1722 m. 1679 Hezekiah King.
- v. NICHOLAS SHAW SR., b. Weymouth 23 Mar/May 1662; d. Weymouth 19 Dec 1717 m. 1686 Deborah Whitmarsh daughter of John Whitmarsh Jr.
- vi. JOSEPH SHAW SR., b. Weymouth 15 Apr 1664; d. 1718; m. abt. 1691 **Judith Whitmarsh**, daughter of John Whitmarsh Jr.
- vii. ALICE SHAW, b. Weymouth 6 July 1666; d. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts 1 Feb 1735; m. Capt. John Andrews Jr., son of John Andrews Sr.
- viii. HANNAH SHAW, b. Weymouth 7 Apr 1668; may have d. Weymouth 22 Sept 1730; m. 1687/89 Gideon Tirrell, son of William Tirrell.
- ix. BENJAMIN SHAW, b. Weymouth 16 June 1670; may have d. Taunton 16 June 1723; m. 1692 Hannah Bicknell, daughter of John Bicknell.
- x. ABIGAIL SHAW, b. Weymouth 15 June 1672; may have d. Dorchester, Suffolk, Massachusetts 24 Oct 1705; m. 1690 Richard Davenport.
- xi. EBENEZER SHAW, b. Weymouth 24 Apr 1674; d. Weymouth 11 Mar 1705; may have m. (1) Susanna ___, d.1698; m. 30 May 1699 (2) Hannah (Pratt) Haines.

John and Alice remained in Weymouth where he probably lived a 'quiet life' as a farmer."

In 1675, John Shaw Sr. served as a Lieutenant with Upham's Company in King Phillip's War against the Narragansetts.⁶⁷⁶ He would have been 45, his son John Jr. would have been in his early 20s, so this record may have been for John Shaw Jr.

John Shaw Sr., died 16 September 1704. He was buried in the North Weymouth Cemetery,⁶⁷⁷ and his Will was probated on 17 October 1704. (Suffolk Probate 15:530) In it, he mentions, among others, Joseph Shaw, born 15 April 1664, having married Judith, daughter of John and Sarah Whitmarsh. Also mentioned as heirs are Joseph Poole and his wife Elizabeth, who, along with his eldest son John Shaw Jr. are named administrators.⁶⁷⁸

⁶⁷⁴ *North America, Family Histories 1500-2000, The Damon Family...*139-140, (ancestry.com), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁷⁵ *Colonial Families of the USA 1607-1775, Vol II, Poole Family*, 585. (ancestry.com), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁷⁶ *Bassett-Preston Ancestors*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), 254, 11/1/2020.

⁶⁷⁷ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records 1620 – 1988, Weymouth, Vital Records Transcripts, Weymouth Deaths*, 336, (ancestry.com), 11/1/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #166682433, (ancestry.com), has a "folksy" biography, 11/1/2020.

⁶⁷⁸ Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts. Vol 4: Genealogy of Weymouth Families*, 612, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol 46: 187-188; Notes and Queries: Corrections and Additions to Savage's Genealogical Dictionary*, (americanancestors.org), 11/1/2020.

Named in the distribution on 11 March 1705/6, were sons John, Nicholas, Joseph, Benjamin and Ebenezer, daughter Mary King (a widow), and her four sons; Joseph Poole and wife Elizabeth, Gideon Tirrell and wife Hannah, Richard Davenport and wife Abigail, John Androse (Andrews) and wife Alice. Elizabeth Poole was perhaps the Elizabeth Shaw who signed as a witness to the 1671 Will of her grandfather Deacon Nicholas Phillips, if a girl of fifteen, as she was then, were allowed as a witness.⁶⁷⁹

Phillips Family Ancestry

The **Phillips** surname is Welsh in origin and is a patronymic surname meaning "son of Phillip." The given name Phillip comes from the Greek name *philippos* which means "friend of horses," composed of the elements *philos*, meaning "friend" and *hippos*, or "horse."

John Shaw (Lieut.), b. 1603, came with his parents from Northowran, England; d. Weymouth aft. 17 Oct 1704;⁶⁸⁰ m. abt. 1655 Alice Phillips, b. Dedham, Massachusetts Bay abt. 1637.⁶⁸¹

Alice Phillips, was the daughter of Deacon Nicholas Phillips, b. Wendover, Buckinghamshire England 6 Oct 1611, possibly the son of Nicholas Phillips and Abigail Sewell; having two brothers Henry Phillips and Martin Phillips;⁶⁸² d. Weymouth bef. 3 Oct 1672; m. Wendover 26 June 1631 Elizabeth Jewson,⁶⁸³ b. Wendover 29 Nov 1612 (unconfirmed), daughter of Richard Jewson and Elizabeth Kipping. He is not to be confused with the Nicholas Phillips of Boston; m. Hannah Salter; d. 15 Mar 1669/70.

⁶⁷⁹ *The New England Ancestry of Dana Converse Backus*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), *Shaw*, 155 – 156, 100/1/2020; *Suffolk County, MA: Probate File Papers, Case 2903, pages 1-10 hold the Will, Inventory and Administration Papers; also Suffolk Probate Index, Vol 3:149.* (americanancestors.org), 12/15/2020.

⁶⁸⁰ Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts, Volume 4, Genealogy of Weymouth Families*, 612, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020; *Memoirs of the Leonard, Thompson and Haskell Families, Chap XXIV*, 272, (ancestry.com), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁸¹ No birth record has been found, but her parents were in Dedham, Massachusetts by 18 Aug 1636 and her next younger sister was b. 1641; Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts, Volume 4, Genealogy of Weymouth Families*, Phillips, 464-465, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁸² Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts, Volume 4, Genealogy of Weymouth Families: Phillips*, 464-465, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020; C. Arthur Phillips, *Deacon Nicholas Phillips of Dedham and Weymouth, Mass., 1636 – 1672*, (Evansville, Ind., Unigraphic, 1976), 4 -9, (archive.org), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁸³ William Phillimore Watts, ed. & Frederick William Ragg, joint ed., *Buckinghamshire Parish Registers. Marriages*, (London, Phillimore & Co, 1902), Vol 2: 6, (archive.org), 11/1/2020.

Children:

- i. ELIZABETH PHILLIPS, b. Wendover, Buckinghamshire, England abt. 1633; perhaps d. young as there is no further information. There are clues on ancestry.com if the reader wishes to find out more.
- ii. RICHARD PHILLIPS, b. Wendover 22 Nov 1635; d. Weymouth, Suffolk, Massachusetts 17 Oct 1695; m. 1656/7 Mary Packard; eleven children; m. (2) Elizabeth (Edson) Kingman. He was a farmer who raised sheep for wool, spun to yarn; Freeman and held town offices.

Children born in Weymouth, Massachusetts:

- iii. ALICE PHILLIPS, b. abt. 1637; d. aft. 17 Oct 1704; m. 1655 **John Shaw Sr. (Lieut.)**; eleven children.
- viii. EXPERIENCE PHILLIPS, b. 8 May 1641; d. Weymouth 21 Jan 1718; m. Weymouth 17 Sept 1658 Samuel King; eleven children.
- ix. CALEB PHILLIPS, b. 23 Nov 1643; d. bef. 2 June 1671, as he is not mentioned in his father's Will.
- x. JOSHUA PHILLIPS, b. 1647; d. bef. 2 May 1679 age 32; probate 10 Apr 1679 Suffolk County, Massachusetts; served with Capt. Turner on the Connecticut River during King Phillips War.
- xi. HANNAH PHILLIPS, b. 1652; d. Weymouth 5 Oct 1732; m. bef. 2 June 1671 Ebenezer White; seven children.
- xii. BENJAMIN PHILLIPS, b. abt. 1654; d. Charlestown, Suffolk, Massachusetts 13 Feb 1688; m. 1680 Anne ____; four children; he was employed 1681 as a ship's carpenter; he and his wife were admitted to the First Church, Charlestown, 3 Apr 1681.
- xiii. ABIGAIL PHILLIPS, b. 20 Feb 1662; d. Weymouth 19 Sept 1724; m. 1684 John Blanchard Sr.; five children.

Nicholas and Elizabeth Phillips emigrated before his brothers and signed the covenant at Dedham,⁶⁸⁴ then known as "Contentment," on 18 August 1636. He was granted 12 acres of land there on that same day. Nicholas was absent from the first town meeting but attended the second in November 1636. Several other ancestral surnames: Shaw, Hayward and Kingsbury are often listed alongside Nicholas Phillips in early records.

At the town meeting, on 28 September 1637, the three Phillips brothers were present along with Abraham Shawe. At the meeting on 1 November, the brothers were again in attendance when it was decided to build a meetinghouse and that the town would pay "for felling pyne

⁶⁸⁴ Dedham (Mass.), Carlos Slafter, and Don Gleason Hill, *The Early Records of the Town ...*, (Dedham, Mass., Dedham Transcript Press, 1886-99), Vol 3:20, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020.

of two Foote, 6 pence each" and "for Oake of the same thickness, 8 pence" and "for greater and smaller after ye same rate." Nicholas was commissioned, with three other men, to clear the trees.⁶⁸⁵

Nicholas and his family lived next door to "Uncle" Martin Phillips in the Old Spain area. John King and Joseph Shaw were neighbors living close by. The family and uncles were involved in pioneer farming and town building. At the town meeting on 6 April 1638, Nicholas and Joseph Kingsbury were named for:

Laying downe each a p'cell of grownd for a burial place, (and) are to have a good allowance of Grownd in some other place for ye same. As also ye Nicholas for a p'cell of grownd layd down at the Keye.⁶⁸⁶

Later that year, on 28 August 1638, the meetinghouse was ready for the thatch roof. Nicholas and John Howard were chosen to "mowe, gather up and bring home thatch for ye meeting house." On 6 April 1638, Nicholas Phillips gave Dedham its first burial ground.⁶⁸⁷ On 23 November, the council granted him a new plot of ground on the hill between the "highway and Jonas Humphrey."⁶⁸⁸ He was fined 10 shillings for having "felled certain trees" which were not on his land. He was a selectman in Dedham from 1636-1639 and attended many town meetings.

A document dated 19 July 1639 stated:

Nicholas Phillips alienateth and granted unto John Allen Pastor and to his heyers and assinges forever both his dwelling house and yt wholl portion of Land ... 12 acres together with 2 acres of Swampe. And also, his Right and clayme unto Fower acres of Medowe. His bill of sale was under his hand and the seal bears the date of First of August 1639 and demonstrates that he did not forfeit his lands in Dedham but instead sold them. He was not present at subsequent meetings in Dedham.⁶⁸⁹

The fact that he was such an active and respected member in the church suggests that he may have come to this country for religious freedom. Religious intolerance may be the reason he left Dedham. In late 1639 or 1640, Nicholas moved his family to Weymouth, still in the Massachusetts Bay Colony.⁶⁹⁰ On 13 May 1640, he was made freeman of the Massachusetts

⁶⁸⁵ Phillips, *Deacon Nicholas Phillips of Dedham and Weymouth, Mass., 1636 – 1672*, 4 -9, (archive.org), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁸⁶ Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts*, Volume 4, *Genealogy of Weymouth Families*: Phillips, 464-465, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁸⁷ Josephine C. Frost, *Ancestors of Amyntas Shaw and his wife Lucy Tufts Williams*, (1900), 35, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁸⁸ Dedham (Mass.), Slafter, and Hill, *The Early Records of the Town ...*, Vol 3:50, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020; Frost, *Ancestors of Amyntas Shaw and his wife Lucy Tufts Williams*, 35 -36, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁸⁹ Phillips, *Deacon Nicholas Phillips of Dedham and Weymouth, Mass., 1636 – 1672*, 4, (archive.org), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁹⁰ *Ibid.*, (archive.org), 11/1/2020

Bay Colony. This allowed him to be recognized as full citizen with rights in the town and the church.⁶⁹¹

He purchased a lot from Philemon Dalton and sold it to Henry Phillips before 1 Mar 1641.⁶⁹² He was last mentioned in Dedham on 23 February 1650.⁶⁹³

In January 1644, the First Congregational Church was organized with the Reverend Thomas Thacher as pastor. Reverend Thacher was well received and remained as pastor for the next twenty years. At this church, Nicholas became Deacon sometime before he was called "Deacon Phillips" on 8 February 1660.⁶⁹⁴

He was one of the appraisers of the estate of William Brandon of Weymouth on 23 November 1646.⁶⁹⁵ On the 11th day of the 6th month 1651, Elizabeth gave her consent for Nicholas to sell a house and several parcels of land to Francis Smith of Hingham.⁶⁹⁶ On 18 October 1652, he was one of the appraisers of Dorothy King's estate.

On 14 December 1663, Deacon Phillips received 13 acres (lot #3) in the Pint Division and 39 acres (lot #24) in the Second Division in Weymouth. His brother, Martin Phillips, had 3½ acres adjoining his land and one (1) acre of salt marsh.⁶⁹⁷ Their lands were in an area called "Old Spain" on a creek that emptied into the Weymouth River. The stream eventually became known as Phillips Creek. John King and Joseph Shaw lived in the same area.⁶⁹⁸

His wife, Elizabeth (Jewson) Phillips, and son, Caleb Phillips, died in Weymouth, sometime before 2 June 1671, as neither is mentioned in Nicholas' Will. They may be buried in the North Weymouth Cemetery.⁶⁹⁹

Nicholas Phillips, died before 3 October 1672, when his Will, dated 2 June 1671, was proved in Weymouth. Alice Phillips inherited 10£ plus a 1/6 share of her father's residual estate after specific bequeaths.⁷⁰⁰

⁶⁹¹ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 3: 187 "List of Freemen," (americanancestors.org), 11/2/2020, interestingly he shares the list with John Fairfield and Valentine Hill mentioned previously.

⁶⁹² Dedham (Mass.), Slafter, and Hill, *The Early Records of the Town ...*, Vol 3:84, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/2/2020.

⁶⁹³ Dedham (Mass.), Slafter, and Hill, *The Early Records of the Town ...*, Vol 3:176-178, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/2/2020.

⁶⁹⁴ Phillips, *Deacon Nicholas Phillips of Dedham and Weymouth, Mass., 1636 – 1672*, 6-7, (archive.org), 11/1/2020.

⁶⁹⁵ Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts, Volume 4, Genealogy of Weymouth Families: Phillips*, 464-465, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/2/2020.

⁶⁹⁶ Frost, *Ancestors of Amyntas Shaw and his wife Lucy Tufts Williams*, 35 -36, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/2/2020; Phillips, *Deacon Nicholas Phillips of Dedham and Weymouth, Mass., 1636 – 1672*, 4, (archive.org), 11/2/2020.

⁶⁹⁷ Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts, Volume 4, Genealogy of Weymouth Families, Phillips*, 464-465, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/2/2020.

⁶⁹⁸ Phillips, *Deacon Nicholas Phillips of Dedham and Weymouth, Mass., 1636 – 1672*, 7, (archive.org), 11/2/2020.

⁶⁹⁹ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #166682631, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷⁰⁰ Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth, Massachusetts, Volume 4, Genealogy of Weymouth Families: Phillips*, 464-465, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/2/2020.

**The Will of Nicholas Phillips, dated 2 June 1671
Proved in Weymouth**

Age Sixty Yeares, or thereabouts having a very weake body. To eldest son Richard Phillips the marsh which is now in his possession. To his three sons Richard, Joshua and Benjamin Phillips his wearing apparell. To second son Joshua Phillips 6£. To third son Benjamin Phillips 6£. To eldest daughter Alice Shaw 10£. To my six younger children, viz., Joshua Phillips, Benjamin Phillips, Alice Shaw, Experience King, Hannah White, and Abigail Phillips, the rest of his estate to be equally divided. Overseers: sons Richard, Joshua and Benjamin Phillips. Son Richard Phillips, executor. " My loving brother Henry Phillips and my loving friends Thomas Dyer and Jonas Humphrey " mentioned.

Witnesses: Elizabeth Shaw and Thomas Dyer, Jr.

William Torrey, Thomas Dyer and Jonas Humphrey took inventory on 7 September 1672. Among the items mentioned were: "bookes in leather and 7 pamphlets," 2£, 2s, total 257£, 11s, 6d. Presented by Richard Phillips as the estate of his late father Nicholas Phillips, 3 October 1672.⁷⁰¹

Nicholas Phillips may have also been buried in the North Weymouth Cemetery.⁷⁰²

Jewson/Kipping Family Ancestry

The name **Jewson**, was more likely an occupational name for someone who held the office of "the justice," in other words a judge. Some sources indicate it could have come from "son of Jul(Julian)" or "son of a Jew."

Kipping is of Anglo-Saxon origins from the Old English pre 7th century personal byname Cypping, a derivative of the Germanic root *kupp*, "to be swollen," and originally given as a nickname to one of rotund appearance. The second possibility is that the name is of Scottish locational origin from Kippen a village near Sterling. Or it can also be from the German habitation name from a place named with Middle High German *kip*, "point or peak" or from Kippingen in the Rhineland.

Elizabeth Jewson, b. Wendover 29 Jan or Nov 1612, daughter of Richard Jewson and Elizabeth Kipping; d. Wendover, 1 Sept 1671/2;⁷⁰³ m. Wendover 29 Oct 1607 Nicholas Phillips.⁷⁰⁴

Richard Jewson, b. Wendover 1582, m. Wendover, 29, Dec 1607 Elizabeth Kipping,⁷⁰⁵ b. Wendover, abt. 1586, daughter of John Kipping and ____; d. abt. 1649.⁷⁰⁶ With the exception of the marriage of Elizabeth Jewson and Nicholas Phillips, all other information is unsourced.

⁷⁰¹ Suffolk County, MA: Probate File Papers, Suffolk Cases 1 – 999, Case # 610, 8 pages, (americanancestors.org), 101/2/2020.

⁷⁰² U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #166682594, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷⁰³ U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #166682631, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷⁰⁴ Watts, ed. & Ragg, joint ed., *Buckinghamshire Parish Registers. Marriages*, (London, Phillimore & Co, 1902), Vol 2: 6, (archive.org), 11/1/2020.

⁷⁰⁵ UK and Ireland, Find A Grave, Memorial #63376013, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷⁰⁶ UK and Ireland, Find a Grave, Memorial #63375958, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.



St. John the Baptist, Church, Halifax, Yorkshire, England
Image from achurchnearyou.com/church/17982

Shaw Family Ancestry Continued

John Shaw was the son of Abraham Shawe, b. England; d. Weymouth abt. 1589/90;⁷⁰⁷ d. Dedham, Nov/Dec 1638; bur. at the Old Village Cemetery in an unmarked grave, in the older section to the left. He spelled his name with a final "e" as the family did in England; m. Halifax, Yorkshire, England 24 June 1616 Bridget Best, daughter of Henry Best of Holdsworth,⁷⁰⁸ (Bridget, Brigget could be a nickname for Elizabeth), bapt. Ovenden, Halifax England 9 Apr 1592.

The present church building dates from the mid-1400s. The parish of Halifax is the largest in Yorkshire. Halifax was the center of England's woolen manufacture from the 15th century onward. The oldest written mentions of the parish have the spelling as *Haliflax*, apparently meaning "holy flax" (hair). Local legend has it that the head of John the Baptist was buried

⁷⁰⁷ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #16195670, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷⁰⁸ *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 2:1357, (americanancestors.org), 11/2/2020; *North America, Family Histories 1500 -2000, The Damon Family...*139, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020; *US and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900*; Source #1768.062, Family Group Sheet, listed as parents, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

here after his execution. The legend is almost certainly medieval rather than ancient, though the town's coat of arms still carries an image of the saint.

Children (from the church records of St John the Baptist, Halifax):⁷⁰⁹

- i. SUSANNAH SHAW, bapt. Halifax, England 25 May 1617; d. Weymouth, Massachusetts abt. 1698; m. bef. Oct 1638 Nicholas Byram of Weymouth. According to family tradition, Nicholas Byram was son of an English gentlemen from county Kent, who removed to Ireland about the time his son was born. His father sent Nicholas, at age 16, to visit friends in England, in charge of a man who betrayed his trust, robbed him of his money and sent him to the West Indies where he was sold to service to pay his passage. After his term expired, Nicholas Byram made his way to New England and settled at Weymouth, Massachusetts.⁷¹⁰
- ii. JOSEPH SHAW, bapt. Halifax 14 Mar 1618; d. Weymouth 13 Dec 1653 m. (1) ____; m. (2) Mary Souther, daughter of Nathaniel.
- iii. GRACE SHAW, bapt. Halifax 15 Aug 1621; d. Weymouth abt. 1698; m. 1650 William Richards of Weymouth.
- iv. MARTHA SHAW; bapt. Halifax 1 Dec 1623; d./bur. 31 Mar 1625.
- v. MARIA SHAW, (also referred to as Mary), bapt. Halifax 18 June 1626; d. Weymouth 1658; m. Weymouth John Bicknell, deputy of the General Court and carpenter, son of Zachariah.
- vi. JOHN SHAW (first of the name), bapt. Halifax 16 Feb 1628; d./bur. 12 Apr 1629.
- vii. **JOHN SHAW**, (second of the name), bapt. Halifax 23 May 1630; d. 1704; m. **Alice Phillips**, daughter of Nicholas Phillips.
- viii. MARTHA SHAW, (second of the name), bapt. Halifax; d. 6 Jan 1632; m. Weymouth Thomas Vinson of Weymouth.

While still in England, Abraham Shawe was the executor appointed in the Will of Henry Best, father of his wife, Bridget, dated 9 March 1627/8 and proved in August 1628.

In a survey of the Wakefield Manor Court, Halifax parish, West Riding, Yorkshire, England, conducted 7 Oct 1635, Abraham Shawe is recorded as owner of:

One messuage, and 12 acres, 3 rods of land medow and pasture with ye appurtenances in Northowram in ye greaveship of Hipperholme abounding on Ovenden Brook on ye west, on ye high way leading from Amblerthorn on ye south and east, and on ye

⁷⁰⁹ Frost, *Ancestors of Amyntas Shaw and his wife Lucy Tufts Williams*, 5, <database online>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2004), 11/2/2020; *West Yorkshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages, and Burials, 1512-1812*; Yorkshire Records New # WDP53/1/1/5, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 48: 346 and Vol 49: 64, (americanancestors.org), 11/2/2020.

⁷¹⁰ Paine ancestry: *the family of Robert Treat Paine, signer of the Declaration of Independence, including maternal lines*, 95-97, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2005), 11/2/2020.

lands of John Barestow on ye north; and doth pay yearly rent of 4s 3d; Whereof 3 acres are used as meadow, 4 acres pasture and 5 acres 3 rods as arable.

He came into this land as the eldest son of Thomas Shawe Jr. of Northowram, in an entry dated 7 October 1600:

Abraham Shawe, son and heir of Thomas Shawe Jr. came into this court and gave the lord 7 shillings as fine of license of heriot for (above mentioned land), after the death of Thomas Shawe Jr., following whose death, he (Abraham) was declared eldest son and heir.

On 25 September 1635, just prior to his immigration to America, Abraham Shawe sold the Sculcote Brow land:

Abraham Shawe of Sculcote in Northowram, yeoman and Bridget, his now wife (she first having been examined separately by the Steward of the Court), gave into the hands of the lord, through John Lomme... all that messuage or tenement commonly called Sculcote Brow, (containing by estimation 12 acres and 3 rods) ...⁷¹¹

When he first arrived in the colonies, Abraham Shawe was a proprietor in Watertown, however, he lost his house and goods in a fire in October 1636. Soon after, he sold his town lot and farm of 8 ½ acres and moved to Dedham, Massachusetts. Abraham Shawe was one of the first to subscribe to the Dedham Covenant. With his eldest son Joseph, and twenty others, he signed a petition on the 6th of the 7th month (September 1636) to incorporate the town. He continued as a Freeman 3 September 1636/37, 9 March 1637,⁷¹² and on 6 September 1638, he was elected constable.⁷¹³

He was granted 12 acres of land in Dedham on 18 August 1636, between Second River and a lot already owned by him; he was called “a planter.” In his early days in Massachusetts, he killed a black bear 8 feet in length and received a bounty for hunting rattlesnakes!⁷¹⁴ (Vampires beware! Readers of Volume One will understand.)

Abraham Shawe was appointed one of the men to govern the town in February 1637. He was given liberty to erect a corn mill and 60 acres of land to belong to said mill providing it always remained a water mill. He, and his associates, built the old dam across the Charles River for a gristmill, about ¾ of a mile southwest of the new bridge. He may have also made a stone

⁷¹¹ *The Genealogist*, Vol 10, No. 1, Spring 1989, Russell Franklin Shaw, M.D., “The English Ancestry of Abraham Shaw of Dedham, Massachusetts (1590-1638),” 86-97: 88. This article has an in-depth review of English Manors, land and parish records used in determining ancestry.

⁷¹² *Massachusetts: Miscellaneous Census Substitutes, 1630-1788, 1840, 1890*, S1a, line 2751720, *MA Census Substitutes*, 1599, (americanancestors.org), 11/2/2020.

⁷¹³ *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register*, Vol 3: 95, (americanancestors.org), 11/2/2020.

⁷¹⁴ Charles Edwin Hurd, *Genealogy and history of representative citizens of the commonwealth of Massachusetts*, (Boston, New England Historical Pub. Co, 1902), 355, (archive.org), 11/2/2020.

'carte' bridge across the Charles River to enable the people of that region to come to his mill. He was also granted "a hill of ground" on the east side of the little river 'in consideration of his care and pains' taken concerning the town's business. He was also given 4 acres of swamp land, which on 10 October 1638, he sold to Michael Metcalf and John Frary.

His wife, Bridget (Best) Shawe, died in 1637/38 at age 45/46.⁷¹⁵

On 6 September 1638, along with William Kingsbury, Abraham Shawe was appointed to inform the Court of Assistants of newcomers admitted to Dedham without a license.

It was ordered, that the constables should inform of newcomers if any be admitted without license: and to that end warrant to be sent out to the constables of each town, to inform the Court of Assistants, which is to consider of the fines whether to take them or to mitigate them. William Kingsbury and Abraham Shawe are appointed for Dedham, there being yet no constables chosen there.⁷¹⁶

It seems an Abraham Shawe removed from Dedham to Cambridge, Massachusetts where he was a town officer in 1640/41.⁷¹⁷ This Abraham Shawe may have been a different man than "our" Abraham, or there is an error in the records. On 23 November 1638, there are records of the sale of land in Dedham by Abraham Shawe to Fernando Adam, and by Joseph Shaw to Henry Brocke. The sale was confirmed by a "note under hand," since neither of the Shaws were present.

Abraham Shawe was granted a monopoly of ½ of the coal and iron to be found in the common land in 1638, which according to Savage would have stimulated his curiosity more than increased his wealth; but he died the next year.⁷¹⁸ Most research indicates he died before 25 March (first day of the new year 1639), since his Inventory is dated 1638. The town records mention that he was deceased by the 25th of 1st mo 1639. The exact date is not known.⁷¹⁹ He is buried in an unmarked grave in the old section of the Old Village Cemetery in Dedham, Massachusetts.⁷²⁰

His nuncupative Will bears no date, and seems to be a "mere Memorand," a memorandum of his last wishes, and was filed in *Suffolk County Wills* and proven late 1638. It reads as follows:

⁷¹⁵ North America, Family Histories 1500 -2000, The Damon Family...139, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020; U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #16195710, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷¹⁶ Frost, *Ancestors of Amyntas Shaw and his wife Lucy Tufts Williams*, 6, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷¹⁷ Paine ancestry: the family of Robert Treat Paine, signer of the Declaration of Independence, including maternal lines, 95-97, The text makes the case for transcription errors and says Abraham Shaw d. ca. 1640), (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷¹⁸ Savage, Dexter & Farmer, *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England...*, Vol IV: 63, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/2/2020.

⁷¹⁹ Frost, *Ancestors of Amyntas Shaw and his wife Lucy Tufts Williams*, 5-7, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷²⁰ U.S., Find A Grave, Memorial #16195670, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

Memorandum that if it please Almyghte God to take me to his mercye by death. That it is my minde and will that my estate shall be disposed of as followeth (that is to say) I bequeathe to my sonne John and Martha Shawe beinge infants ten pounds betweene them, also betweene the aforesaid Martha and Marye I leave as much quicke goods as shall be balance to eight pounds, also to Joseph in some goods twelve pounds as may be thought fit; further, that Joseph and John shall have my lot at Dedham equally divided between them. Also, that all the rest of my estate whatsoever, be divided, proportionate, betweene all my children. Witnessed by Nicolas Biram (son-in law) and Joseph Shawe.

The witnesses were ordered to inventory the estate, with the help and advice of Mr. Edward Allen.⁷²¹

As no wife was mentioned she without a doubt predeceased him.

Note: Thomas Lechford, the first professional lawyer in the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, kept a notebook, which contains not only the record of every instrument drawn by him, but an account of the compensation he received. One entry concerns Abraham Shawe, sometime of Halifax in the county of York and late of Dedham in New England, who made his Last Will and Testament about Nov 1638 and thereby made Joseph Shawe, his eldest, and Nicholas Byram, his son in law, his executors. (Joseph Shaw in his Will, years later called Nicholas Byram his brother, thus confirming Thomas Lechford's statement of the relationship.) A power of attorney was executed and sent to Mr. ____ Best of Halifax, enabling him to attend to certain matters in England (to receive all profits of Colemines whatsoever and the same Colemines to sell &c.). Mr. Lechford's fee was five shillings.⁷²²

On 29 November 1639, Joseph and John Shaw sold the lot left them in their father's Will to Robert Mason, the court giving the latter permission to purchase.⁷²³ The Shaw family then moved about 10 miles east to Weymouth.

In my research, I appreciated the article published in *The American Genealogist* by M.L. Bierbrier, *The Origin of Abraham Shaw of Dedham*.⁷²⁴ Abraham Shaw's marriage to Bridget Best and their seven children's baptisms were in the Halifax parish register, however, his own baptism was not. An earlier publication suggested that "our" Abraham Shawe was the illegitimate son of Janet or Jenet Shaw by Abraham Dobson, 14 November 1585. Bierbrier asked the question, "How then could Abraham Shawe acquire property in Halifax?"

It can now be shown that there was a perfectly legitimate Abraham Shawe, a property owner in Northowram, Halifax. The solution lies in two Wills, preserved in the Brothwick Institute of Historical Research in York. Bierbrier reprints both – I will offer highlights here (the Wills are reprinted below). The first is the Will of Thomas Shawe Jr. of Northowram, Halifax, proved 15 May 1600. In it, he names his children including Abraham Shawe, and provides for their education. (Also, we read earlier of the transfer of the Sculcote Brow land to Abraham,

⁷²¹ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 2: 180, (americanancestors.org), 11/2/2020.

⁷²² *The New England Ancestry of Dana Converse Backus, Shaw*, 154-156, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷²³ Frost, *Ancestors of Amyntas Shaw and his wife Lucy Tufts Williams*, 5-6, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷²⁴ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 57 (1981), 85-87, M.L. Bierbrier, "The Origin of Abraham Shaw of Dedham," (New Haven, CT., D. L. Jacobus, 1937-.), <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org. New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2009 -), 11/2/2020.

eldest son and heir). The second Will is that of Sarah Shawe, spinster, of Northowram, proved 17 April 1616. In it, she gives unto her brother Abraham Shawe 8£, and then to her other siblings, all of whom are named in the previous Will of their father Thomas Shawe Jr.

These two Wills prove there was an Abraham Shawe, son of Thomas and Elizabeth Shaw, alive two months before the marriage of Abraham Shawe, our immigrant ancestor. Bierbrier states the “inescapable conclusion,” that he and the emigrant are one and the same man.”

The Will of Thomas Shawe of Northowram, Halifax Proved 15 May 1600

In the name of God, Amen the tenth day of January in the year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lady Elizabeth etc. (sic) forty-two et Anno Domini (1599). I Thomas Shawe of the Township of Northowram parish of Halifax and County of Yorke sick in body but of good and perfect memory, I praise God for the same, do ordain make and declare this my Last Will and Testament in manner and form following to wit First and principally I give and commend my soul unto the hand of Almighty God with full and perfect assurance of remission of all my sins by and through the merit death and passion of Jesus Christ his only son and my alone savior. And my body I commit to the earth whereof it was made to be buried in the Church or Churchyard of Halifax amongst the bodies of other faithful people of Christ hoping the same shall rise again at the last Judgement Day glorious and immortal and concerning the distribution and disposition of my worldly goods my will and mynde... is as followeth – First my will and mind is that all my true and lawful debts be deducted and paid of my whole goods undivided. After which things done my will and mind is that all my goods chattel and debts be divided into three equal parts one part thereof my will and mind is shall redounde unto Elizabeth my Wiffe as her right of my goods (one third part I give unto Sarah Shawe, Susane Shaw and Martha Shawe my daughters & to such child as my Wife hath now conceived, if she have conceived any, equally to be divided amongst them – ... And the last third part I do give and devise to the forenamed Sara Susan and Martha Shaw, and to such child as my Wife hath now conceived, if she have conceived any, as is aforesaid equally to be divided amongst them. Further it is my will and mind and I do by this my Last Will and Testament give bequeath and assign unto the forenamed Sarah Susan and Martha Shaw my daughters and to such child as my Wife hath conceived etc. (sic) the just sum of three pounds yearly to be levied and gathered out of my messuage or tenement whereon I now dwell for and during the terms of ten years next and immediate after my decease towards their supportation, maintenance and education during their minorities. After which said ten years experienced it is further my mind that Abraham Shawe my eldest son and heir shall for and during the term of other ten years immediately following the term aforesaid yearly yield and pay unto my said three daughters and to such child as my Wife hath now conceived if she have conceived any, of the just sum of three pounds for the augmenting and enlarging of their portions. Always provided and it is my will and mind that the forenamed Elizabeth my wife shall enjoy and possess to her proper use all my whole messuage and tenement aforesaid during the term of ten years first aforesaid educating my children, if she so long live and keep herself sole and unmarried. And the tuition and educating of my said children to wit Abraham Shawe, Jonas Shaw, Sara, Susan and Martha Shaw and of such children etc (sic) I commit to the said Elizabeth my wife during their minorities. And do nominate make and appoint the said Elizabeth full and whole executrix of this my Will. And further I desire my trusty friends John Bairestow of Bromhirste, John Crowder of Ovenden, William Illingworth of Illingworth, .Henry Beste of Haldesworth and John Longbothome to be Supervisors, they all witnessing the Will. And if it fortune any ambiguity doubt or question happen to arise or grow about any clause or sentence contained herein my will and mind is that the same shall be expounded and opened by my said supervisors or the most of them. In testimony whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year first above written these witnesses:

John Bairestowe, John Crowther, William Illingsworth, Henry Best and John Longbothome

**The Will of Sarah Shawe of Northowram
Proved 17 April 1616**

The Will nuncupative of Sara Shawe late of Northowram spinstered deceased. Memorandum that the day and year abovesaid Sara Shawe being sick in body but of perfect memory did make her Last Will and Testament in manner following. She gave unto Abraham Shawe her brother eight pounds. Item to Sarah (Susan) Shawe her sister forever four pounds. Item to Jonas Shawe her brother forty shillings. Item to Martha Shawe her sister nine pounds. Item to John Moore, Joseph Moore and Grace Moore to every of them Twenty shillings. The residue of her goods not given she gave unto her mother Elizabeth wife of Richard Morre whom she made executrix of her said Last Will and Testament.

Witnesses hereof Michell Tailor and Samuell Longotham. ⁷²⁵

*Best – Swift Family Ancestry
Including Redenbaugh and Ingle*

In England the surname **Best** is of Anglo-Norman origin meaning *beste*, “beast”. It was a name given to a strong or resourceful man. The surname Best may also be a metonym referring to someone who was employed as a herdsman. I was unable to find information on the surname, **Boithes**. It is perhaps an old Irish or Scottish word.

Also, in this line are the following:

Swift, a surname of Anglo-Saxon origin, originating as a nickname for “someone who was a swift, fast runner.” It is rather unique as it has retained its original spelling for over one thousand years.

Redenbaugh may be an altered spelling of the German Redenback or Rettnebach, habitational names for various places in Bavaria and Austria.

The **Ingle** surname is an English name with Norse roots, deriving from either of two Old Norse personal names *Ingjaldr*, or *Ingólfr*, meaning “Ing's wolf.” (Ing was an ancient Germanic fertility god). Some instances of this name in Britain are thought to have evolved from the place name Ingol, in Lancashire which is named from the Old English personal name, Inga, with the Old English word *holh*, meaning “a hollow, or depression.”

Bridget Best, wife of Abraham Shawe, bapt. Ovenden, Halifax, Yorkshire, England, 9 Apr 1592, daughter of Henry Best and Grace Boithes; d. bef. 1638, Dedham, Norfolk, Massachusetts.⁷²⁶ She has a sister Mary, bapt. 14 Aug 1586 and a brother John, bapt. 10 Mar 1587.⁷²⁷

Henry Best, of Holdsworth in the township of Ovenden, parish of Halifax, Yorkshire, bapt. Halifax, Yorkshire 3 Dec 1553: “Henry fili Henrici Beste de Warley 3 Dec 1553,” which

⁷²⁵ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 57, (1981), 85-87, (americanancestors.org), 11/2/2020.

⁷²⁶ *England, Select Births and Christenings 1538- 1975*, FHL film # 496813, #528766, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷²⁷ *English Origins of New England Families, Second Series, Vol III: 151-153*, “Abraham Shaw of Dedham,” (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

translates Henry the son of Henry Best of Warley (Yorkshire);⁷²⁸ m. Halifax, St. John the Baptist, 23 Oct or 23 Dec 1577 Grace Boithes;⁷²⁹ bapt. 16 July 1557;⁷³⁰ d. 27 July 1622 or bef. 1627;⁷³¹ daughter of John Boithes and Isabella Swift.⁷³²

Children:⁷³³

- i. MICHAEL BEST, probably b.14 Dec 1578, though the wording of his father's Will makes it unclear. There was a contemporary Michael Best, son of Richard and Maud Best.
- ii. MARY BEST, b. 14 Aug 1586; possibly the Marie named in her father's Will; if so unmarried.
- iii. JOHN BEST, b. 10 Mar 1587/8; he probably d. bef. 1628, and was the father of the Henry named in the Will.
- iv. BRIDGET BEST, bapt. 9 Apr 1592; m. Northowram, Yorkshire 24 June 1616 **Abraham Shawe**, son of Thomas Jr. and Elizabeth (Longbotham) Shaw, b. abt. 1590; eight children; went to New England; Abraham, d. late 1638; Bridget, d. earlier 1638.
- v. DAUGHTER BEST, m. Michael Furber; three children; she seems to have d. bef. her father's 1627 Will.
- vi. DAUGHTER BEST, probably m. Robert Swayne, named in the Will of Henry Best.

Henry Best, died after 9 March 1627 when he wrote a memorandum to his Will, suggesting a previous one.

The 9th of March 1627 – Memorandum that I, Henry Best of Houldsworth in the township of Ovenden, do make this my Last Will and Testament in manner and form following:

First, I give and bequeath to Abraham Shawe 40 pounds; also, I give to three children of Michael Furbher, my grandchildren, 6 pounds; also, I give to Marie Best 20 shillings; also, I give to Henry Best my grandchild my bed with all that belongeth to it; also, I give to Michael Best, my son Abraham Shawe and Robert Swayne all my apparel; also, I give to John Illingworth 12 pence; also, to Anne Brooke 7 pence; also, I give to Anne Wilson 12 pence; also 8 pounds I leave to bring me forth, and if any remain, I give it to my grandchild Henry Best, and I make Abraham Shawe my executor."

Signed by mark. Witnesses: Tho. Lovjoy, John Illingworthe, Michael Best; Proved August 1628.⁷³⁴

⁷²⁸ https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Best-12#_note-0 11/2/2020 citing: *England, Select Births and Christenings 1538-1975*, FHL film # 496813, #528766, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020 and *Yorkshire, England, Extracted Church of England Parish Records*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2001), 11/2/2020.

⁷²⁹ *England, Select Marriages, 1538-1973*, FHL film #496,813, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020; *West Yorkshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1512-1812*. <online database>, (Lehi, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2011), 11/2/2020.

⁷³⁰ *England, Select Births and Christenings 1538- 1975*, FHL film # 496813, #528766, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷³¹ *UK and Ireland, Find A Grave*, Memorial #63506794, has d. 1628, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷³² *English Origins of New England Families, Second Series, Vol III*, 153, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷³³ All recorded in *England Births and Christenings 1538-1975*, based on FHL film #496813, and film #528766, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020; John B Threlfall, *Fifty Great Migration Colonists and their Origins*, (Madison, Wise, 1990), 353 – 64, 361, (read at familysearch.org), 11/17/2020.

⁷³⁴ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Best-12>, 8/3/2021.

Grace Boithes of Halifax, wife of Henry Best, and mother of Bridget, was the daughter of John Boithes, b. abt. 1525; bur. Halifax, St. John the Baptist, 22 Mar 1568;⁷³⁵ m. 3 June 1548 Isabella Swift.⁷³⁶

Isabella Swift, b. 1531; d. 1557,⁷³⁷ daughter of Richard Swift, b. abt. 1502 Rotherham, Yorkshire; d. abt. 1582 Yorkshire; m. (1) Margaret Redenbaugh, b. 1511; d. 1531; parents unknown; m. (2) Jean Wheelock.

Richard Swift may have been the son of Alexander Swift, b. 1478 Penistone, Yorkshire; d. 1506 Yorkshire; m. Margaret Ingle, b. 1480; d. 1537. Alexander may have been the son of William Swift, b. 1430; d. 1480 Yorkshire, (unsourced).

Henry Best was most likely the son of Henry (Henrici) Best, not Richard Best, of Ovenden. Threlfall states Henry Best was probably the grandson of a Richard Best, buried 8 November 1551 and Johanna (i.e., Joan or Jane), super relict of Richard Best, who was buried 6 June 1544.⁷³⁸

The author of the wikitree.com site says there was a son Henry born to Richard Best in 1544, but there is no further record. They also remind us that English naming patterns of the time offer further proof. Our Henry did not name any of his children Richard, nor did his children name any children Richard.⁷³⁹

Henrici Best, b. abt. 1533 Yorkshire; d. abt. 1563; m. Halifax, Yorkshire 26 Oct 1552, Margaret/Margarita Maud.

Children:⁷⁴⁰

- i. **HENRY BEST**, b. 3 Dec 1553.
- ii. MARGARETA BEST, b. 30 June 1557.
- iii. ISABELLA BEST, b. 21 Sept 1559.
- iv. MARIA BEST, b. 10 Mar 1563.

⁷³⁵ *West Yorkshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1512-1812*, John Bowths, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷³⁶ *Ibid.*, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020; All these events are found in the *Halifax Parish Registers Part 1 & II; England select Marriages 1583-1973* FHL film # 496813; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 106: 51-52, (americanancestors.org), 11/2/2020.

⁷³⁷ *UK and Ireland, Find A Grave*, Memorial #63509913, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷³⁸ John B Threlfall, *Fifty Great Migration Colonists and their Origins*, (Madison, Wise, 1990), 353 – 64, 361, (read at Family Search.org), 11/17/2020.

⁷³⁹ *English Origins of New England Families, Second Series, Vol III*, 153, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020; <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Best-12>, 11/2/2020.

⁷⁴⁰ All recorded in *England Births and Christenings 1538-1975*, based on FHL film #496813, and film #528766, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

Margaret /Margarita/ Margareta Best, b. abt. 1529; d. 1573,⁷⁴¹ bur. 8 May 1573; parents unknown. Another Maud, but there are no records to prove she is the daughter of John Maud or the sister of Alice (Maud) Longbotham, who has a birth record.⁷⁴²

Naming Patterns

In genealogy we usually concentrate on surnames since they are the most important way of identifying people who are related. A surname is usually inherited and, while it may be changed, some form of it is usually retained. Given names are more important in a way because they represent a voluntary choice by the parents or, sometimes, by an individual. A name is usually not given lightly. It represents thought and feelings and can be significant to the researcher.

You will often see the same names used over and over again in families. While certain names are popular in different areas in different times in history, the repetition could represent a pattern. Many cultures believe in honoring their elders and do so by naming children after them. Angus Baxter in "In Search of Your British and Irish Roots" describes a pattern that was popular in England in the 1700-1875 period:

The first son was named after the father's father (paternal grandfather)

The second son after the mother's father (maternal grandfather)

The third son after the father

The fourth son after the father's eldest brother

The fifth son after the mother's eldest brother

The first daughter was named after the mother's mother (maternal grandmother)

The second daughter after the father's mother (paternal grandmother)

The third daughter after the mother

The fourth daughter after the mother's eldest sister

The fifth daughter after the father's eldest sister

If this pattern would result in a duplication of names -- i.e., both grandfathers had the same name -- then they would skip to the next one on the list.

<https://englishancestors.blog/2020/04/01/english-naming-traditions/>

https://www.genealogy.com/articles/research/35_donna.html

⁷⁴¹ West Yorkshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1512-1812, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020; Global, Find A Grave, Memorial# 63511464, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷⁴² <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Maud->, 11/2/2020.

Shaw Family Ancestry Continued

There were eight men named Thomas Shawe in Halifax Parish between 1538-93. Using land records and court actions, researchers have been able to determine our ancestor, Thomas Shawe Jr., clearly described as the father of Abraham, the husband of Elizabeth Longbotham, the son of Thomas Shawe Sr. and grandson of Christopher Shawe.

According to Dr. Russell Franklin Shaw, in his article, *The English Ancestry of Abraham Shaw of Dedham, Massachusetts (1590-1638)*:

Thomas Shawe (Jr.), b. abt. 1542; d. by 6 May 1600 when his Will was proved in the prerogative Court of York (Archdeaconry of Pontefract); m. (1) Halifax 10 July 1569 Elizabeth Mawd, daughter of John Mawd of the Clough Head, Northowram; bur. Halifax Church 16 Apr 1588. There are no children (living) of this first (19 year) marriage (which seems suspect.)⁷⁴³ Thomas Shawe, m. (2) Halifax, 16 Dec 1588/89 Elizabeth Longbotham, living 15 July 1624, her parentage is uncertain. She m. (2) Halifax, 15 Apr 1601, Richard Moore who predeceased her.

According to John B. Threlfall in *Fifty Great Migration Colonists and their Origins*:

Thomas Shawe Jr., b. 1562, m. 3 Aug 1584 (1) Agnes Smith and by her had two children who died in infancy. Agnes was bur. 14 Apr 1588, the record simply calling her, the wife of Thomas Shawe of Northowram. In some ways this makes more sense than a 19-year marriage without children. And yet, Dr. Shaw in *The English Ancestry of Abraham Shaw of Dedham, Massachusetts (1590-1638)*, offers Wakefield Manor Court records attesting to Thomas Shawe's first wife as Elizabeth Mawd.

What we do know for certain is that Thomas Shawe, m. Halifax 16 Dec 1588 (2) Elizabeth Longbotham, bapt. 13 Oct 1560, daughter of Brian and Alice (Mawd) Longbotham. After Thomas' death 1599/1600, she m. (2) Richard Moore, d. 1624; she survived him.

Both authors agree on the Children of Thomas Shawe (Jr.) and Elizabeth Longbotham, born or baptized Halifax:

- i. **ABRAHAM SHAWE**, (of Dedham), b. 2 Jan 1590/91; d. 10 Oct 1638 Dedham, Suffolk Co Massachusetts; m. 24 June 1616 **Bridget Best**.
- ii. **SARAH SHAWE**, bapt. 2 Apr 1592; d. unm. by 17 Apr 1616 (age 24) when her undated nuncupative Will was proved. Her mother Elizabeth (now wife of

⁷⁴³ John B Threlfall, *Fifty Great Migration Colonists and their Origins*, (Madison, Wise, 1990), 353 – 64, 359, (read at familysearch.org), 11/17/2020.

- Richard Moore) was executrix and residuary legatee. Sarah also gave legacies to her brothers Abraham and Jonas Shawe, her sisters Susan and Martha Shawe, and to John, Joseph and Grace Moore (probably children of her step-father Richard Moore).
- iii. SUSAN/SUSANNA SHAWE, bapt. 22 Sept 1594; living 1616 or d. abt. 17 Apr 1616 (age 21-22); misprinted as Sarah in the transcription of the nuncupative Will of her sister Sarah.
 - iv. JOSEPH SHAWE, bapt. 13 June 1596; bur. 19 Aug 1596 (aged 9 weeks).
 - v. JONAS SHAWE, bapt. 5 June 1597; bur Halifax, 20 May 1638; m. 6 June 1615 Mary Bates of Northowram. He lived in Ovenden; a township adjacent to Northowram. Had children; d. unknown.
 - vi. MARTHA SHAWE, bapt. 9 Sept 1599, living Apr 1616.⁷⁴⁴

Some online trees and other research offer another child:

- MARY SHAWE, b. 1592; d. 1650; m. John Sedgley Fairfield; possible parents of John Fairfield in Chapter Three of this work. There is no documentation for Mary, or for these connections.⁷⁴⁵

Thomas Shawe Jr., d. Northowram, Halifax, Yorkshire, England bef. 15 May 1600; bur. Halifax, St. John the Baptist, 13 Nov 1599.⁷⁴⁶ Will proved 6 May 1600 in the Prerogative Court of York. In his Will he describes himself as "Thomas Shawe of the Towneshipp of Northowram parishe of Hallifax and County of Yorke".⁷⁴⁷

Full transcripts of the Wills of Thomas Shawe Jr. and of his spinster daughter Sarah Shawe were published in *The American Genealogist*, M.L. Bierbrier, *The Origin of Abraham Shaw of Dedham*⁷⁴⁸ and in Threlfall, *Fifty Great Migration Colonists and their Origins*, though the latter has a limited search capacity. They can be found at the end of this section.

After his wife Elizabeth has her dower, the rest of the estate of Thomas Shawe was to be devoted to the care and education of his minor children. To fund this bequest, in part he provided for an annuity, or rent, of 3 pounds a year and a surrender was made in the Wakefield manor court for that purpose:

Thomas Shawe of Northowram... surrendered into the hands of the lord an annuity or rent of 3£ annually... from a messuage or tenement...in Northowram... to the use

⁷⁴⁴ *The Genealogist*, Vol 10, No. 1, Spring 1989, Shaw, "The English Ancestry of Abraham Shaw of Dedham, Massachusetts (1590-1638)," 86-97: 92.

⁷⁴⁵ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Shaw-4011>, 11/3/2020.

⁷⁴⁶ <https://www.geni.com/people/Thomas-Shaw-Jr>, 11/2/1010; *UK and Ireland, Find A Grave, Memorial #63506138*, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020; *West Yorkshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials 1512-1812*, Halifax, St. John the Baptist, 1599, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

⁷⁴⁷ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 57, (1981), 85-87, (americanancestors.org), 11/2/2020.

⁷⁴⁸ *Ibid.*, 11/2/2020.

and behoof of Sarah Shawe, Susanna Shawe, and Martha Shawe, daughter of the aforesaid Thomas Shawe... for a period of ten years.⁷⁴⁹

Several of Thomas Shawe's friends witnessed the Will and were to be supervisors, among them William Illingworth of Illingworth (a relative of his brother John's wife, Grace Illingworth),⁷⁵⁰ Henry Best of Haldensworth, (father of Bridget Best, wife of Abraham Shawe) and John Longbothame.⁷⁵¹

Elizabeth (Longbotham) Shaw, m. (2) Richard Moore; d. bef. 15 July 1624.⁷⁵² *The Genealogist* article by Dr. Shaw states there are no children of this marriage. An online tree, indicates the children named in Sarah Shaw's Will, John Moore, Joseph Moore and Grace Moore, are children of this marriage and not Richard Moore's by a previous marriage. I have not explored this further.

Longbotham – Mawd Ancestry

There are numerous possibilities and spellings for the **Mawd** surname. I invite the reader to search: <https://www.surnamedb.com/Surname/Mawd> for four possibilities.

The **Longbotham** surname comes from the Middle English words *long* and *bodme* a term used to describe "a long valley." The name may have been taken on by someone who lived in such a valley, or it may have come from a place name such as Longbottom in West Yorkshire.

I have listed the two most credible possibilities for Elizabeth Longbotham the second wife of Thomas Shawe:

- 1) Thomas Shawe, m. (2) Halifax, 15 Dec 1588/89 Elizabeth Longbotham,⁷⁵³ bapt. St. John the Baptist, Halifax, England, 25 Jan 1560 daughter of Richard Longbotham and Alice___; living aft. 15 July 1624; d. unknown.⁷⁵⁴ Dr. Shaw in his *The Genealogist* article,

⁷⁴⁹ *The Genealogist*, Vol 10, No. 1, Spring 1989, Shaw, "The English Ancestry of Abraham Shaw of Dedham, Massachusetts (1590-1638)," 86-97: 91.

⁷⁵⁰ <https://www.genuki.org.uk/big/eng/YKS/WRY/Halifax/IllingworthChurchHistoricalNotes> - many of the names in this section are found in these historic notes.

⁷⁵¹ John B Threlfall, *Fifty Great Migration Colonists and their Origins*, (Madison, Wise, 1990), 353 – 64, 359, (read at familysearch.org), 11/17/2020.

⁷⁵² <https://www.geni.com/people/Richard-Moore>, 11/2/2020.

⁷⁵³ *England Select Marriages, 1538–1973*, FHL film #496813, Reference ID 2:KHZ9JL, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020; FamilySearch.org, <https://familysearch.org/ark:/61903/1:1:NVH9-3HW>, Thomas Shawe and Elisabeth Longbothome, 16 Dec 1589, from *England Marriages, 1538 – 1973*, 11/2/2020; *Yorkshire, England, Extracted Church of England Parish Records*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2001), Book: *Marriages 1538 – 1593*, Collection: *Yorkshire: Halifax – Registers of Marriages and Burials 1538 – 1593*, 11/3/2020.

⁷⁵⁴ *Find A Grave*, Memorial # 63505977, (ancestry.com), 11/2/2020.

The English Ancestry of Abraham Shaw of Dedham, Massachusetts (1590-1638), writes that “in the Will of one John Longbottom of Northowram there is a reference to a debt owed by Elizabeth Shaw, sister of John Longbottom sonne of Richard Longbottom.”⁷⁵⁵ Also, a John Longbothame, as mentioned previously, is witness to the Will of Thomas Shawe, Elizabeth’s husband.

- 2) Thomas Shawe, m. (2) 16 Dec 1588/89 Elizabeth Longbotham, b. Northowram Halifax, Yorkshire, England 13 Oct 1560, daughter of Brian (Brianus) Longbotham, b. Halifax, West Yorkshire ca. 1520; d. 1569; m. (3) Alice Mawd. This option is suggested by Threlfall in *Fifty Great Migration Colonists and their Origins*. One online tree writes, “a birth year of 1560 is unlikely as that would make her 29 at the age of her first marriage, something that was highly unusual in the time period.” On [wikitree.com](http://www.wikitree.com), she is detached from Brian Longbotham and Alice Mawd.

To follow Threlfall I’ve included the following:

Brian Longbotham (b. ca. 1520); m. (1) 25 Jan 1544/45 Agnes Crowther,⁷⁵⁶ b. ca. 1523; d. ca. 1552; son: Brian Longbotham Jr., b. 18 Sept 1544;⁷⁵⁷ d. 1637.
 m. (2) 11 June 1553 Alicia “Anne” Speght,⁷⁵⁸ d. 5 Jan 1558.
 m. (3) (ten days later) 15 Jan 1558 Alice Mawd,⁷⁵⁹ b. ca. 1538/39; d. Halifax, West Yorkshire 12 Jan 1572;⁷⁶⁰ mother to Elizabeth and five other children. The couple had an older son Edward Longbotham, b. 28 Oct 1558, mentioned in various Wills and family documents.⁷⁶¹

Brian Longbotham probably had brothers Edward, Robert and Thomas.⁷⁶² He may have been the son of George Longbotham, b. 1486 and Sarah Ferrand, b. 1486, d. 1520; son of Edward Longbotham, b. ca. 1420 and Margaret unknown. (unsourced).

Alice Mawd (third wife of Brian Longbotham), b. ca. 1538; possibly the daughter of John Mawd, b. ca. 1502; d. 1529/1539; son of Christopher Maude, b. 1480. (unsourced).

⁷⁵⁵ *The Genealogist*, Vol 10, No. 1, Spring 1989, Shaw, “The English Ancestry of Abraham Shaw of Dedham, Massachusetts (1590-1638),” 86-97: 91.

⁷⁵⁶ *England, Select Marriages 1538-1973*, 2014 – film #496813, Reference ID 2: KHT5G9, (ancestry.com), 11/3/2020.

⁷⁵⁷ *England, Select Births and Christenings 1538-1975*, citing FHL film #496813, #528766, (ancestry.com), 11/3/2020.

⁷⁵⁸ *England Select Marriages*, citing FHL film #496813, (ancestry.com), 11/3/2020.

⁷⁵⁹ *England Select Marriages*, citing FHL film #496813, (ancestry.com), 11/3/2020

⁷⁶⁰ *Find A Grave*, Memorial #63509309, (ancestry.com), 11/3/2020.

⁷⁶¹ *England, Select Births and Christenings 1538-1973*, citing FHL film #496813, #528766, 11/3/2020; *West Yorkshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials 1512-1812, 1572*, (ancestry.com), 11/3/2020.

⁷⁶² John B Threlfall, *Fifty Great Migration Colonists and their Origins*, (Madison, Wise, 1990), 353 – 64, 359, (read at Family Serach.org), 11/17/2020.

Shaw Ancestry Continued

Threfall indicates that Thomas Shawe Jr., was the son of Thomas Shawe Sr., b. 1538, a little before the parish registers of St. John the Baptist, Halifax, commence; m. 4 Oct 1652 Sybil Mason,⁷⁶³ bapt. 3 Feb 1539/40 daughter of Thomas and Jenet Mason of Halifax. Thomas was bur. Halifax, St. John the Baptist, 14 Mar 1574/75.⁷⁶⁴

Children of Thomas Shawe Sr. and Sybil Mason, all baptized Halifax:

- i. **THOMAS SHAWE JR.**, bapt. 30 Jan 1562/63; m (1) 3 Aug 1584 Agnes Smith; m. (2) 16 Dec 1589 **Elizabeth Longbotham**.
- ii. ANN SHAWE, bapt. 19 Mar 1564; m. Halifax 16 Dec 1589 John Strange, in a double wedding with Thomas and Elizabeth. (I don't know if this is noted in records, or an opinion of the author based on the date.)
- iii. GRACE SHAWE, bapt. 13 Feb 1567/8; bur. 5 Jan 1587/8.
- iv. SYBIL SHAWE (first of the name), bapt. 30 Sept 1571; bur. 15 July 1572.
- v. SYBIL SHAWE (second of the name), bapt. 6 July 1573.

Other online trees and *Find a Grave*,⁷⁶⁵ give them a son Ralph Shaw and possible daughters Jenet, Janet, Laura and another son Roger. Since we descend from Thomas Shawe, whether Jr., Sr., or both, I will leave the research of additional children/siblings to others.

Mason Family Ancestry

Mason is a medieval surname of French origins. It is a status and occupational surname which originally described a skilled stonemason, one who had served his time as an apprentice to a master craftsman. The derivation is from the pre 8th century Old French word *masson*.

If Sybil Mason is an ancestor, here is what I have found:

Sybil Mason, bapt. 3 Feb 1540,⁷⁶⁶ family member Thome Mason.

⁷⁶³ *England Select Marriages 1538-1973*, FHL film #496813, Ref 2: KHVNT, Sibella Mason, (ancestry .com), 11/3/2020; *England Select Marriages, 1583-1973*, <online database>, (American Ancestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), (Original Index; *England Marriages, 1538-1973*, Family Search, 2014), FHL film #496813, Intention: pg 67893534, Marriage: pg 66742564, Thomas is listed as Thomas Schai. 11/17/2020.

⁷⁶⁴ *West Yorkshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1512-1812*, (ancestry.com), 11/17/2020.

⁷⁶⁵ UK, and Ireland *Find A Grave*, Thomas: Memorial #63508468, Sybil: Memorial #63508080, (ancestry.com), 11/17/2020;

⁷⁶⁶ *England, Select Births and Christenings 1538 – 1975*, Sibella Mason, father Thome Mason, FHL film #496813 528766 (ancestry.com), 11/3/2020.

Many sites list Sybil's death in 1573, perhaps coinciding with the birth of her last child, Sybil (second of the name), baptized 6 July 1573. Other resources indicate Sybil Mason died about 1589. If the later date, then she died following the 1574 death of her husband Thomas Shawe Sr. Most researchers agree:

Sybil (Mason) Shawe, m. (2) Halifax 10 Sept 1576 John Appleyard, a widower: one daughter Alice, bapt. 6 Mar 1579/80; Appleyard was bur. 3 Feb 1586/7; Sybil (Mason) (Shaw) Appleyard, m. (3) Halifax 4 Feb 1588/9 John Mychell, also a widower; no children of this marriage.

Thomas Mason, b. Halifax abt. 1500; bur. 4 Aug 1551. *Find a Grave* Memorial 63507504, states he is the son of William and Anne Mason; bur. 11 Feb 1549/50; spouse Jenet ___, bur. 23 Mar 1573/74. Threlfall gives this bio:

Thomas Mason of Halifax, born probably 1500-1505; buried 4 Aug 1551. He was apparently in the iron smelting business, for in his Will he left his iron chimney and his smithy gear to his two sons. His wife's name was Jenet ___. She married (2) Nicholas Webster, buried 22 Mar 1572/3.

Children of Thomas Mason and Jenet ___, all baptized at Halifax:⁷⁶⁷

- i. JAMES MASON, eldest son in fathers Will. A James Mason, bur. 8 Aug 1551, Threlfall asks was it this James Mason?
- ii. AGNES MASON, b. prob. abt. 1530; m. 4 Dec 1553 William Paulden.
- iii. ELIZABETH MASON, living in 1551.
- iv. JOAN MASON, bur. July 1547.
- v. ISABELLE MASON, living in 1551.
- vi. MARGERIE MASON, m. 4 May 1556 Richard Bentley.
- vii. **SYBIL MASON**, bapt. 3 Feb 1540; m. 4 Oct 1562 **Thomas Shawe Sr.**, bur. 14 Mar 1573; five children; m. (2) 10 Sept 1576 John Appleyard, b. 3 Feb 1586/7; one child; m. (3) 4 Feb 1588/9 John Mychell.
- viii. ALICE MASON, bapt. 8 Oct 1542.
- ix. WILLIAM MASON, youngest son, bapt. 31 July 1544, m. 15 July 1566 Jenett Gibson, d. 10 July 1580; their daughter Margaret, d. 15 Mar 1580/81.
- x. UNNAMED CHILD MASON, b. prob. 1546; d. shortly after, no further information.
- xi. MARGARET MASON, bapt. 23 Oct. 1548; bur. 16 Sept 1566.

⁷⁶⁷ John B Threlfall, *Fifty Great Migration Colonists and their Origins*, (Madison, Wise, 1990), 353 – 64, 364, (read at familysearch.org), 11/17/2020.

Shaw Ancestry Concluded

Thomas Shawe Sr. was the son of Christopher Shawe, b. ca. 1518, parents unknown; bur. Halifax Parish Church 1 July 1583; m. unknown, though his children were being baptized by 1544/45.

Christopher Shawe probably spent his entire life in Northowram, a township of scattered hamlets several miles outside the market town of Halifax. He was described as a clothier by trade. On 31 September 1569, he gave his eldest son Thomas, as a marriage settlement, his copyhold of Scolecote Brow land. It is probably for this reason that Thomas is not mentioned in his Will, dated 19th February 1583 and proved in the prerogative Court of York, 6 May 1584.

The following provisions of that Will are significant (spellings updated):

... unto Alice my daughter twenty shillings. . . unto Isabell my daughter other twenty shillings if she do observe and keep my mind declared to the rest of my children and friends concerning her marriage. And if she do not, then I will that she shall have none of the said xx s, but it shall be divided amongst my executors hereafter to be named. . . unto John Shawe my son my bed where I lie with all things thereto belonging. And then the rest of all my goods which I have that are not given and un-bequeathed I freely give unto John Shawe, my said son, and to Elisabeth Shawe and Margaret Shaw, my daughters, whom I do ordain and make true and lawful executors . . .

Witnesses: Edward Longbothome, John Sawnfurthe.

Children:

- i. **THOMAS SHAWE SR.**, b. ca. 1542.
- ii. ALICE SHAWE, bapt. 5 Feb 1544/45.
- iii. JOHN SHAWE, bapt. 5 Feb 1547/48; Will dated 3 Apr 1598 and proved 28 July 1598; m. 9 May 1597 Grace Illingworth. Died without issue and his Will left "certyen tymber and furniture to Jonas Shawe, sonne of Thomas Shawe, my brother."
- iv. ISABELL SHAWE, bapt. 9 Apr 1550.
- v. ELISABETH SHAWE, b. ca. 1557, perhaps the Elysabeth Shawe who m. 3 June 1583 Gilebertus (Gilbert) Longbothom.
- vi. MARGARET SHAW, b. ca 1560, living Feb 1582/83.⁷⁶⁸

Christopher Shawe may have had another son:

- JAMES SHAWE, b. ca 1554, bur. 8 Mar 1557/58.

The controversy over the copyhold rights to Scolecote Brow (owned by Christopher Shawe), erupted between Thomas Sr. who had no issue by his first wife, and his brother John Shawe.

⁷⁶⁸ *The Genealogist*, Vol 10, No. 1, Spring 1989, Shaw, "The English Ancestry of Abraham Shaw of Dedham, Massachusetts (1590-1638)," 86-97: 90.

Because Thomas had no children, it appeared that his younger brother, John Shawe, would inherit under the provisions of the original surrender. Thomas claimed his father's surrender had been improperly recorded and that the heirs of the body of Thomas by his second wife should have been preferred over his brother. While the Court's decision favored Thomas, John's death, without heirs, before Thomas Sr.'s death, would have insured Thomas Shawe Jr.'s inheritance of Scolecote Brow – which he then passed to his eldest son, Abraham, immigrant.

According to **The Halifax Coalfields**, W.B. Trigg wrote in 1931 in the *Halifax Society Journal*:

In May 1590, there is an inheritance dispute over the Scolecote Brow land between brothers, Thomas and John, sons of Christopher Shawe. Thomas, the defendant retained the land. On 7 October 1600, "Abraham Shawe, son and heir of Thomas Shawe, deceased," paid license on it. On 7 October 1607, in the survey of the manor, Abraham is recorded as the owner of this land, then described as in Northowram, in ye greaveship of Hipperholme, with the same physical description as Sculcote Brow located in Northowram which is a township within the bounds of Halifax Parish in Yorkshire, England. Abraham and his wife Bridget sold the Sculcote Brow messuage (containing by estimation 12 acres and 3 rods) just before 25 September 1635. While in Sculcote, Abraham was trying to borrow money to finance the mining of coal. He is recorded in Northowram on 5 June 1635, when he gave a bond to Joseph Lister of Netherbrea and would have left for New England about the same time as his surrender of the copyhold land. He is absent 21 September 1635 from a mandatory appearance at the Court Baron.

Scolecote Brow: Scolecite, a hydrated calcium silicate mineral. I did not find any historical uses, though there are references to its contemporary 'energetic' properties.

Greaveship – the area for which a minor local official, bailiff, or foreman was responsible to collect rents and dues for the lord of the manor. In 1121, Hipperholme was one of 11 Greaveships in the Manor of Wakefield.

Messuage - a dwelling house with outbuildings and land assigned to its use.

Coal bed – two Hipperholme documents were found which point to the use of this term in the Elizabethan period. It occurred in 1581 and again in 1591: one myne of coals within the greaveship of Hipperholme, with all rights and the several colebeddes to the same mine apertainyng, lying and being, Northowram. The bed of coal was a layer or stratum of coal.

<https://yorkshiredictionary.york.ac.uk/words/coal-bed>

Chapter Five

The Third Generation of the Alden Ancestral Line in America

Hannah (Alden) Abbey's 3rd Great Grandparents

*Deacon Joseph Alden and Hannah Dunham
1668 – 1747*

Including the Dunham Family Ancestry

*and the Allied Families of
Kaino and Baillou*



The city of **Leyden/Leiden**, in the Netherlands, was a city of free-thinkers, relative religious tolerance and a long tradition of offering shelter

to the disposed. It is located on the Oude Rijn, (Oude River) 12 miles from The Hague to its south and 25 miles from Amsterdam to its north. It is located in the province of south Holland, within the tulip growing district.

In the 17th century, separatist Puritans, fleeing religious persecution in England emigrated to Leiden, which offered freedom to religious dissenters. Leiden was not, however, the paradise the Puritans had hoped for. Many who had formerly been of the upper class, found themselves working in the textile and clothing trades - laboring as tailors, hat makers, fustian makers (a strong and coarse cotton/linen twill), carders of wool; or in dyeing, sewing, and weaving. They had to work hard to maintain a low standard of living. Many of their children became caught in the great licentiousness of youth and the manifold temptations of Holland, "drawn away by evil examples into dangerous courses." Leaving for the Colonies became imperative.

Edward Winslow, who would become 3rd Governor of Plymouth Colony had traveled to Leiden in 1617 to help church Elder William Brewster in an underground printing of religious tracts critical of the English King. In the late 16th century, Leiden had become an important center for printers, academic publishers and bookshops.

Winslow soon became a leading member of the Leiden exiles. Along with William Bradford, Isaac Allerton and Samuel Fuller he wrote a letter representing the Leiden congregation to their London agents John Carver and Robert Cushman, outlining the terms upon which the Pilgrims would travel to America. The trip preparations became quite taxing on everyone's patience and pocketbooks due to various Thomas Weston financial schemes. As author Nathaniel Philbrick wrote, "During preparations to sail for America, the Pilgrims demonstrated an extraordinary talent for getting duped."

They boarded the *Speedwell* in July 1622, but after she sprang several leaks and was unable to be repaired, some members of the Leiden contingent boarded the *Mayflower*, severely taxing her capacity, and made their way to the Colonies.

Edward Winslow, wikipedia.org, citing Caleb Johnson, *The Mayflower and her Passengers*, (Indiana, Xlibris Corp., 251-252; Nathaniel Philbrick, *Mayflower: A Story of Courage, Community and War*, (New York, Viking, 2006), 18, 2/16/2021

*Chapter Five**The Third Generation of Aldens in America**Deacon Joseph Alden and Hannah Dunham
1668 – 1747*

Eleazer Alden was the son of Deacon Joseph Alden (farmer of South Bridgewater), b. probably at Bridgewater abt. 1668 (based on his age at death); d. Bridgewater 22 Dec 1747, in his 80th year; buried in the Old Graveyard, and the gravestone calls him “Deacon;”⁷⁶⁹ m. bef. 29 Jan 1690 (the birth of his first child), Hannah Dunham,⁷⁷⁰ daughter of Daniel Dunham, and native of Middleborough, b. Plymouth abt. 1670 (based on her age at death); d. Bridgewater 14 Jan 1743, in her 78th year, buried in Old Graveyard, and the gravestone calls her “native of Middleboro.” Hannah Dunham was named in honor of her father’s sister.

Joseph Alden Jr., was the son of Joseph Alden Sr. and Mary Simmons and a grandson of John Alden and Priscilla Mullins. John Alden, died 12 September 1687 when Joseph Jr. was 18 years old.⁷⁷¹

Hannah’s father, Daniel Dunham of the town of Plymouth, made his Will on 28 January 1677, proved 1 March 1677, naming his wife Hannah and children, Hannah and Mehitabel.

⁷⁶⁹ *Massachusetts, Compiled Birth, Marriage, and Death Records, 1700-1850, Bridgewater Deaths*, 424, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020; *Mayflower Births and Deaths, Vol 1 & 2 for Joseph Alden, Vol 1:33*, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020; *North America Family Histories, 1500-2000, The ancestors and descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife...9*, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁷⁰ *North America Family Histories, 1500-2000, Dunham Genealogy: Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth Massachusetts 1589-1669 and his Descendants*, 301, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁷¹ *Ibid.*, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

Children of Joseph and Hannah (Dunham) Alden, born at Bridgewater:⁷⁷²

- i. DANIEL ALDEN, b. 29 Jan 1690; d. 3 May 1767 at his seat in Stafford at the age of 80 years;⁷⁷³ m. (1) Abigail Shaw; m. (2) Rebecca Curtis.
- ii. JOSEPH ALDEN III., b. 24 Aug 1693; d. Bridgewater 19 Dec 1695.
- iii. ELEAZAR ALDEN, b. 27 Sept 1694; d. on his farm near Pine Hill, South Bridgewater 30 Jan 1773; m. Bridgewater 11 May 1720 **Martha Shaw**.
- iv. HANNAH ALDEN, b. 1 Feb 1696; d. Easton 1777 in the 81st year of her age; m. Bridgewater 29 Mar 1722 Mark Lathrop of Easton.
- v. MARY ALDEN, b. 10 Apr 1699; d. Stafford, Tolland, Connecticut 14 Feb 1782; m. Bridgewater 10 Feb 1719 Timothy Edson of Stafford.
- vi. JOSEPH ALDEN IV, b. 5 Sept 1700; d. Bridgewater 25 Oct 1704.
- vii. JONATHAN ALDEN, b. 3 Dec 1703; d. Bridgewater 10 Nov 1704.
- viii. SAMUEL ALDEN, b. 20 Aug 1705; d. on his farm at Titiquot, at the age of 80 years, or Bridgewater 24 Mar 1783;⁷⁷⁴ m. Abiah Edson, d. 31 May 1749; m. (2) Bridgewater 28 Dec 1752 Rebecca Washburn.
- ix. MEHITABLE ALDEN, b. 18 Oct 1707; d. Middleborough, Plymouth, Massachusetts 11 Apr 1739 at the age of 30 years, following 6 Apr 1739 birth of son Seth Eaton; m. 1729 Barnabas Eaton of Middleborough.
- x. SETH ALDEN (CAPT.), b. 6 July 1710; d. Bridgewater 6 Sept 1784 at the age of 74/75 years; m. 1 Jan 1739/40 Mehitabel Carver, d. 14 Oct 1757 age 52; m. (2) Bridgewater 19 Apr 1758 Jael (Peterson) Hayward; he inherited and occupied the farm of his father. His tombstone in First Cemetery Bridgewater reads:

"The corps in silent darkness lies, Our friend is dead, the Captain dies.
 In peace he lived, in peace he died, Sleeps sweetly by his consort's side.
 In this dark cell, they both must lie, Till the archangel rends the sky,
 And Saints ascend to Christ on high."⁷⁷⁵

Joseph Alden was paid for grand jury duty in March 1703/4, and he also served in March 1717/18.⁷⁷⁶ On 16 November 1713, Joseph Alden and his wife Hannah and Joseph Hayward and his wife Mahetable (sister of Hannah Dunham), all of Bridgewater, sold to Samuel Lucas of Plymouth, 30 acres of undivided land in Plymouth belonging to their father Daniel Dunham of Plymouth, deceased and granted 9 February 1701/2. In 1726, The same grantors sold additional land granted to John Dunham. (Plymouth Co LR 20:149)

⁷⁷² *Mayflower Births and Deaths, Vol 1, Alden 42*, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁷³ Mitchell, *History of the early Settlement of Bridgewater, in Plymouth County Massachusetts, ...*, 86 – 87, also lists all the children of Joseph and Hannah Dunham Alden, (archive.org), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁷⁴ *Ibid*, (archive.org), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁷⁵ US Find-a-Grave, Memorial #21783028, (ancestry.com), 11/17/2020

⁷⁷⁶ Woodworth-Barnes & Williams, *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations, Vol 16, Part 1, Family of John Alden, Generation III*, 99-101, (Albuquerque Library).

On 20 March 1724, Joseph gave ½ of his land and meadow with buildings and orchards to his eldest son Daniel. On 18 March 1724/5, Joseph gave to his son Eliezer about 35 acres of land in Bridgewater. And on 26 March 1728/9 he gave land in lots # 53, 55 and 56 in the first division to his son Samuel. On 11 September 1733, Joseph gave several pieces of land in Bridgewater to his youngest son Seth. On 21 March 1743, he gave his eldest son Daniel 1/3 interest in a purchase right to any undivided land in Bridgewater. (Plymouth Co LR 20:13; 30:220; 33:162; 39:198; 52:172)

In 1732, Joseph Alden of Bridgewater, with Daniel Alden and John Bolton, successfully petitioned for relief under the law of regulating mills, complaining that Benjamin Hayward and Zachary Whitman had raised a pond on the Town River in Bridgewater and caused considerable damage to their grass. (Plymouth Co Ct records 1:273, 299; 2:131, 134)

The Alden Memorial, published in 1867: "His Will is dated 12 Nov 1743, having not his signature, but his mark, shewing that at the time he was from infirmity, unable to write." No probate record has been found in Plymouth County.

Joseph and Hannah (Dunham) Alden both died in 1747; he was age 86, she was 78.⁷⁷⁷ Their headstones can be found in the First Cemetery Bridgewater, Plymouth Co, Section A, graves 21 & 22.

Here Ye Memory of Deac.N Joseph Alden
who Deceas.d Decemeber ye 22d 1747
in Ye 86th Year of his Life

Here Ye Memory of Mrs. Hannah Alden
Widow to Deacon Joseph Alden
who deceas'd January Ye 14th 1747
in Ye 78th Year of her age

Dunham Family Ancestry
Including Kaino Family Ancestry

Dunham is a toponymic surname of English origin, deriving from several places named Dunham, from the Old English: dun = hill, and ham = home/homestead. The villages called Dunham on the Hill are repeating themselves, as Dunham means on the hill. Locational surnames were usually given to people after they left their original homes and moved elsewhere. It was in medieval times, and to some extent remains so today, that one of the easiest ways to identify a stranger was to call them by the name of the place from whence they came.

⁷⁷⁷ Mitchell, *History of the early Settlement of Bridgewater, in Plymouth county Massachusetts, ..., 85*, (archive.org), 11/4/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Joseph Alden - Memorial #21782250, Hannah Dunham Alden -Memorial #2183475, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

Hannah Dunham, b. Bridgewater, Plymouth, Massachusetts 14 Jan 1670, daughter of Daniel Dunham and Hannah (____);⁷⁷⁸ d. Bridgewater, Plymouth, Massachusetts 14 Jan 1747; m. 1689/1690 Deacon Joseph Alden.⁷⁷⁹ Hannah's mother, Daniel's wife, is also named Hannah (____) and her maiden name is unknown.⁷⁸⁰ It is easy to become confused.

The 1907 *Dunham Genealogy* states, without providing any source or explanation, that Daniel Dunham was married to a woman named Mehitable Hayward, who was the daughter of Thomas Hayward of Bridgewater.⁷⁸¹ There is no evidence that his wife was a daughter of Thomas Hayward of Bridgewater or that Thomas Hayward of Bridgewater had a daughter named Mehitable or Hannah.⁷⁸²

Unfortunately, *The Dunham Genealogy* is not a reliable source. As stated by Mrs. John E. Barclay in her 1954 *The American Genealogist* (TAG) article on *The Dunham Genealogy*, she writes: *The Dunham Genealogy* contains a vast amount of material poorly arranged and much that is confusing and misleading. There are several serious errors and some absolutely impossible statements.⁷⁸³

The Dunham Genealogy seems to have confused the name of Daniel Dunham's wife with that of his daughter, and Hannah's sister, Mehitable Dunham, who became the wife of Joseph Hayward and the grandson of Thomas Hayward of Bridgewater.⁷⁸⁴

Yates, *U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900* includes entries that state that the wife of Daniel Dunham was "Mehitable Haywood, Mehitable Hayward, or "Hannah Hayward." This is also not a reliable source, as it was compiled from secondary sources, including family group sheets, pedigree charts and manuscript genealogies, many of which are unreliable. Yates may have also relied on the unreliable *Dunham Genealogy*. The only direct evidence of Daniel's wife is his 1677 Will, and the Inventory of his estate, which clearly establishes that her first name was Hannah.⁷⁸⁵ (1677 Plymouth Colony Records 3:2:102: 446)

⁷⁷⁸ *North America Family Histories, 1500-2000, Dunham Genealogy: Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth Massachusetts 1589-1669 and his Descendants*, 301, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁷⁹ *North America Family Histories, 1500-2000, The ancestors and descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife...9*, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020; *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 8, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁸⁰ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 30, (1954), 143 -155: 146, Mrs. John E. Barclay, "Notes on the Dunham Family of Plymouth, Mass.," (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020; Woodworth-Barnes & Williams, *Mayflower Families through Five Generations*, Vol 16, Part 1 of 3, *John Alden*, p. 99 – 101, (Albuquerque Library).

⁷⁸¹ *North America Family Histories, 1500-2000, Dunham Genealogy: Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth Massachusetts 1589-1669 and his Descendants*, 299 - 301, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁸² *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins, 1620 – 1635, Volume III G-H*, Thomas Hayward 292-292, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁸³ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 30 (1954), 143 -155: 146, Mrs. John E. Barclay, "Notes on the Dunham Family of Plymouth, Mass.," (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁸⁴ Mitchell, *History of the early Settlement of Bridgewater, in Plymouth County Massachusetts, ...*, 178, (archive.org), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁸⁵ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 30, (1954), 143 -155: 146, Mrs. John E. Barclay, "Notes on the Dunham Family of Plymouth, Mass.," (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020;

The entry for Daniel Dunham's marriage in Torrey's, *New England Marriages to 1700*, which is also based on secondary sources, states that his wife's name was Mehitable or Hannah and puts her maiden name as [Hayward ?] in brackets with a question mark next to it. This listing indicates Torrey was less than confident or had reason to doubt the credibility of the source.⁷⁸⁶

The conclusion of Barclay in her 1954 TAG article was that "Daniel's Will and estate Inventory refute statements that Daniel Dunham married a Mehitable Hayward. The wife shown by the records was named Hannah, but her parentage remains unknown." Many thanks to the author of the wikitree.com entry for John Dunham Sr., for the research and clarity offered above. From time to time there is substantial research presented in online trees!⁷⁸⁷

Daniel Dunham, b. Plymouth, Plymouth Colony, Massachusetts 29 Jan 1639, the son of John Dunham, Sr. and Abigail Baillou; d. Plymouth 1677/78; m. abt. 1668 Hannah ____.⁷⁸⁸

Children:⁷⁸⁹

- i. **HANNAH DUNHAM**, b. Plymouth abt., 1670; d. Plymouth 14 Jan 1747; m. Plymouth abt. 1689 **Joseph Alden Jr.**⁷⁹⁰
- ii. **MEHITABLE DUNHAM**, b. Bridgewater, abt. 1672; d. Bridgewater, 29 Dec 1755; m. 30 May 1700, Joseph Hayward.

Daniel Dunham was admitted a freeman in 1600, and in the following year was appointed highway surveyor. He became a land proprietor in Plymouth and Plymton. He resided for a time in Bridgewater and Dorchester. In 1671, he was appointed surveyor of highways. I have been unable to find additional information about his life. His Will is dated 28 January 1677/78 and the Inventory of his estate was taken 18 February 1677/78.⁷⁹¹ He died, most likely in Plymouth, between these dates.⁷⁹²

<http://www.histarch.illinois.edu/plymouth/P322.htm> has a listing of his Inventory. Also, a footnote: "Daniel Dunham of Plymouth, son of John Dunham, Sr. of Plymouth. 1677 Will names wife Hannah." (Plymouth Colony Probate Guide 1983:34; and "This Inventory was exhibited to the Court of his Matie held att Plymouth the fifth of March 1677 on the oath of hannah dunham widow *Plymouth Colony Wills, Vol III, part 2*, f. 102." 11/4/2020.

⁷⁸⁶ Clarence Almon Torrey, *New England Marriages Prior to 1700, Vol I A-G*, (New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2011), 480, (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁸⁷ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Dunham-151>, 11/4/2020.

⁷⁸⁸ *New England Marriages to 1700, Vol 1*: citing Torrey's *New England Marriages*, 480, (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁸⁹ *North America Family Histories, 1500-2000, Dunham Genealogy: Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth Massachusetts 1589-1669 and his Descendants*, 301, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020; https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Dunham-170#_note-3,5,6, 11/4/2020.

⁷⁹⁰ *Mayflower Births and Deaths, Vol 1 and 2, Alden*, 42, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁹¹ *Plymouth Colony Records, Wills, Vol 3 1683-1686, Part 2*:102, can only be viewed at FHL Salt Lake City, familysearch.org, 11/4/2020.

⁷⁹² *North America Family Histories, 1500-2000, Dunham Genealogy: Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth Massachusetts 1589-1669 and his Descendants*, 299, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #149380807, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

Daniel Dunham was the son of John Dunham Sr.,⁷⁹³ christened Pirton, Hertfordshire, England 8 Feb 1587, son of Richard Dunham; m. Clophill, Bedfordshire, England, 17 Aug 1612 Susannah Kaino.⁷⁹⁴ She was also b. in Clophill, Bedfordshire, and according to Anderson's, *Great Migration* was probably bapt. Clophill 12 Dec 1586, daughter of "Thomas Caine hoe." I have not found any further sourced information on her parents.

She is the mother of John Dunham's first three children: John Jr., Humility and Thomas. Susan (Kaino) Dunham d. by 15 Oct 1622 in Leiden, when a survey showed John Dunham living with his three children only.⁷⁹⁵ His marriage to Susan Kaino in Clophill, Bedfordshire was discovered and published in *The American Genealogist*, establishing his English origins.⁷⁹⁶

With his wife and children, John Dunham was among the English dissenters who removed to Leiden, Holland to establish a community there. Many of this group would travel on the *Mayflower* and establish the Plymouth colony in 1620. John Dunham was not on the *Mayflower*, but was one of many who would soon follow. One of the Dunham biographers, Isaac Dunham (whose work has been called into question) made a claim that John Dunham came over on the *Mayflower* under the name of John Goodman.

John Dunham's first known child was baptized at Henlow, Bedfordshire; this is also the known origin of John and Edward Tilley, and Robert Cooper. The Tilleys, with their niece Humility Cooper, were *Mayflower* passengers. It is reasonable to assume that John Dunham knew the Tilley's prior to his move to Holland.

However, according to Leyden records, John Dunham, widower (of Susan Keno, *Leiden Docs* 70)⁷⁹⁷ with three children, was married 22 October 1622 to Abigail Baillou. Witnesses were her father Thomas Baillou and a sister Anna:

John Dunham, m. (2) Leiden, Netherlands 22 Oct 1622 Abigail Baillou (aka Abigail Barrow, or Abigail (Wood) Barlow), daughter of Thomas Balliou. Married before Alphen and Groenendyc, Baliffs.⁷⁹⁸

⁷⁹³ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Dunham-151>, 11/4/2020.

⁷⁹⁴ *England Select Marriages, 1538-1973*, FHL film #599350, (ancestry.com), 6/8/2022.

⁷⁹⁵ *Global, Find a Grave*, Memorial 34796729, (ancestry.com), 6/6/2022.

⁷⁹⁶ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 71, (1996): 130-33, Robert Leigh Ward, "The English Origin and First Marriage of Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth, Massachusetts," (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020; *England, Select Marriages, 1538-1973*, citing FHL film #599350, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁷⁹⁷ *New England, The Great Migration and The Great Migration Begins, 1620 – 1635, Volume I A-F*, Susanna Dunham 602, (ancestry.com), 6/8/2022.

⁷⁹⁸ *Netherlands Marriage Index*, <online database>, (Lehi, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2016), if you click the link, it is all in Dutch, of course, 11/4/2020; *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700, Torrey's Third Supplement*, 83, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

As I looked for Dunham information, this bolded headline on wikitree.com jumped out:
THERE IS PUBLISHED A ROYAL ANCESTRY FOR JOHN DUNHAM WHICH IS NOW CONSIDERED TO BE A CASE OF (POSSIBLE) INTENTIONAL GENEALOGICAL FRAUD. ALL INFORMATION PRIOR TO THE 1996 AND 1998 ARTICLES MUST BE USED WITH EXTREME CAUTION!

These are acceptable sources:

The American Genealogist, Vol 71 (1996):130-33, Robert Leigh Ward, "The English Origin and First Marriage of Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth, Massachusetts,"

The American Genealogist, Vol 73 (1998):101-104, Paul C. Reed, "The Fraudulent Ancestry of Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth." (Both available on AmericanAncestors.org \$)

<https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Dunham-151>

John Dunham's Children with his first wife:⁷⁹⁹

- i. JOHN DUNHAM JR., b. Henlow, Bedfordshire (though some say Leiden) bef. 19 Feb 1614; d. Plymouth 6 Apr 1692; m. Barnstable 14 Mar 1641 Mary (___); seven children.
- ii. HUMILITY DUNHAM, b. Leiden 1616/17; no records after 1622.
- iii. THOMAS DUNHAM, b. Leiden 1619; Freeman 1647; d. Plymouth bef. 15 May 1677.

Children with his second wife:

- iv. SAMUEL DUNHAM, b. Leiden 1623; d. Plymouth 20 Jan 1711/12; m. Plymouth 29 June 1649 Martha (Beal) Falloway as her second husband; four children.
- v. JONATHAN DUNHAM, REV., b. Leiden abt. 1625; d. Edgartown, Dukes County, Massachusetts 18 Dec. 1717; m. Plymouth 29 Nov 1655 Mary Delano; no children; she, d. bef. 15 Oct 1657; Jonathan m. (2) 15 Oct 1657 Mary Cobb, b. 1637; six children; Jonathan was of Edgartown and Martha's Vineyard, Dukes County, Massachusetts.
- vi. ABIGAIL DUNHAM, b. Leiden 6 May 1627; d. Eastham Barnstable, Massachusetts 17 Aug 1684; m. Plymouth 6 Nov 1644 Stephen Atwood; two children.
- vii. JOSEPH DUNHAM, b. Plymouth 1631; Freeman 1657; d. Plymouth 16 June 1703; m. (1) Plymouth 18 Nov 1657 Mercy Norton, daughter of Nathaniel Norton; she, d. Plymouth 19 Feb 1666; m. (2) Plymouth 20 Aug 1669 Esther/Hester Wormwall; seven children by both wives.

⁷⁹⁹ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 71, (1996): 130-31, Robert Leigh Ward, "The English Origin and First Marriage of Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth, Massachusetts," (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020.

- viii. HANNAH DUNHAM, b. Plymouth abt. 1634; d. Plymouth 1 Apr. 1709, age 74; m. Plymouth 31 Oct 1651, Giles Rickard Jr.; ten children.
- ix. PERSIS DUNHAM, b. Plymouth 1635; d. Plymouth 30 July 1701; m. (1) Plymouth 29 Nov 1655 Benajah Pratt; eleven children; he, d. Plymouth 17 Mar 1682/3; m. (2) Plymouth Aug 1683 Jonathan Snow, he, d. bef. 30 July 1701.
- x. BENJAMIN (BENAJAH) DUNHAM, b. Plymouth 18 Nov 1637; d. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts 18 Feb 1676, OR d. Piscataway, New Jersey 24 Dec 1680; m. Plymouth 25 Oct 1660 Elizabeth Tilson, seven children; she m. (2) bef. Jan 1684/5 Jonas Wood.
- xi. DANIEL DUNHAM, b. Plymouth 29 Jan 1639; d. Dorchester bef. 18 Feb 1678; m. abt. 1688 **Hannah** ____.

John Dunham Sr., came to New England aboard the *Hope* or the *Hand Maiden*.⁸⁰⁰ There is a record of Abigail's 1632 arrival.⁸⁰¹

In 1632, he received a grant of land for the pasture of his cattle. His mark was a "croch on the left ear." In 1633, his first tax of 9s is levied. He is found in Plymouth records of that year, and elected Freeman (again in 7 March 1636/7). He was also a member of the Plymouth Military Company and became a Deacon of the Church of Plymouth under elder William Brewster. In 1636 he is granted land "for the sheepe the watering place & the skirt of upland at Goose Point & about the first & second brooke."

From 1636 to 1659, John Dunham Sr., served on numerous juries and inquests considering a variety of civil and criminal matters. On 5 June 1638, at a Grand Enquest, he was on the jury, which found Web Adey guilty of working on the Sabbath and sentenced to sit in the stocks; John Stockbridge was fined for making disgraceful speeches in contempt of the Government and William Reynolds was fined for drunkenness. On 7 June 1636, John Dunham Sr. served on a jury that found Helin Bellington guilty of slander and determined that she should be whipped in the stocks; Stephen Hopkins was found guilty of the battery of John Tisdal and fined. In 1638, John Dunham Sr. served as Deputy to the General Court and the record says:

He was a man of strict honesty and sterling character quite prominent in the growth and prosperity of the colony. He maintained this position for each successive Council meeting over the next twenty years.

On 4 January 1642, John Dunham Sr. was appointed with William Paddy, Mr. Atwood, Nathan Souther, Mr. John Jenney, Thomas Willett, John Barnes and Joshua Pratt to survey the land. Paths need to be constructed in the woods, for cattle and other purposes.

⁸⁰⁰ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620 -1635, Vol 1, A-F, John Dunham, 599-603, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.*

⁸⁰¹ *U.S. and Canada Passenger and Immigration Lists, 1500s – 1900s, Plymouth, Massachusetts, 1632, 599, referencing The Great Migration, and lists both parents and six of the children, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.*

He represented Plymouth as Deputy at a 27 September 1642 council that discussed the War with the Indians. He continued to serve as a Deputy through 1664.

He was on the 4 October 1648 coroner's jury for the execution of Alice Bishop, who was found guilty of killing her daughter Martha. She was true hanged. On 2 March 1658, he was a jury member for a court with many interesting cases of lesser severity:

- Arthur Howland was fined for holding Quaker meetings in his house.
- John Barnes was fined for drunkenness.
- Zoe Howland was sentenced to sit in the stocks for an hour for speaking opprobriously⁸⁰² of the ministers of God's word.
- Captain James Cudworth was discharged for being a Quaker.

There are also cases concerning land rights. The Court appointed him on 1 June 1658 to "set range" between Nathaniel Warren and Robert Bartlett on the lands on which they live. And on 2 August 1659, he was appointed to settle a controversy on the boundary of land between Thomas Pope and William Shirtlife. John Howland and Francis Cooke were also on this committee.

There is a deed of 4 July 1658:

On 4 July 1658, John Dunham Sr., weaver, to son Jonathan Dunham of Plymouth, planter, 'all that his house and land that said Jonathan Dunham is Now Possessed of and liveth upon near unto the Town of Plymouth and adjoining to the land said John Dunham now liveth on The said pcell of land soe given containing 14 acres of upland more or less...as also one pte of three of his marsh meddow att the Watering place; that pte being understood with lieth next to George Watson's meddow there.(PCD 2:212)⁸⁰³

In 1662, his son John Dunham Jr., was given a special land grant as the first born of one of the 'old comers.' Anderson's, *The Great Migration*,⁸⁰⁴ has several pages of land transactions and court records for John Dunham.

John Dunham Sr.'s Will was made on 25 January 1668/9 and in it he mentions his sons: John, Benjamin and Daniel. He had already given John his portion "both in land and other things to what I was able and beyond my abilities." His Will was witnessed by two staunch P\pilgrims, John Cotton and Thomas Cushman. His death is recorded in the spring of the same year. His wife, Abigail, was appointed to administer his estate; Thomas Southworth made the Inventory. Of his children, seven sons and three daughters survived him, all of

⁸⁰² "Expressing scorn or criticism," according to Google Dictionary.

⁸⁰³ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 36, (1960), 243 – 249: 244, Mrs. John E Barclay, "Jonathan (2) Dunham of Plymouth and Edgartown Mass," (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020.

⁸⁰⁴ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620 -1635, Vol 1, A-F, John Dunham*, 599-603, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

whom lived to mature years and became founders of large families. Of this large family, all of the children settled at first in the New England colonies, except Benajah, who removed to New Jersey about 1671.

John Dunham Sr. was a linen weaver by trade and also engaged in sheep and cattle grazing. His Inventory included weaving equipment, cotton, sheep wool and linen yarn.

John Dunham Sr., died 2 March 1668/9, aged about 80.⁸⁰⁵ He was deacon of the church &c. An abstract of his Will is as follows:

Will, 25 January 1669: To sons John (eldest), Benajah, Daniel and son-in-law Stephen Wood; and wife Abigail. Witnesses: Tho Southworth, John Cotton, Tho Cushman.
Inventory 16 March 1668 by Tho Southworth & Thomas Cushman.⁸⁰⁶

At his death, it was publicly stated in the town records that John Dunham was an approved servant of God, and a useful man in his place. In the rather lengthy entry, he is referred to as a Deacon of the Church of Christ at Plymouth. The statement was much longer than the comments that usually accompanied the lists of deaths in this book, suggesting that he was in some way more significant than average. (*Plymouth Colony Records, Vol 8, page 32*)

Abigail (Baillou) Dunham, died in Plymouth, Massachusetts, about 1669, aged 68-69.⁸⁰⁷

John Dunham (Haplogroup I1a) has been identified as the son of Richard Dunham (1550 – 1624), both from his baptism at Pirton, Hertfordshire, England and from the Will of Richard Dunham who died in Langford, Bedfordshire, England (some 8 miles north of Pirton), which names a son John amongst other children.

The Will of Richard Dunham of Langford, Bedfordshire, England was referenced in an article by Robert Leigh Ward published in *The American Genealogist, Volume 71:130-133*, "The English Origin and First Marriage of Deacon John Dunham of Plymouth, Massachusetts." That article excerpted some of the information from the Will but did not include the entire document. In my search to locate the other two sons of Richard Dunham, of Langford, I wanted to see the entire Will. Bedfordshire Family History Society researcher, Mary Wooldridge, has been assisting with the English research project. She photographed the will of Richard Dunham located in the Archdeaconry Court of Bedford. A transcription is given below and a

⁸⁰⁵ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol 9, (1855), "Plymouth Colony Records," 317, (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020.*

⁸⁰⁶ *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register, "Abstracts of the Earliest Wills in the Probate Office, Plymouth, Vol 7:" 178, (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020, 12/15/2020.*

⁸⁰⁷ *Global, Find A Grave, Memorial #34796738, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.*

photocopy of the actual appears in the *Dunham-Singletary* newsletter referenced in the footnotes. The spelling and punctuation are as close to the original as possible.⁸⁰⁸

The Will of Richard Dunham, Poulter of Langford
October the five & twentieth 1624⁸⁰⁹

In the name of God Amen, I Richard Dunham of Langford in ye county of Bedds poulter being sicke in body yet in perfecte memory thankes & prayse be given to God Almighty doe make & constitute my laste Will & testament in manner & forme following firste I bequeath my soule to God my Creator & Jesus Christe my Saviour & redeemer & my body to be buried in such a place as my executors shall thinke convenient lastely I make my sonn Richard Dunham my sole Executor. As for my worly [worldly] goods I give & bequeath in manner & forme following Item I give & bequeath unto William Dunham my longe horned browne cowe: and my lynsey wol-sey trusse [lynsey Woolsey trousers] diplate Item I give unto my sonn William & sonn Richard my Gofer that standes at my beddes head Item I give unto my Sonn John Dunham my best shirte and twenty shillings in mony to be payd him at his re-torne Item I give & bequeath unto my daughter Anne 12d & unto her sonn Richard I give my canvase diplate [above this it says] & my high shoes Item I give my daughter Elsabehe 12d in mony and halfe a bushel of griste at Christmas & halfe a bushel at Easter: And all the rest of my goods unbequeathed I give unto my sonn Richard Dunham my Executor, lastly I give unto my grandechilde Ellen Underwood my Cub-borde that standes in the chamber.

Witnesses here unto, John Dutton, William Headley/Headye
 Ye marke of Richard Dunham the elder
 Ye marke of William Ashwell witsesse



The “longe horned browne cowe” was most likely a Gloucester cow, an ancient breed valued for their milk, which produces a double Gloucester cheese. They are also strong draught oxen with black-tipped white horns. The cows are dark brown with black faces and a white stripe down the back and over the tail. (pinterest.com photo)

Mary Woolridge’s notes this about the Will:

I have not been able to find the meaning of *Diplate* under this spelling, but depilate means to remove unwanted hair. Lynsey Woolsey was a very rough fabric and I wonder if there was a process to make it less rough and scratchy and perhaps that is the meaning of this word. A cofer, coffer was a strong box in which to keep papers and valuables.

⁸⁰⁸ Gratia Dunham Mahony, *Dunham Singletary Family Connections Newsletter*, Issue 3, Vol 10, 15 July 2013, 3-5, dunham-singletary.org, 2/12/2021.

⁸⁰⁹ Geni.com for Richard Dunham; <https://www.british-genealogy.com/forum/threads/90448-English-roots-of-John-Dunham-prior-to-1632>, this thread indicates Richard was a laborer and/or a “poulterer”, one who deals in poultry or game.

The shirt and money to be paid to John Dunham “at his retorne” shows that the testator's son was away from home; the phrase probably means no more than that John would receive his legacy if he were to return, not that he was expected to do so. At the time, the immigrant (John Dunham) was in Leyden.

Her Name was Agnes ... The Will of Richard Dunham does not mention a wife which most likely means she had died before the Will was written. The following entry was found in the parish register of Stotfold, a parish adjoining Langford on the south east: Agnes wife of Richard Dunnam buried at Stotfold on the 14th January 1623/24. Arlesey, the parish adjoining Langford on the south, and directly west of Stotfold contains baptismal and marriage records which seem to be for the family of William Dunham, son of Richard Dunham, poulter of Langford.⁸¹⁰

Baillou Family Ancestry

The name **Baillou** is an occupational name for a steward or official, deriving from *baiulivus* in Late Latin. In Scotland, the word *bailie*, rather than bailiff is still used as the title for an officer in the courts. In Normandy, the title 'Le Bailli' was approximately equal to that of Viscount or sheriff.

Thomas Baillou, b. possibly 1580,⁸¹¹ m. ____; d. 1621.

Thomas was witness to the betrothal of two other daughters, sisters to Abigail: Anna to Nathaniel Walker 28 May 1624, and Mary to Stephen Foster of Rotterdam, 4 June 1639.⁸¹² There is a great deal of confusing information online, some sourced, some simply handed down through family histories. I will leave this branch to future researchers.

⁸¹⁰ Gratia Dunham Mahony, *Dunham Singletary Family Connections Newsletter*, Issue 3, Vol 10, 15 July 2013, 3-5, dunham-singletary.org, 2/12/2021.

⁸¹¹ AGBI, Vol 9: 292, referencing *the Gen Column of the Boston Transcript*, 22 Sept 1913: 2764, named as Thomas Barlow, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁸¹² *The New England Ancestry of Dana Converse Backus, Dunham*: 79, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

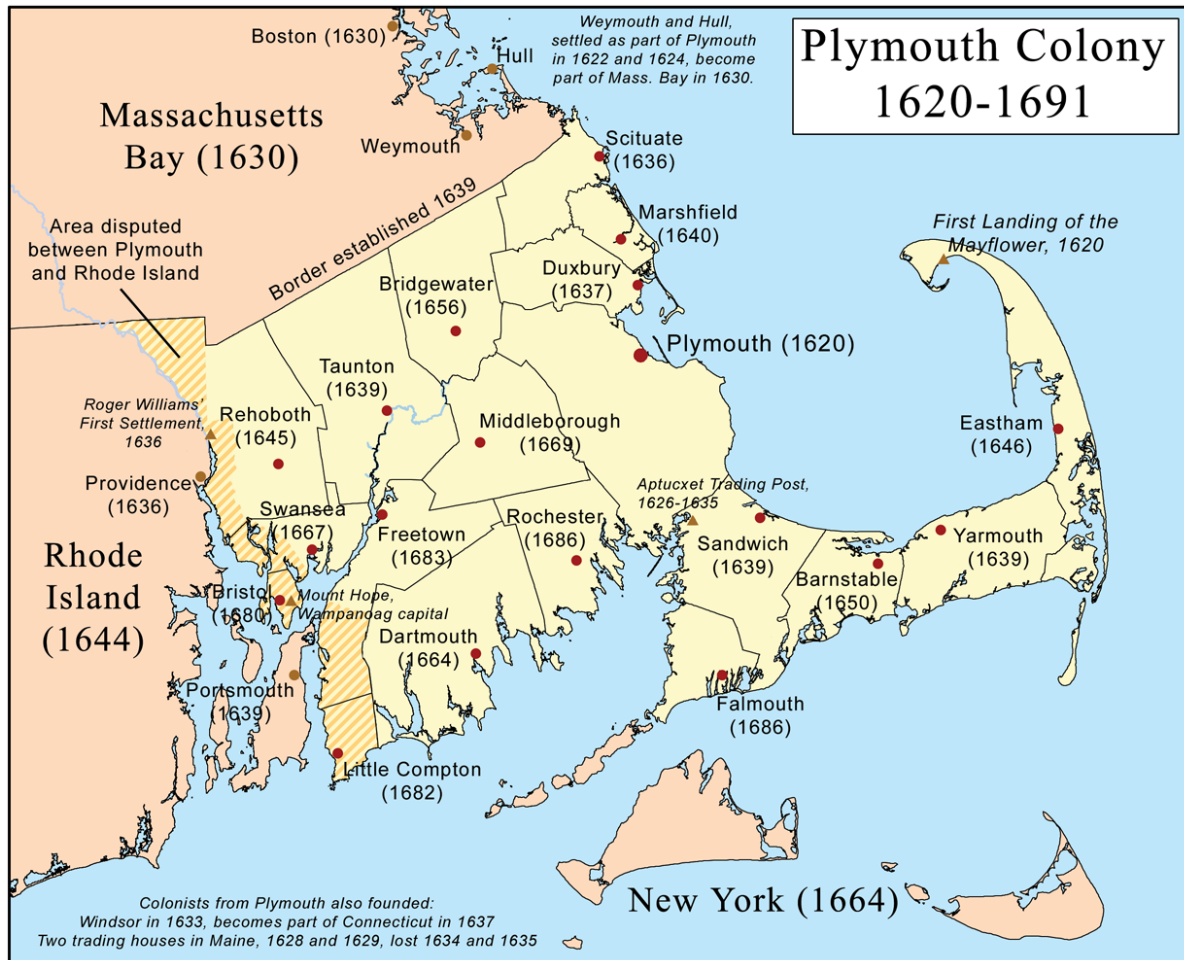
Chapter Six

The Second Generation of the Alden Ancestral Line in America

Hannah (Alden) Abbey's 4th Great Grandparents

Joseph Alden Sr. and Mary Rebecca Simmons
1627 – ca. 1697

Including the Simmons Family Ancestry



Ancestors in this generation settled primarily in Bridgewater and Duxbury, and marriages were made with families from Taunton. Marshfield, Middleborough, Plymouth and Weymouth, along with several towns in Rhode Island, were home to other ancestors in this Volume. The Vassalls of Volume One settled in Scituate, coming south from Boston.

Map from Pinterest.com

Chapter Six
The Second Generation of Aldens in America

Joseph Alden Sr. and Mary Rebecca Simmons
1627 – ca. 1697

Joseph Alden Sr., was the second son of John Alden and Priscilla Mullins and one of the original settlers of Bridgewater, Massachusetts, b. aft. 22 May 1627, as he is not mentioned in the cattle division on that date. (PCR 12:10)⁸¹³ In the cattle division, his father and mother are mentioned, also his sister Elizabeth, age 3, and his brother John, age 1.⁸¹⁴

In August 1643, Joseph Alden was on the list of men from Duxbury between 16 and 60 able to bear arms, but his name is “interlined” and may have been added a few years after the fact. (PCR 8:189)

The first improvements in Bridgewater were begun in 1654, in what is called the West parish, which, for a time, was known by the name of Duxbury Plantation. The Sachem who deeded this township went with the purchasers upon a certain hill in the East Parish, and made his conveyance in this manner, mentioning these considerations: “I give you all the land south seven miles; all the land North seven miles’ all the land West seven miles; and all the land East to where the white man lives.”⁸¹⁵

On 3 June 1657, Joseph with his brother Jonathan, was admitted a Freeman of Plymouth Colony. (PCR 3:117, 8:189)

⁸¹³ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III, Vol 1-3, John Alden, 24, (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020.*

⁸¹⁴ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol 52: 362- 363, Mrs. Charles L. Alden of Troy NY, “Alden Genealogy,” (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020; Woodworth-Barnes & Williams, Mayflower Families Through Five Generations, Vol 16, Part 1, Family of John Alden, Generation II: 37, (Albuquerque Library).*

⁸¹⁵ *The Ancestors and Descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife, (1599-1903), 9, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.*

He married in Duxbury, Plymouth, Massachusetts⁸¹⁶ about 1660 Mary Rebecca Simmons, born Duxbury, about 1641, daughter of Moses Simmons, Esq., who came over in the *Fortune*, and Sarah Simmons.⁸¹⁷

Children, all probably born at Bridgewater: ⁸¹⁸

- i. SARAH ALDEN, b. ca. 1665; d. bef. 29 June 1713; m. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts 24 Nov 1685 Joseph Crossman; four children.
- ii. ISAAC ALDEN, b. 12 Dec 1664, or ca. 1666 or before; d. Bridgewater 24 June 1727; m. Bridgewater 2 Dec 1685 Mehitabel Allen; nine children.
- iii. **JOSEPH ALDEN JR.**, b. ca 1668; d. Bridgewater 22 Dec 1747, age 80; m. **Hannah Dunham**.
- iv. MERCY ALDEN, b. ca. 1669 or before; d. Weymouth 1728; m. Taunton, Bristol, Massachusetts 26 June 1688 John Burrill; five children.
- v. HOPESTILL ALDEN, b. ca. 1671; d. aft. 18 Dec 1753; m. abt. 1689 Joseph Snow, son of William Snow and Rebecca Brown; seven children. Joseph Snow was chosen Lieut. of the military company of Eastham, Plymouth, Massachusetts.⁸¹⁹
- vi. ELIZABETH ALDEN, b. 1672/73; d. Bridgewater 8 May 1705, three days after the birth of daughter Elizabeth Snow, 5 May 1705;⁸²⁰ m. Bridgewater 12 Dec 1693 Benjamin Snow (brother of Joseph Snow); five children.
- vii. JOHN ALDEN, b. Sept 1674/5 (from age at death); d. Middleborough, Plymouth, Massachusetts 29 Sept 1730; m. Hannah White; 12 children.

Joseph Alden Sr. served on Grand Juries, the Grand Inquest, 1660, 1666 and 1685; and a jury to “lay out all ways in Bridgewater” in 1667. (PCR 3:115, 188; 4:123, 193; 6:36) He was a surveyor of highways in Bridgewater in 1669, 1679, and 1685. (PCR 5:19, 6:12, 166-167) He was a farmer by occupation, and had his father’s proprietary share.⁸²¹

⁸¹⁶ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III, Vol 1-3, John Alden*, 24, (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020; *Massachusetts, Town Marriage Records 1680 – 1850*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1999), *Vital Records of Bridgewater*, 11/4/2020; *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 8, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁸¹⁷ *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 8, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020.

⁸¹⁸ *Hendrick Genealogy: Daniel Hendrick of Haverhill, Massachusetts and his descendants*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), 190; *Mayflower Family Tree*, by ancestry.com user, C.C., 11/4/2020; *The Woodworth-Barnes & Williams, Mayflower Families Through Five Generations, Vol 16, Part 1, Family of John Alden, Generation II*, 37-39; <http://alden.org/aldengenealogy/database/pafg04.htm#88>, 11/4/2020.

⁸¹⁹ Nathaniel Bradstreet Shurtleff, David Pulsifer, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth, in New England: Court orders [being the proceedings of the General court and the Court of assistants] 1633-1691*, (United States, Press of W. White, 1855) Vol 6: 218, (books.google.com), 11/4/2020.

⁸²⁰ *The William Snow family: descendants of William Snow who landed at Plymouth, Massachusetts, in 1635*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), 7, 11/4/2020.

⁸²¹ *The Ancestors and Descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife, (1599-1903)*, 8-9, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020; *North America Family Histories, 1500-2000*, <online database>, (Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., Provo UT, 2016); *The Hendrick Genealogy: Daniel Hendrick of Haverhill, Massachusetts and his Descendants...*, 190, 11/4/2020.

By a deed dated 1 April 1679, signed 5 April 1679 acknowledged 14 April 1679, but not recorded until 10 April 1700, "I John Alden, in consideration of natural love and affection' convey to Joseph Alden, my beloved and natural son all that my share of land...Lying in the township of Bridgewater;" signed 5 April 1679, witnessed by William Pabodie and Jonathan Alden, acknowledged before Gov. Josiah Winslow. (Plymouth Registry of Deeds, Vol 3:194)⁸²²

In 1683, Joseph Alden was third on the list of land grants on the north side of town. These lots ran from Taunton line eastward seven miles; consequently, he lived very near Taunton.⁸²³ Joseph and Mary Alden sold land near the Gurnet's nose to Jonathan Alden on 2 September 1684. (Plymouth Col LR, 6:52)

In September 1686, Joseph Alden Sr. of Plymouth was freed from Military training for "bodily infirmity."⁸²⁴ A few months later, on 14 December 1696, his Will was dated. Joseph Alden Sr., died in Bridgewater, Plymouth, Massachusetts on 8 February 1697; his burial location is "lost to history." He was about 73 years of age.⁸²⁵

Inventory of his estate (moveables) was taken 8 February 1697 and valued at 76£, 1s, signed by John Leonard, Joseph Snow and Sam'l Allin Jr. Documents were recorded with the *Plymouth County Probate Records*, Vol 1: 256-257 on 3 March 1697.⁸²⁶ The original documents are missing from the files. On 10 March 1697, his Will was proved, and witnessed by Pallatiah Smith, Thomas Delano and Joseph Hayward. Executors were his wife Mary and son John. In his Will he made bequests to son Isaac, including a sawmill; son Joseph; son John; wife Mary. He named no daughters.

Mary (Simmons) Alden, died after 10 March 1696/97 when she was named co-executor of Joseph's estate.⁸²⁷

⁸²² *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 52: 362- 363, Alden, "Alden Genealogy," (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020.

⁸²³ *Ibid.*, (americanancestors.org), 11/4/2020.

⁸²⁴ *Plymouth County, MA: Plymouth Court Records, 1686-1859, Vol 1:2*, (americanancestors.org), 11/7/2020.

⁸²⁵ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #36023594, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020; *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register*, "Sketches of the early history of Middleborough," 338, (americanancestor.org), 11/7/2020.

⁸²⁶ *Plymouth County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1686-1881, Case # 138, Plymouth Cases 1-1999, Will of Joseph Alden 1696*, (americanancestors.org), 11/7/2020.

⁸²⁷ Woodworth-Barnes & Williams, editor, *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations*, Vol 16, Part 1 Family of John Alden, Generation II, 37-39, (Albuquerque Library); U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #55330250, (ancestry.com), 11/4/2020; (In the bio there is reference to the Will of Lionel Chilton, I have written the biographer, but without reply. I find no reference to Mary Simmons Alden in this Will.)

Joseph Alden's Will and Inventory
transcribed from the Original Records, by George Ernest Bowman

These are to publish and Declare to all whome it may concern, that I Joseph Alden senr. Of ye Town of Bridgewater in ye county of plimouth in New England being of sound judgement and memory Do ordain and make my Last Will and Testament in manner following my Immortall soul I do Humbly Resign into ye mercyfull hands of Almighty God my creator hoping through ye merrits and mediation of Jesus Christ to obtain pardon and Salvation my body I commit to ye Earth from whence it was to be Decently Interred at ye Discretion of my executors and the Rest of my christian friends. And as Touching Such wordly Estate as God hath Blessed me withall I Dispose of it in manner and forme as followeth.

Imprs - I Give to my son Isaac fifty Acres of land which he lives upon. Further I Give him Ten acres more which I gave him liberty to take up: more Ten Acres of Swamp. more two acres of upland which he hath taken up in lieu of the upland belonging to Coasters kitchen meadows. one Acre more of meadow at Byrams hole which he hath hitherto Enjoyed more I give to him Half my meadow lott in Byrams hole In consideration whereof my will is that he allow to my son Joseph Three acres out of the aforementioned ten acres of Swamp further I Give to my son Isaac Half my Sixty acres of land between Byrams Hole and the Sawmill All which lands above mentioned I Say I Give to him and to his heirs and Assigns for Ever.

Item - I Give to my Son Joseph The land whereupon he lives of which have already Given him Assurance by written Deed. further I give to him Twenty Acres lying upon the Great River Below Goodman Bayleys land. further I Give Between my two sons Joseph and John Ten Acres of land to be taken up to be equally Divided Between them which said lands as aforesaid I Give to him and to his Heirs an Assigns for ever. Item I Give to my Deare Wife my Homestead With all the Housing thereupon and all my other lands joyning thereunto more I Give unto her Ten acres of land upon the plaine more two woodlots lying on the left hand of ye way to Thomas Washbourns

And my will is That my son John Shall have the use and Improvement thereof for his and my wife's Comfort during her life time And that after her decease my son John should enjoy it all Together with half my sixty Acres above mentioned lying near the Sawmill And half my lott of meadow in Byrams hole All which parcels of land I Say I do give to him and to his heirs and Assigns for Ever:

ffurther I Give All my moveables to my wife to dispose of as she shall se Right and Interest in ye Majors Purchase and Also in ye undivided lands belong to my purchase Right to be equally Divided amongst them And finally I do Constitute make and ordaine Mary my wife executrix & my son John Joynt executor of this my Last Will & Testament utterly Renouncing Revoking & disclayming all other wils and Testaments whatsoever in witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and Seal this fourteenth day of December in ye year of our Lord one thousand six hundred ninety and six.

Signed Sealed pronounced and declared in the presence of us ye Subscribers viz Pallatiah Smith
 Joseph Alden senr his mark and a (seal)
 Thomas Delano
 Joseph Hayward

Memorandum: Pallatiah Smith, Thomas Delano and Joseph Hayward the witnesses here named appeared and made oath before Wm Bradford Esqr Judge of probate on ye 10th day of March 1696/7, that they were present & saw & heard Joseph Alden the Testator above named Sign Seal & declare ye Instrument above written to be his Last Will, and that to ye best of their Judgement he was of sound disposing mind & memory when he did ye same.

Attest Saml Sprague Register

William Bradford Esqr Commissionated &c for ye Granting of ye probate of wils and Letters of Administration within ye County of plimouth &c To all to whome these presents shall come or may concern Greeting Know ye that on the tenth day of March 1696/7 Before me in plimouth the Will of Joseph Alden late of Bridgewater decease to these present Annexed was proved approved and allowed who having while he lived and at the time of his Death Goods Chattels Rights and Credits The sd Deceased and his said will in any maner Concerning was committed unto Mary his wife and John his son Executors in the same Will named Well and faithfully to Administer ye same and to make a true and perfect Inventory of all and Singular the Goods Chattels Rights and Credits of ye sd deceased and ye same to exhibit into ye Registers office of ye said county according to law Also to Render a plain and true account of their said Administration upon oath. In Testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and the seal of ye sd Office. Date at plimouth the tenth day of march 1696/8

Samuel Sprague Register William Bradford



Author's Photo June 2019

The **Alden house in Bridgewater** was built around 1690 for Deacon Joseph Alden, the second son of John Alden of Plymouth fame, and message carrier for Myles Standish. It is one of the oldest houses in town and has many unique features: windows are fully framed with raised moldings, a large fireplace wall has raised panels with a built-in shelf above the fireplace opening, the front stairway has a heavy banister and boldly turned spindles. To the left of the fireplace is a very fine and unique slant back pewter cupboard with open shelves at the top and an original feather edge bottom door. The house is an integral saltbox with a small well added at the rear. Many families have called the old Alden house their home down through the many years it has been there. It is a private home and not open to the public. To respect the owners' privacy, I took photos from the street. 768 High Street, Bridgewater, Massachusetts.

**The Inventory of ye estate of Joseph Alden senr
who deceased ye 8th of ffebr 1696/7**

	£	s	d
Imprs Eleven shirts	1		
More Linnen	2		
More Linnen	1	10	
More wearing Cloaths hats and Shoose	6	16	
More for Beds and Bed Cloathing	11		
More cloathing	2		
More for pewter Brass & Iron vessels & Lumber	9	10	
More for Armes and Ammunition	1	15	
More for Cart and plows with all iron tooles	4		
More for Cattel horse kind and swine	5		
More in Debts Due	1	10	
More in Books	10		
More in Timber and Boards	1		
Total Sum	76	1	

This Inventory take which is ye movable Estate of ye abovesd Joseph Alden deceased by us this 3d day of March 1696/7

John Leonard
Joseph Snow
Samuel Allin Junr

John Alden, one of ye executors of ye Last Will & Testament of Joseph Alden late of Bridgewater deceased made oath before William Bradford Esqr Judge &c on ye 10th day of March 1696/7 that the above Written is a true Inventory of ye Goods Chattles & credits of the said Deceased so far as he yet Knoweth and that if more shall come to his Knowledge he will cause it to be added.

Attest Saml Sprague – Register⁸²⁸

Simmons Family Ancestry
Symons, Symonds, Simonds, Symonson, Simonzoon Family Ancestry

Several possible origins for the **Simmons** surname include:

A patronymic surname derived from the Biblical name *Simon* or *Simund*, from the Greek form of the Hebrew name *Shim*, which meant “hearkening or listening.”

A patronymic surname from the personal name *Simund*, meaning “victorious protector,” from the Old Norse *sig*, meaning “victory,” and *mundr*, or “protection.”

A possible evolution of the name *Seaman*, meaning “navigator or sailor.”

⁸²⁸ *Mayflower Descendants: A Magazine of Pilgrim Genealogy and History*, (Boston, Massachusetts Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1899 -), Vol 6 (1904), 71 – 74, <online database>, (American Ancestors.org, NEHGS, 2010). Printed out from the internet and re-typed, 1/20/2021.

Simmons, formerly written as Moyses Symonson, b. Reusel-De Mierden Municipality, Noord-Brabant, Netherlands abt. 1604 (assuming he was a young servant when he arrived in New England); d. between 17 June 1689, date of Will and 10 Sept 1691, date of Inventory;⁸²⁹ m. Duxbury/Bridgewater Massachusetts ca. 1630 Sarah ___, b. Massachusetts 1616.⁸³⁰

There is a great deal of misinformation as to the wife of Moses Simmons and mother of Mary Simmons. Over and again, she is named as Sarah Chandler, daughter of Roger Chandler, but there is no proof. Roger Chandler did have a daughter Sarah (by wife Isabel Chilton), but she was the wife of Solomon Leonard. The Mayflower Society recognizes this marriage. Who Sarah (___) Simmons might have been, remains a mystery.

Children:⁸³¹

- i. REBECCA SIMMONS, b. ca. 1635, called eldest daughter by her father; m. 1655 as first wife, John Soule, son of George Soule of the *Mayflower*.
- ii. MOSES SIMMONS JR., b. ca. 1639; d. Duxbury Mar 1676; m. by 1664 Patience Barstow, daughter of William Barstow of Scituate. By 27 July 1664 William Barstow had given a "small tract" of land unto my *son* Moses Simons. (PCR 4:68-69). Moses is not mentioned in his father's Will, probably because he died about 15 years before his father.
- iii. **MARY SIMMONS**, b. ca. 1641; d. aft 10 Mar 1696/97; m. by abt. 1660 **Joseph Alden Sr.**, son of John Alden. (MD 31:60)
- iv. JOHN SIMMONS, b. ca. 1644; m. Duxbury 16 Nov 1669 Mercy Pabodie, daughter of William and Elizabeth (Alden) Pabodie, granddaughter of John and Priscilla Alden.
- v. SARAH SIMMONS, b. ca. 1649; d. Duxbury 17 June 1689; m. by 1669 James Nash; their eldest child b. Weymouth 21 Apr 1669.
- vi. ELIZABETH SIMMONS, b. ca. 1651; m. aft. 1673 (PCR 5:116) and before 1689, Richard Dwelly (Father's Will).
- vii. AARON SIMMONS, b. ca. 1653; d. Scituate 12 Mar 1718; m. Scituate 24 Dec 1677 Mary Woodworth, daughter of Walter Woodworth.

Moses Simonson arrived in Plymouth in 1621 in the *Fortune* from Leiden, Holland.⁸³² His occupation was that of Yeoman/farmer. "Because a child of one that was in communion with

⁸²⁹ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III, Vol 3 P-W*, 1681-1683, (americanancestors.org), 11/7/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #34751557, has date of death 15 Sept 1691, and his wife's surname as Chandler, this is undocumented, (ancestry.com), 11/7/2020.

⁸³⁰ U.S., *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 674, (ancestry.com), 11/7/2020.

⁸³¹ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III, Vol 3 P-W*, 1681-1683, (americanancestors.org), 11/7/2020.

⁸³² *New World Immigrants, Vol 1, The Mayflower Papers: 5 Immigrants on the Pilgrim Ships*, 11, <online database>, (ancestry.com), 11/7/2020; U.S. and Canada, *Passenger and Immigration Lists Index*, (ancestry.com), 11/7/2020.

the Dutch church at Leyden, is admitted into church fellowship at Plymouth in New England, and his children also to baptism, as well as our own.” (Young Pilgrim Fathers: 392)⁸³³

In the 1623 Plymouth land division, Moyses Simonson & Philipe de la Noy” (Phillip Delano) jointly received two acres. (PCR 12:5) The author of *The Great Migration* suggests this may have been because they came from Leiden together. On 28 March 1628, Moses Simonson sold one (1) acre to Robert Hicks. (PCR 12:7) In the 1627 Plymouth Cattle division, Moses Simonson was the 8th person in the first company headed by Francis Cooke. (PCR 12:9) They received four black heifers, that came in the Jacob and two she-goats.

The Massachusetts Early Census of 1632 finds him in Plymouth, Plymouth County.⁸³⁴ He is on the Plymouth List of Freemen and in the Duxbury section of Freemen beginning in 1633 and again in 1639, 1643, 1658, 29 May 1670 and early 1683. On 25 March 1633 and 27 March 1634, Moses Symons assessed 9s in the Plymouth tax lists. (PCR 1:11, 28)

From the 1650s to 1675, the sale of Indian lands to the colonists increased significantly, from fourteen Indian land deeds registered in the Plymouth Court in the 1650s to seventy-six deeds recorded between 1665 and 1675. Several Plymouth deeds show that Moses Simmons and his son Aaron, early settlers of Scituate, bought some lands from Josiah Winslow and Constant Southworth.⁸³⁵

Moses Simmons was appointed highway surveyor in Duxbury on 3 June 1657 and 3 June 1662. He was one of the original purchasers of "Old Dartmouth" (New Bedford) and in 1662, one of the proprietors of Middleborough, his lot being the 18th "bounded with a red oak and a Walnut tree Marked." (PCR 3:116, 4:14)⁸³⁶

He served on a petit jury on 25 Oct 1668 to settle differences between the Winslow brothers. (PCR 7:150) Edward and Gilbert Winslow arrived on the *Mayflower*, and John arrived on the *Fortune*. Kenelm, who married (2) Eleanor (Newton) Adams, widow of ancestor John Adams (reviewed in Volume One), and his brother Josiah Winslow also settled in New England, arriving before 1632.

On 13 December 1660, Moses Simmons of Duxbury “with consent of my wife Sarah” sold “my whole right of lands in Bridgewater town” to Nicholas Byram. (Mayflower Deeds 34:85 citing PCLR 3:24)

⁸³³ *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620-1633, Volumes I-III, Vol 3 P-W, 1681-1683*, (americanancestors.org), 11/7/2020.

⁸³⁴ *Massachusetts, Compiled Census and Census Substitutes Index*, Citing: *MA Early Census Index*, 253, (ancestry.com), 11/7/2020.

⁸³⁵ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Josiah_Winslow, 11/7/2020.

⁸³⁶ Duxbury, Mass., & George Ethridge, *Copy of the old records of the town of Duxbury, Mas. From 1642 to 1770. Made in the year 1892* (Plymouth, Avery & Doten, Book and Job Printers), 1893, 10, 11, 178, 272, 277, 289 for Moses Simmons, (archive.org), 6/8/2022.

On 3 June 1662, Moses Simonson was twenty fifth on the list of those granted land “as being the first-born children of the government,” receiving two tracts of land. (PCR 4:19)

Moses Symons (Jr.) of Scituate sold on 31 October 1664, to Joseph Coleman Sr. of Scituate, shoemaker, half of 40 acres of land at Coaksett which was sometimes the land of my father Moses Simmons of Duxburrow; acknowledged by Patience, wife of Moses Symons Jr. (PCLR 3:183)

Moses Simmons of Duxbury, planter, deeded on 20 April 1669 to John Simmons his true and natural son all that his dwelling house, outhouses and buildings, land, meadow and upland, orchards and gardens in Duxbury, containing forty acres of upland and 3 acres of meadow with 2 acres of meadow... at little wood island in the great marsh. (PCLR 3:139)

On 3 June 1673, Richard Sutton of Roxbury brought suit vs. Moses Symond, Sarah his wife and their daughter Elizabeth, saying Elizabeth had promised to marry him, but her parents prevented it. The court refused the engagement but ordered “Symonds” to pay Sutton 3£. (PCR 5:116)

Moses Simons of Duxbury, yeoman, in consideration of a marriage hereto fore consummated between John Soule of Duxburrow and my eldest daughter Rebeckah, deeded to them on 30 December 1674, “all my purchased lands at Namaskett.” (MD 19:96, citing PCLR 4:43)

On 4 December 1678, Moses Simmons Sr. of Duxbury, yeoman, deeded to my son Aron Simmons of Scituate all that my one-half share of land, with upland and meadow lands divided and undivided... that I have a purchaser or old comer in Dartmouth. (PCLR 4:219) He was educated enough to sign a number of his deeds, but by 1678 was using a mark.

Moses Simmons Jr., son of Moses Sr. was not mentioned in his father’s Will, probably because he died in March 1676, about fifteen years before his father. (A true copy from *the Plymouth County Probate Records*, Vol 1: 106. Attest: Sumner A. Chapman, Register.)

Moses Simmons may have been the son of William Simonzoon (Symonson) who lived near the church at Leyden. There is mention of this William Simonzoon in “The Purchase of the Reverend John Robinson’s House, in Bell Alley Lyden 26 April 1611.”⁸³⁷ The change in spelling of Symonson to Simmons indicated they were of English origin.

⁸³⁷ *History of the Simmons family*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2005), Introductory, 5-10, 11/7/2020.

**The Last Will and Testament of Moses Simmons
dated 17 June 1689 and proved 15 September 1691**

I, being aged and full of decaye but in my right and perfect understanding and not knowing the day of my death, do will that my estate shall thus be disposed of after my decease:

In the name of God, Amen.

Item 1 – I do will and bequeath my body to the grave, and that it be decently buried and funeral charges defrayed out my estate before any legacie. And my soul to God that gave it me whome I trust hath redeemed it.

Item 2 – I do will that all my personal debt be paid out of my personal estate.

Item 3 – I will and bequeath to my daughter Mary, the wife of Joseph Alden, Four pounds.

Item 4 – I will and bequeath to my son Aaron, Four pounds.

Item 5 – I do will and bequeath to my daughter Elizabeth, now the wife of Richard Dwelley, Five shillings.

Item 6 – I do will and bequeath to my daughter Sarah, now the wife of James Nash, Two pounds, Ten shillings of which the said James Nash hath Two pounds, Five shillings in his hands already.

Item 7 – I do will and bequeath to my son John, Four pounds

Item 8 – I do will, constitute, ordaine and appoint my son John to be executor of this my Last Will and Testament. .

So desiring that all my children may be at peace after my decease I do to these present set my hand and seal this seventeenth day of June in the year of our Lord God, One thousand six Hundred Eighty and Nine.

In the presence of
Benjamin Chandler
David Alden
Thomas Delano

The mark M of
Moses Siomons

David Alden and Thomas Delano, two of the witnesses here named made oath before the county Court at Plymouth 15September 1691 that they were present and saw the above-named Moses Simons signe, seal and heard him declare the above written to be his Last Will, and, that to the best of their judgement, he was of disposing mind and memory when he so did. (MD 31:60, citing PPR 1:106)

Attest Same Sprague cler.

The Inventory of the estate of Moses Simmons, late of Duxbury was taken 10 September 1691 by Thomas Delano and Edward Southward. It totaled 53£ 11s with no real estate included, it was presented at Court, by John Simmons, son of the deceased 15 September 1691.⁸³⁸ (MD 31:60, citing PPR 1:107) 15 September 1691 is also noted as the date of his death.⁸³⁹

⁸³⁸ Lorenzo Albert Simmons, *The History of the Simmons family: from Moses Simmons, 1st, (Moyses Symonson) ship Fortune, 1621, to and including the eleventh generation in some lines, and very nearly complete to the third and fourth generations from Moses 1st, (Lincoln, Neb. 1930),* 9-10 (babel.nathitrust.org), 1/20/2021.

⁸³⁹U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #34751557, has date of death 15 Sept 1691, (ancestry.com), 11/7/2020.

Chapter Seven

The First Generation of the Alden Ancestral Line in America

Hannah (Alden) Abbey's 5th Great Grandparents

*John Alden and Priscilla Mullins
1598 – 1687*



www.mayflower400uk.org



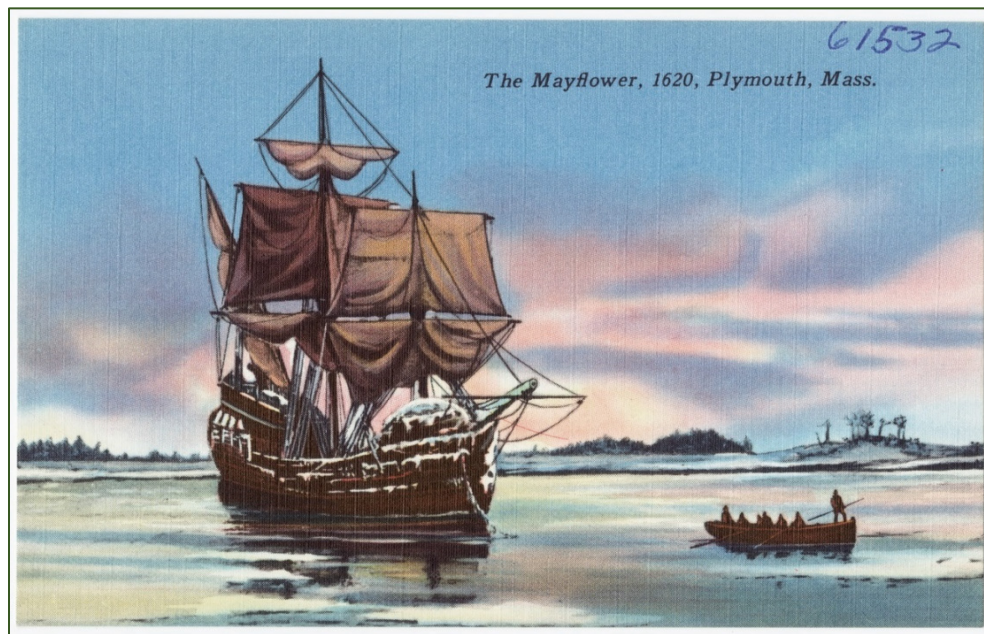
Cut away of a merchant ship
Pinterest.com

A merchant ship called the Mayflower set sail from Plymouth, a port on the southern coast of England. Normally, the Mayflower's cargo was wine and dry goods, but on this trip the ship carried passengers: 102 of them, all hoping to start a new life on the other side of the Atlantic.

Chapter Seven
*The First Generation of Aldens in America*⁸⁴⁰

John Alden and Priscilla Mullins
1598 – 1687

Joseph Alden was the son of John Alden Sr., one of the original settlers of the Plymouth Colony. He is the ancestor of all who bear the name of Alden in this country. For those interested in yDNA he is in the Haplogroup R-FTC62332.



Postcard from the Boston Public Library,
The Tichnor Brothers Collection (ca. 1930-1945)

John Alden was born, probably in England, between 6 July and 12 September 1598/1599. Many sources indicate Hampton, or Southampton, England but researchers have concluded

⁸⁴⁰ Note: for both John Alden and William Mullins the number of books and research materials is vast. I have offered select citations and footnotes, and inserted the colonial records into the text, as I found them. Please know there are many other sources available.

there is no proof of his birthplace, or parents or ancestors.⁸⁴¹ He married in Plymouth Colony, most likely in 1622, Priscilla Mullens, b. England abt. 1603. They arrived in the colonies on the 1620 voyage of the pilgrim ship *Mayflower*. John Alden may have been about 21 years old when the *Mayflower* sailed.

One story tells that the ship's carpenter had been taken ill, and young Alden, hearing of the circumstance from some of the crew, decided to apply for the position. Although a *cooper* by trade, he was considered proficient enough at handling tools for a ship's carpenter, and was added to the crew of about thirty to forty (usually men), and finally to the ship's company. In other accounts, he was hired to be the ship's cooper, responsible for making and maintaining the ship's barrels. Almost everything was shipped in barrels — salted fish and salted pork, beer, almost anything you wanted to keep dry or wet.

He was not one of the Leyden church pilgrims⁸⁴² or Separatists who first embarked on the *Speedwell* at Delft Haven, Netherlands, stopping at Southampton, to meet the *Mayflower*. John Alden did not come like these others for religious privileges; instead, he came to try to make his fortune in the new world. However, on the voyage, he "became imbued with the religious zeal of those around him, and joined them, and ever after worked faithfully with them. He learned to esteem, at their true value, the lofty principles and unselfish consecration to duty which lay at the foundation of the movement so that he was drawn to identify himself with it."⁸⁴³

Separatists, who became known as **pilgrims**, believed in a complete break from the Church of England. They practiced strictness and austerity in their religion, lifestyle, and conduct. The pilgrims, with their church elder William Brewster, initially moved to Leiden/Leyden in the Netherlands, a religiously tolerant country, to escape religious prosecution and to gain new converts. However, in the Netherlands, their employment options were limited, and their children were losing their parents' culture, ideology, and language. Emigrating to a new land appeared to be the only option. And so, the *Mayflower* soon set sail.

In contrast to the pilgrims, **puritans** wanted to "purify" the Church of England of its remaining Catholic influence and rituals and to return to the simple faith of the New Testament. They did not want to separate entirely from the Church of England. They began their emigration from England in 1630. Although both pilgrims and puritans were looking for the freedom to worship in the way they wanted, they were generally intolerant of religions other than their own.

⁸⁴¹ Many works elaborate on various speculations and I leave it to the reader, if interested, to seek those out.

⁸⁴² *North America Family Histories, The Ancestors and Descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife*, 8-9, (ancestry.com), 11/7/2020.

⁸⁴³ Harriet Hyde Wells, Harry Weston Van Dyke, *several ancestral lines of Josiah Edson and his wife Sarah Pinney, married at Stafford Connecticut, July 1, 1770. With a full genealogical history of their descendants to the end of the nineteenth Century. Covering three hundred years and embracing ten generations*, (Albany NY, J Munsell's Sons, 1901), 27 – 28, <archive.org>, 11/7/2020.



It has now been 400 years since the *Mayflower* sailed 6 September 1620 from Plymouth, England for America.⁸⁴⁴ Crossing the Atlantic was a long, challenging journey with limited provisions and cramped quarters. Meals consisted mainly of peas porridge, a pea soup, ship's biscuits, a tough thin bread, beer and salted fish. By October, several Atlantic storms made the voyage treacherous. Many aboard suffered from sea-sickness creating unsanitary conditions; others were afflicted with severe illness and died before reaching America.

The trip itself took 66 days until Cape Cod was sighted on 9 November 1620. Aboard were various families totaling 103 people leaving England for reasons of their own; a new life, freedom of worship and motives we will never know.⁸⁴⁵

Riddles and word puzzles were as popular in the 17th century as they are today. They provided not only plenty of entertainment but were an excellent grindstone for the sharp mind! Some of our favorite books of 17th century English riddles include the *Book of Merry Riddles* (1629), *Meery Riddles* (1631), and *Prettie Riddles* (1631). Some are still in print today!

Here are some riddles the Pilgrims may have known and pondered on the long ocean voyage. The first two have answers – for the others, put your wits to the test and see if you can solve them! (Author's note: I haven't had much luck!)

Question: I wound the heart and please the eye. Tell me what I am, by and by.

Solution: Beauty.

Question: When I did live, then was I dumb, and yield no harmony: But being dead, I do afford most pleasant melody.

Solution: Any musical instrument made of wood.

Question: I went to the woods and I caught it, I sat me down and I sought it, but since I could not find it, home with me I brought it?

Question: What is that, that shineth all the day, and at night it is raked up in its own dirt?

Question: What is it that goeth through thick and thin and drags it's guts behind?

Question: What is it that hath his belly full of man's meat and yet his mouth if full of dirt?

Question: What is higher than a house and yet seems smaller than a mouse?

Question: What is full all day and empty at night?

Question: Who is he that runneth through the hedge, his house on his back?

Question: What is it that you can fit twenty in a tankard and yet one will fill a barn?

Question: What is it that is as small as a nit, and yet serves the king at every bit?

Question: The more it is the less men fear it, the less it is the more men fear it.

Plimoth.org/students/activities-games/riddles 6/24/2022

⁸⁴⁴ mayflowerhistory.com for history, 11/7/2020.

⁸⁴⁵ U.S. Mint.gov



What did the Pilgrims Wear?

The image of black clothing, buckles and blunderbusses persist in the public mind. To overcome this misperception and to assist in this effort to change public perceptions, the donning of appropriate garments representing what the Pilgrims actually wore should be a major objective for the commemoration of the 400th anniversary of the arrival of the *Mayflower*. We the *Mayflower* descendants need to “Dress Like a Pilgrim” and wear “Pilgrim Appropriate Apparel (PAA).” Here are our recommendations:

Fabrics - In 17th Century England and in the Netherlands, were two basic fabrics that were used for clothing, wool and linen. There was combination of wool and linen known as *fustian corduroy* that was also used, however finding this fabric today is almost impossible. Cotton while available was very rare and very expensive in the early 17th century.

Colors - We know that the Pilgrims wore a variety of colors in their clothing from probate records where the color of various clothing items were mentioned including the colors violet, blue, green. The color red was also listed. However, the reds that were used in the early 17th century were more of a brick red and a *matter* red which is a little more orange in nature than modern reds. Thus, bright red, scarlet or crimson should be avoided. Black was a difficult color to obtain in the early 17th century and was very expensive and thus would not have worn by our Pilgrim ancestors.

From “Dress Like a Pilgrim Procurement Guide,” written by Mayflower Guard, General Society of Mayflower Descendants 29 September 2018. www.mayflower.org for more information. The Guide contains images, links for clothing patterns, places to purchase Pilgrim clothing and much more, 6/2/2022. The image above is by James W. Baker, “Pilgrim Images III,” *Mayflower Journal* Vol 2, No. 1 [2017], pp 7-19.

See Volume One of Abbey-Ashman for how to “Talk Like a Pilgrim.”

There was perhaps a bright spot on the long voyage, and it is the stuff of legends. On board, John met Priscilla Mullins, the young (perhaps 17/18 years old) daughter of William and his wife Alice Molines, commonly called Mullins. Her brother Joseph also traveled with their parents, as well as a servant Robert Carter.⁸⁴⁶ They were of the Walloon Huguenot contingent.⁸⁴⁷

When John Alden arrived at Plymouth, being, “a hopeful young man” as Gov. Bradford states, “was much desired, but left to his own liking to go or stay, but he stayed and married here,”⁸⁴⁸ theirs being one of the first romances of the colonies.



John Alden was probably the youngest of those who signed the “immortal compact of civil government,” *The Mayflower Compact* in the cabin of the *Mayflower*, then at anchor in the harbor of Provincetown, 15 November 1620.⁸⁴⁹

Though Cape Cod was not their original destination, they stayed and years later, President John Adams, (one of John Alden’s descendants)

claimed that John Alden held the honor of being the first to set foot on the rock at Plymouth.⁸⁵⁰ One author wrote, “being winter, the rock may have been covered in snow!”

“Plymouth Rock” as a fixture of history is famous, and today a large rock, with plaque, is under glass in an enclosure on the Plymouth shoreline. The pilgrims however, came ashore further south at Cape Cod.⁸⁵¹ They explored the area for several weeks finally deciding to settle in what is now Plymouth, Massachusetts.

Author’s Photo, June 2019

⁸⁴⁶ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins*, Vol 2: G - O, Mullins, 1315 – 1316, (ancestry.com), 11/7/2020.

⁸⁴⁷ More on this in the section for Mullins.

⁸⁴⁸ *North America Family Histories, The Ancestors and Descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife*, 7 – 8, (ancestry.com), 11/7/2020.

⁸⁴⁹ <http://www.langeonline.com/Heritage/jalden.htm> citing: *Bradford’s History*, 75 & *New England’s memorial*, 15-16, 11/7/2020.

⁸⁵⁰ Harriett Chapin Fielding, *The ancestors and descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife, (1599-1903)*, (East Orange, NJ, 1903), *John Alden*, 7-8, (archive.org), 11/7/2020. (Also found on ancestry.com.)

⁸⁵¹ *The Landing of the Pilgrims*, by Henry A. Bacon, circa 1877, historyofmassachusetts.org, 5/24/2022.

During that first winter, the passengers remained on board the *Mayflower*, suffering an outbreak of a contagious disease, which was said to be a mixture of scurvy, pneumonia and tuberculosis. When it ended, only fifty-three passengers remained and half the crew. In the spring, they built huts ashore and the passengers disembarked on 21 March 1621.



Among those who died during this first sickness were William and Alice Mullins and son Joseph. Priscilla was left alone, “scarcely more than a child, a stranger in a strange land, but kind neighbors cared for her until she married John Alden.”⁸⁵² In the 28 December 1620 division of the company, John Alden was assigned a place in the family of Captain Standish and continued there until his marriage.⁸⁵³

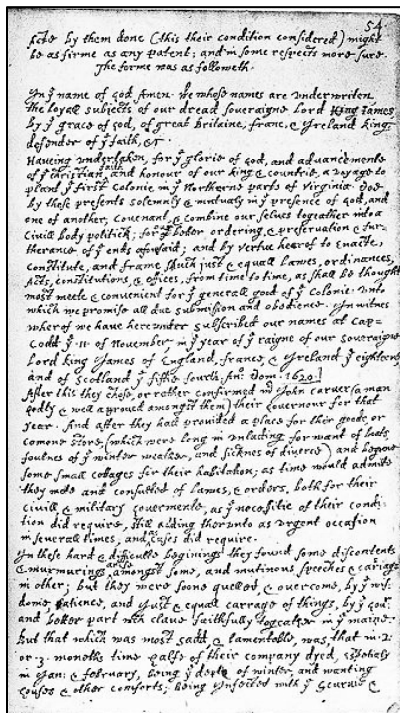
John Alden married Priscilla Mullins, abt. 12 May 1621/2, or before the 1623 land division. The exact date is unknown.

In addition to the pilgrims, the *Mayflower* carried other passengers, whom they called *strangers*, because they did not conform to, or even agree with, the pilgrim view of the world. After landing at Plymouth, the pilgrims realized they needed as many productive, law-abiding souls as possible to make the settlement successful. With that in mind, they set out to create a temporary set of laws for ruling themselves and the strangers.

The first step in this experiment in self-government was an agreement to work together. Such an agreement was drafted, perhaps by William Bradford, and on 11 November 1620, forty-one adult male colonists, including two indentured servants, signed. It was called the *Mayflower Compact*. The agreement remained active until 1691 when Plymouth Colony became part of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. It was an early and successful attempt at democracy and held the view of the separation of Church and State.

⁸⁵² Wells & Van Dyke, *Several ancestral lines of Josiah Edson and his wife Sarah Pinney, ...*, 27 - 28 <archive.org>, 11/7/2020.

⁸⁵³ *History of the Town of Duxbury, MA with Genealogical Registers*, <online database>, (ancestry.com), *First Settlers*, 55 - 63, 56, 11/7/2020.



The signing of the Mayflower Compact was the first major political event of American history.



The Mayflower Compact

In the name of God, Amen. We, whose names are underwritten, the Loyal Subjects of our dread Sovereign Lord King James, by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, King, defender of the Faith, etc.:

Having undertaken, for the Glory of God, and advancements of the Christian faith, and the honor of our King and Country, a voyage to plant the first colony in the Northern parts of Virginia; do by these presents, solemnly and mutually, in the presence of God, and one another; covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politic; for our better ordering, and preservation and furtherance of the ends aforesaid; and by virtue hereof to enact, constitute, and frame, such just and equal laws, ordinances, acts, constitutions, and offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the general good of the colony; unto which we promise all due submission and obedience.

In witness whereof, we have hereunto subscribed our names at Cape Cod the 11th of November, in the year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord King James, of England, France, and Ireland, the eighteenth, and of Scotland the fifty-fourth, 1620.

<https://www.history.com/topics/colonial-america/mayflower-compact> 5 Sept 2020

Priscilla is known to literary history as the unrequited love of newly widowed Captain Miles Standish, the colony's military advisor, in Henry Wadsworth Longfellow's 1858 poem, *The Courtship of Miles Standish*. According to the poem, Standish asked his good friend John Alden to propose to Priscilla on his behalf, only to have Priscilla ask, "Why don't you speak for yourself, John?" Longfellow was a direct descendant of John and Priscilla, and based his poem on a romanticized version of a family tradition although, until recently, there was little independent historical evidence for the account. The basic story was handed down in the Alden family and published by John and Priscilla's great-great-grandson the Rev. Timothy Alden in 1814.

Scholars have recently confirmed the cherished place of romantic love in pilgrim culture, and have documented the Indian War described by Longfellow. Circumstantial evidence of the love triangle also exists. Miles Standish and John Alden were likely roommates; Priscilla Mullins was the only single woman of marriageable age. The families of the alleged lovers remained close for several generations, moving together to Duxbury, Massachusetts in the late 1620s.

Children: The birth order is uncertain, as no birth or baptismal records survive. All were born before Bradford's 1650 list. I have offered whatever details I found, choosing the most consistent recounting of information.

- i. ELISABETH ALDEN, b. Plymouth abt. 1623, said to be the first white woman born in New England; d. Little Compton, Rhode Island 31 May 1717; m. Duxbury 26 Dec 1644 Hon. William Pabodie of Duxbury, son of John Pabodie and a civic and military leader in Duxbury; d. 13 Dec 1707. The couple had thirteen children all born in Duxbury. They moved to Little Compton, Rhode Island where their descendants settled. Her grave and that of her husband are in the Old Commons Cemetery in Little Compton. Her headstone bears the inscription "in the 94th year of her age." However, as the current monument was erected in 1882, this may not have been on the original stone. From Elisabeth's line comes the one individual most credited with spreading the fame of John and Priscilla far and wide, Henry Wadsworth Longfellow in his *Courtship of Miles Standish*. In *The Boston Newsletter* of 17 June 1717, the following paragraph appeared:

"This morning died here, Elisabeth Paybody in the 93rd year of her age. She was a daughter of John Alden Esq. and Priscilla, his wife, daughter of Mr. William Mullins. She was exemplary, virtuous and pious, and her memory is blessed. Her granddaughter Bradford is a grandmother."⁸⁵⁴ She was described by a contemporary as, "dignified, a woman of great character, and fine presence, very tall and handsome."

⁸⁵⁴ Fielding, *The ancestors and descendants of Isaac Alden and Irene Smith, his wife, (1599-1903)*, 8, (archive.org), 11/7/2020. (Also found on ancestry.com.)

- ii. JOHN ALDEN JR., mariner of Boston, b. Plymouth abt. 1626; d. Boston, Suffolk, Massachusetts 14 Mar 1701/2; m. Boston 1 Apr 1660 Elizabeth (Phillips) Everill, widow (relict) of Abiel Everell and daughter of William Phillips of Watertown and Saco. (The correct date should probably be 1659 as a child was born to them 17 Dec 1659, or some have interpreted that John Jr. had an earlier wife also named Elizabeth.) They had fourteen children.

John Alden Jr. was admitted freeman 1648, and abt. 1659 removed from Duxbury Boston. He was a 17th century American soldier, politician, merchant, and sailor, a well-known public figure in his time. He was a charter member of Rev. Samuel Willard's, Third Church in Boston, and held a military command during King William's War. He was a member of the Old South Church of Boston and his slate headstone is embedded in the wall there.

He sailed to Quebec in February 1692 to ransom British prisoners captured in the Candlemas attack on York, Maine. Perhaps, the best-known event of his life is when, on a 1692 trip to Salem, he was accused of witchcraft. Though accounts recall that he acquitted himself admirably, he spent fifteen weeks in a Boston jail. He escaped, before nine of the other victims were executed, fleeing to Duxbury, where he stayed with friends until, as he later said, "the public had reclaimed the use of its reason." When he returned, he was cleared by proclamation along with some 150 other accused. Robert Calef later published Alden's vivid first-hand narrative of the witchcraft trials in *More Wonders of the Invisible World*. The account stated that much of the alleged evidence against Alden such as 'he sold whiskey to the Indians' and 'had Indian wives and children, was simply gossip'.⁸⁵⁵

- iii. JOSEPH ALDEN SR., b. Plymouth aft. 22 May 1627; d. Bridgewater 8 Feb 1696/7; bur. same; m. Duxbury, Plymouth Colony, Massachusetts abt. 1660 **Mary Simmons**, the daughter of Moses Simmons ; seven children. Joseph Alden Sr. was a farmer and an early settler of Bridgewater, Massachusetts. He was on a 1643 list of men able to bear arms, therefore at least 16 years of age. He arrived in 1654 to make a homestead on land that his father and Myles Standish had purchased earlier from the local Native Americans. The land was near the present-day Historical Society buildings in the present town of West Bridgewater. The exact date of his death is unknown, with some sources saying 8 Feb 1695/6, and others saying that he died after 1696/7. Joseph and Mary are my ancestors and their lives and children are covered in Chapter Six of this Volume.
- iv. PRISCILLA ALDEN, b. abt. 1630 Duxbury; d. aft. 13 June 1688, at which time she was alive and unmarried; no record of birth or marriage or children.
- v. JONATHAN ALDEN CAPT., b. Duxbury ca. 1632; d. Duxbury 14 Feb 1697 and was buried "under arms" 17 Feb 1697; m. Duxbury 10 Dec 1672 Abigail Hallett, daughter of Benjamin Hallett Esq. of Barnstable; six children. The family lived in Duxbury until his death. He was the second owner of the Alden House which he

⁸⁵⁵ https://mathcs.clarku.edu/~djoyce/gen/report/rr06/rr06_454.html for additional information as to his involvement with the Salem Witchcraft Trials, 11/7/2020.

received from his father. The house then passed to his own son, John.⁸⁵⁶ At his funeral oration, Jonathan was described as “a sincere Christian, one whose heart was in the house of God even when his body was barred hence by restraints of many difficulties which confined him at home.” He is buried in the Old Cemetery in South Duxbury. Administration on his estate was granted 8 Mar 1696/7. Abigail, d. 17 Aug 1725, aged 81 years.

- vi. SARAH ALDEN, b. Duxbury abt. 1634; d. bef. the settlement of her father’s estate 1688; m. abt. 1660 Alexander Standish (son of Capt. Miles Standish); eight children. Other sources indicate she was, b. 1628/9, d. 12 Aug 1674, Duxbury. One researcher writes “Her marriage to Myles Standish's son and her first cousin Alexander, though this relationship is unsubstantiated, undercuts any idea of a long-standing feud between the Alden and the Standish clans. In fact, there is much evidence to suggest that John and Myles remained lifelong friends or, at the minimum, associates. Sarah and Alexander lived in Duxbury until Sarah’s death sometime before June 1688. They had at least seven children. Alexander subsequently married Desire Doty, a twice widowed daughter of pilgrim Edward Doty. The Alexander Standish House in Duxbury still stands.
- vii. RUTH ALDEN, b. Duxbury ca. 1636; d. Braintree 12 Oct 1674; m. Braintree 3 Feb 1657 John Bass, son of Samuel Bass; 7 children. Among her children was Hannah (Bass) Adams, paternal grandmother of future U.S. Presidents John Adams and John Quincy Adams.
- viii. MARY ALDEN, b. Duxbury abt. 1638; d. aft. 13 June 1688. She was living on June 13, 1688. She has no spouse or children recognized by the Mayflower Society.
- ix. REBECCA ALDEN, b. Duxbury abt. 1640; d. Duxbury bet. 12 June 1696 and 5 Oct 1722. She is mentioned in the Colonial Records as of marriageable age in 1661. From several accounts she may have m. abt. 30 Oct 1667 Dr. Thomas Delano (De la Noye), son and 4th child of Philippe De la Noye (1602-1680), one of the original settlers of Duxbury, and Hester Dewsbury. At that time the Alden and the Delano families seem to have been neighbors. The couple had nine children. Thomas Delano outlived his wife. She is buried in the Old Burying Ground (Myles Standish Cemetery) in Duxbury.
- x. DAVID ALDEN, b. Duxbury abt. 1642; d. Duxbury abt. 1719; m. Duxbury by 1674 Mary Southworth, daughter of Constant Southworth, Ensign and Elizabeth Collier, b. Plymouth Colony, Massachusetts abt. 1650; d. Duxbury between 2 July 1718 and 1 Apr 1719. They had six children. In his 27 Feb 1678 Will, Constant Southworth bequeathed to daughter Mary Alden. David Alden was a prominent member of the church, a man of great respectability and much employed in public business.

No Will of David's has been found, and only deeds of gifts to four of his children: to Alice, wife of Judah Paddoc, to Priscilla Cheeseborough, wife of Samuel; and to his two sons, Benjamin and Samuel. He gives to Benjamin Alden

⁸⁵⁶ If this *Alden House* is in Duxbury – it must refer to the original Alden home, and/or later to the house now occupied by the Alden House historic site. (Author’s photo)

land in Duxbuough and Pembroke. (Plymouth Registry of Deeds, Vol 12, page, 147) To Samuel Alden, seaman, from David Alden, for natural love and affection, land in Middleborough, Rotty Brook, "land given me by my honored father, John Alden, late of Duxbury, under a deed, dated 8 July, 1674." This deed to Samuel is dated 13 Mar 1717-1718, recorded 25 Mar 1717-1718. Also, David Alden to Benjamin Alden, for natural love and affection, land in Pembroke, only he was not to have the disposal until after David, or David's wife was deceased. (28 Mar 1718, book 14, page 55, Plymouth Registry of Deeds) Justin Winsor, in his *History of Duxbury* says:⁸⁵⁷

David Alden was much employed in the public business of the town, one of its selectmen, its deputy and likewise and assistant in the Government. He was a prominent member of the church, said to be one of its deacons, and a man of the highest respectability.

The following historical information is gleaned largely from *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations: Vol 16, Part 1, "The Family of John Alden"*:

In the 1627 Division of Cattle, John Alden is included in the company of John Howland (another ancestor of the Presidents Bush) along with wife Priscilla, daughter Elizabeth and son John. They received one of the 4 heifers, which came in the Jacob, a breed called Raghorne. (PCR 12:10)

In January 1628, the land along Plymouth Bay was divided into farm lots with each individual receiving 20 acres, plus an additional 20 acres per family member. John and Priscilla who had three children by that time, received 100 acres along the Bluefish River in the area which came to be known in 1637 as Duxbury. By chance the location included upland, that had been partially cleared by Native Americans, woodland and salt marsh, which provided a good source of hay. The Aldens built their first small house there in 1628.

The Alden land was good, some cleared upland where the Indians had planted, some woodland, and a long stretch of fresh and salt meadow where hay could be cut. There was a freshwater stream, and at least one spring. It was a good farm.⁸⁵⁸

The whole length of the farm had water transportation and The Green Harbor path, running from Plymouth to Marshfield, passed along the west end of the farm. As they traveled to Plymouth each Sunday for Worship, their life on the farm was seasonal for the first several years, staying in Plymouth, in their old house beneath Burial Hill, during the harsh winter months.

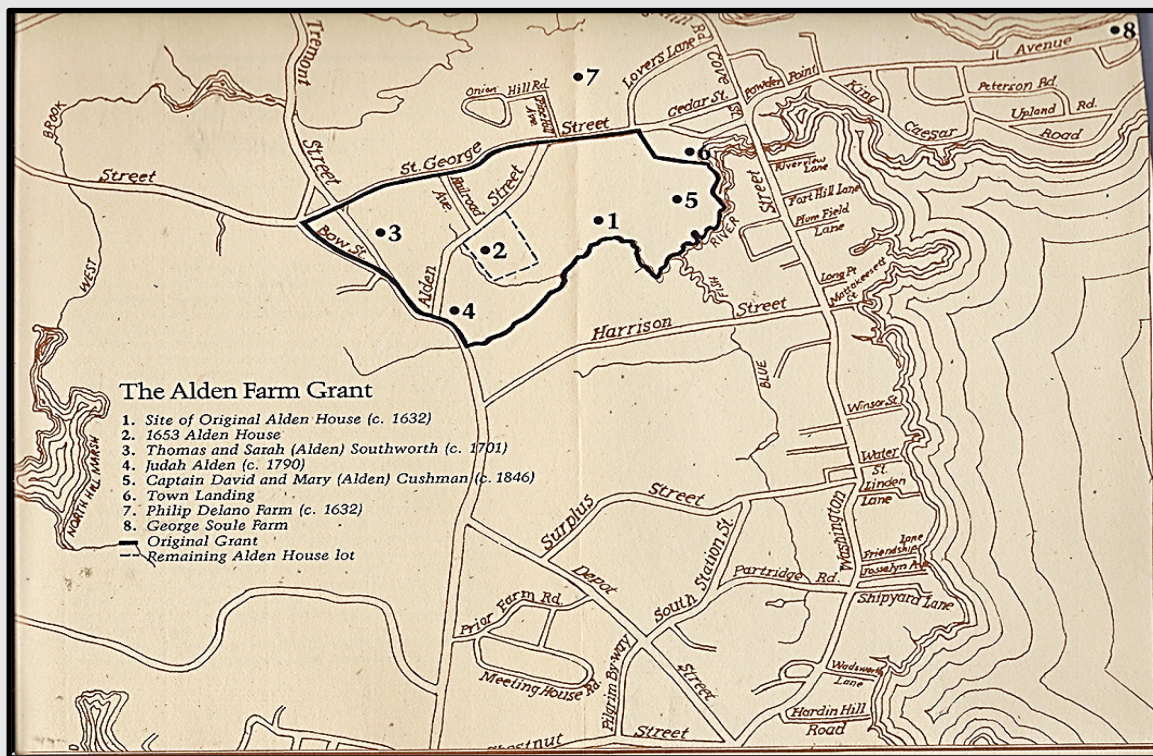
⁸⁵⁷ Justin Winsor, *History of the town of Duxbury, Massachusetts, with Genealogical Register*, (Boston, Crosby & Nichols, 1849), Alden: 213 – 220, 214, (archive.org), 11/7/2020.

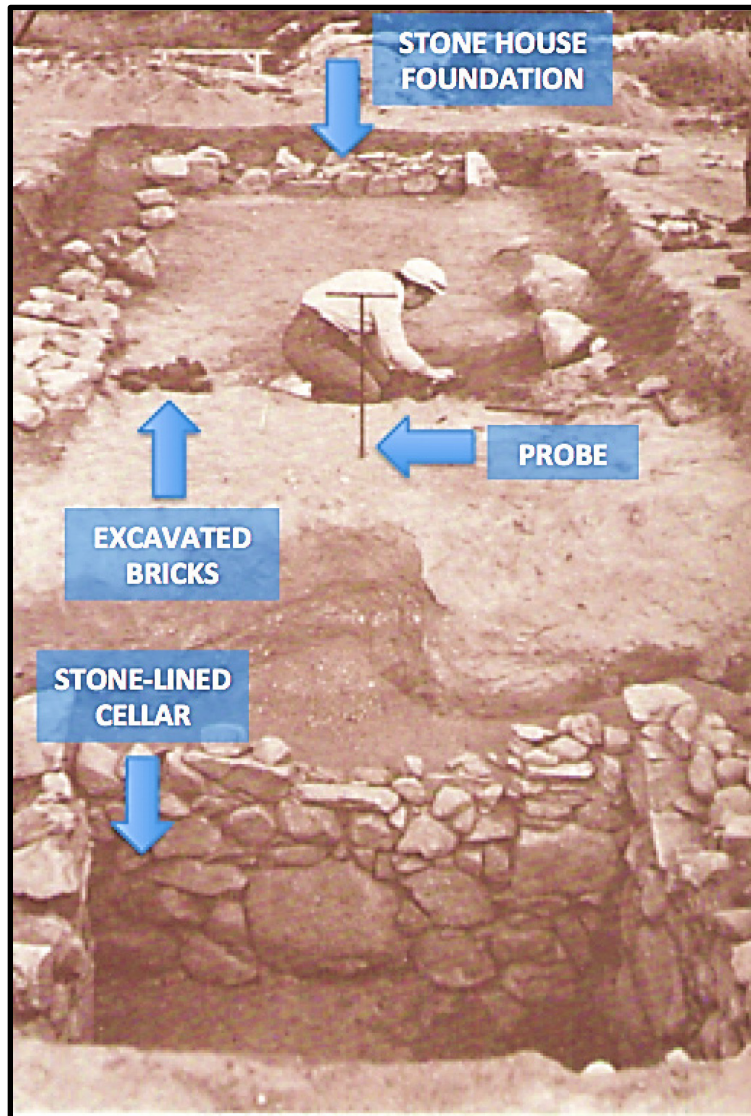
⁸⁵⁸ Dorothy Wentworth, *The Alden Family in the Alden House*, (Duxbury, Mass., The Duxbury Rural and Historical Society, 1980), 13, <https://duxburyhistory.org/product/the-alden-family-in-the-alden-house/>, 11/7/2020.

The property the Aldens were given in 1627/28, with a few additions, is first described in the surviving records of 1 Jan 1637/38 (the record of the 1627 division having been lost):

The bounds of the land of Mr. John Alden att Duxburrow, as it was layed forth by Gov. Bradford, Mr. Edward Winslow, Joshua Pratt, Edward Bangs, as followeth: from an old pine tree by the meddow, which meddow was afterward allotted unto mee, the said John Alden, and for the breadth of the said land butting upon and ranging allong the said Blew Fish River to a burnt walnut stump; and from thence to a walnut tree ranging from the abovesaid stump west-northwest, which was some time after run by Joshua Prate and Phillip Delano Sr., unto a white oake tree, standing a little within the bounds of Phillip Delanoes land, there being a stump or root of that tree still remaining, and from thence for the breadth at the head, up to Greens Harbour, old path; and on the southerly side of the land bounded partly with my own meadow and with the land of Experience Mitchell toward the upper end. (Plymouth Colony Records I, p. 73)

This survey is based on the original 1627 division, even if some boundary markers had been damaged during the area's clearing and the burning of brush and weeds. With a small parcel added the following September to bring the southerly bound in line with Houndsditch brook, the Alden farm assumed the dimensions it would retain until 1701. Eventually John's Duxbury acreage amounted to about 169 acres.

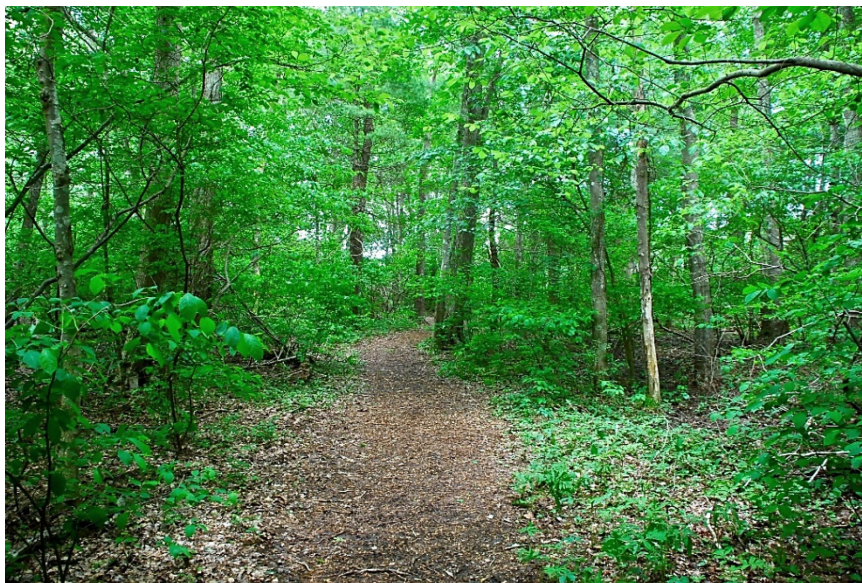




The **First Site** home was completed by 1632 when the Aldens lived in Duxbury year-round. They raised ten children there. Archaeologist Roland Robbins and his team excavated the First Site in 1960. They uncovered a long, rectangular house foundation with a stone-lined cellar hole at one end. Many artifacts were found, including pieces of ceramic vessels, nails, window glass, utensils, and metal objects. Some of the latter could be related to John Alden's coopering work. The team also found Native American artifacts that attest to the site's long history.

This picture was taken in 1960 during Roland Robbins's original excavation of the First Home Site. An excavator is shown using a trowel to investigate stratigraphy, or changes of soil layers, and uncover artifacts within an open unit. The probe in the middle of the photo was used to help find the stone foundation buried in the ground. Today, archaeologists can utilize ground-penetrating radar instead to find buried features.

<https://aldenfirstsite.org/archaeology/>



Author's photos, June 2019



The Duxbury site is now part of the Duxbury School campus, set off with ropes, and interpretive signage. It is about the size of a single-wide modern manufactured home. It can be reached by a short walk through the woods at the Alden House Historic site.

In 1632, John Alden was elected Governor's assistant on a small council of advisors. As one family historian writes, "he served as such for many years, and was otherwise much employed and greatly distinguished the infant colony."⁸⁵⁹

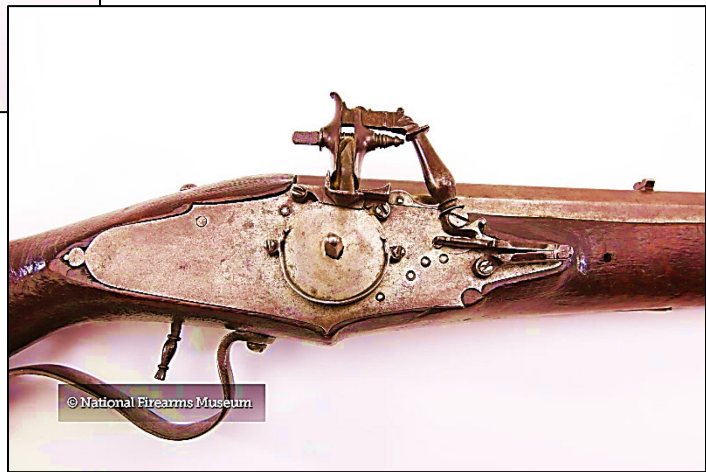
He was one of several men who, in 1632, petitioned to have Duxbury set off as a separate church congregation with their own minister. Gov. Bradford and others reluctantly gave permission and Duxbury was incorporated in 1637. Alden served as Deputy from Duxbury to Plymouth Colony General Court for most of the 1640s.

⁸⁵⁹ Mitchell, *History of the early Settlement of Bridgewater, in Plymouth County Massachusetts, ...*, 85ff, (archive.org), 11/7/2020.

John Alden Sr. is listed in the 1633 Plymouth list of Freeman, and of those admitted prior to January 1662/3. He is again listed in Plymouth on 7 March 1636/7 and on the Duxbury lists of 1639 and 1658. He is on the Duxbury list of 1643 of men able to bear arms. His Inventory included "2 old guns" valued at 11s.



A wheel-lock carbine owned by John Alden is housed at the NRA's National Firearms Museum; it is the only known surviving firearm to have crossed the Atlantic aboard the *Mayflower*. The rifle was found hidden in the Alden house during a 1924 restoration.⁸⁶⁰



On 25 March 1633, he is assessed 1£ 4s in the Plymouth tax lists; this same amount was assessed him 27 March 1634. (PCR 1:9, 27)

In the early Spring of 1634, John Alden became involved in a fur trading dispute in the wilderness of what would become Maine. A party of Plymouth men led by himself and John Howland became embroiled with men from the Piscataqua settlement (which would grow into Dover, New Hampshire). One man on each side was killed. While Alden did not participate in the fight, he was the highest-ranking member from Plymouth and was detained at Boston as security against the final resolution of the conflict. His detention caused a major jurisdictional controversy as Plymouth colony leadership felt the Massachusetts Bay Colony had no authority to hold him. It was only through the intervention of Gov. Bradford that he was eventually released.⁸⁶¹

⁸⁶⁰ <http://www.nramuseum.org/guns/the-galleries/ancient-firearms-1350-to-1700/case-3-old-guns-in-the-new-world/mayflower-wheellock-carbine.aspx>

⁸⁶¹ <http://www.ahgp.org/maine/john-al-den-went-to-jail.html> if you want to know more, 11/7/2020.

He is assigned mowing ground on 14 March 1636 and 1637. (PCR 1:40, 56) His cattle mark recorded at Plymouth 15 Nov 1636 was “a peece like a long round cut.” (Plymouth Town Records 1)

A parcel of land containing a knoll, lying over against Mr. Alden’s land at Blewfish River is granted by the court on 6 March 1636/7, to John Alden, in lieu of a parcel of land taken from him for public use. (PCR 1:51) Bluefish River is a marshy brook in the eastern part of Duxbury.

He is granted “certain lands at Green’s harbor,” (later Marshfield) on February 1637/8. On 2 July 1638, lands were granted to Miles Standish and John Alden: 300 acres on the north side of the south river. On 3 Sept 1638, he is granted a little parcel of land lying at his lot’s southerly side. (PCR 1:76, 191, 195) The South River rises in Duxbury and flows through Marshfield to the Atlantic Ocean.⁸⁶²

From 1640 to 1686, Alden was elected to the Governor’s Council almost every year. He served as Treasurer of Plymouth Colony, Deputy to the General Court of Plymouth, a member of the Colony’s Council of War, and the Committee on Kennebec River trade, among other duties.⁸⁶³

Tradition says the Alden’s second home was constructed in 1653. The house is now owned by the Alden Kindred of America and maintained as a museum, known as the Alden House Historic Site. Modern architectural analysis suggests that the house was likely built in 1700 and was not the home of John and Priscilla, but more likely one of their children or grandchildren.

On 2 February 1657/8, John Alden and others quarreled with Quakers in the area. Later that year, on 3 June 1657, liberty is granted to John Alden to look out a portion of land to accommodate his sons, withal and to make a report this to the court so that it “may be confirmed unto him.” (PCR 3:120) At Duxbury town meeting on 19 January 1659, it was granted to Mr. John Alden Sr., “all that piece of common land, from the south of Phillip Dillano’s.” (Duxbury Town Records 54)

There is a record found on 13 June 1660 which reads, “In regard that Mr. Alden is low in his estate and occasioned to spend much time at the courts on the country’s occasion, and has done these many years, the Court have allowed him a small gratuity, the sum of ten pounds, to be paid by the Treasurer.” (PCR 3:195) This did not mean John was destitute, only that he was short on cash needed to travel on colony business.

⁸⁶² For additional land transactions see *Mayflower Deeds and Probates: John Alden*, 1-39, <online database>, (ancestry.com), 11/7/2020; Woodworth-Barnes and Williams, *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations*, Vol 16, Part 1, 1-13, *Family of John Alden*; <http://www.langeonline.com/Heritage/jalden.htm>, 11/7/2020

⁸⁶³ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Alden 11/7/2020.

While seeking religious freedom for themselves, the Puritans were generally intolerant of the faiths of others. One of the groups they particularly disagreed with were the **Quakers**, people seen as heretics and blasphemers who put barriers in the way of salvation. The Puritans considered Quakers traitors to their country because they did not belong to the official state religion.

On 2 February 1657/58, Quakers John Copeland and William Braind were charged with verbally abusing John Alden and Thomas Southworth. Copeland and Braind were ordered to leave the colony, and when they did not, were publicly whipped. In 1658, James Cudworth, lost his position as head of the Scituate military company when he was accused of aiding Quakers, some of whom may have been his family members. John Alden was, in part, responsible for his demotion. Cudworth, who had thought better of Alden, wrote, "Mr. Alden hath deceived the Expectations of many, and indeed lost the affection of such as I judge were his cordial Christian friends." (PCR, 3:130, 115, 162; Plymouth Colony by Stratton, 91-92)

In 1659, six Quakers were banished on 'pain of death' and John Alden, as Assistant Governor was seen to nod in agreement when Governor Prence stated that "all Quakers deserved to be destroyed along with their wives and children, without pity or mercy." One Quaker summed up his opinion of Alden in a letter: "John Alden, I have weighed thy ways, and thou art like one fallen from thy first love; a tenderness once I did see in thee, and moderation to act like a sober man, which through evil counsel and self-love thou art drawn aside from . . . like a self-conceited fool puffed up with the pride of his heart because he has gotten the name of a magistrate."

George F. Willison, *Saints and Strangers*, (reprint, Taylor & Francis, 2017), 378.

John Alden was granted a competency of land at Namasskett on 7 June 1665 and on 4 March 1673/4 granted 100 acres at Teticutt. These were villages in the area that became the town of Middleborough. (PCR 4:95, 5:141)

John Alden "for love and natural affection and other valuable causes and considerations, deeded on 8 July 1674 to David Alden his true and natural son all that his land both meadow and upland that belongs to him situate or being at or about a place called Rootey Brook within the Township of Middleborough - excepting only 100 acres, containing about 300 acres." (Plymouth Co LR 3:330) Rootey Brook apparently flowed into the Nemasket River near Nemasket (Assawamsett) pond.

John Alden had been one of the members of the area's Council of War in 1667. The Council arranged for military watches during times of possible danger from the French and Dutch and King Phillip and the Narragansett Indians. Plans for evacuation and orders of War had been established. When King Phillips War broke out in 1675,

John Alden was a senior advisor to Gov. Josiah Winslow. (Stratton, Plymouth Colony, 102, 110)⁸⁶⁴

The "Sixteen Shilling Purchase," was made in 1675, by Constant Southworth and John Tomson from the Indian sachems in Middleboro. John Alden was one of the seventy-one original proprietors, and on 21 November 1679, he received the 15th lot.

(Weston, Middleboro, 621)⁸⁶⁵

On 1 April 1679, John Alden of Duxbury, gentleman, "deeded to Joseph Alden, my true and natural son, all that my share of land ...within the township of Bridgewater." (P Co LR 3:194)

On 6 July 1682, John Alden was deposed and stated he was aged 83 or thereabouts, making his birth year about 1599. (MD 3:120-121; PCR 2:32)

John Alden Sr. of Duxbury on 1 January 1685, for:

That real love and parental affection which I bear to my beloved and dutiful son Jonathan Alden deed to him all my upland in Duxbury, (see old book of grants and bounds of land anno 1637, folio 137) and all other lands at Duxbury whether granted by court at Plymouth or town of Duxbury. (PCo LR 6:53)

On 13 January 1686, John Alden Sr. of Duxbury, for:

That natural love and affection which is bear to my firstborn and dutiful son John Alden of Boston, deed him 100 acres at Pekard Neck alias Pachague with 1/8 of the meadow belonging to that place, and 100 acres at Rootey Book (brother David Alden is to have first right of purchase if John should wish to sell this 100 acres), together with a 16s purchase being the 15th lot, all in Middleborough, and 100 acres, the first in a division of 1,000 acres in Bridgewater. (PCo LR 5:437)

And on 19 August 1687, John Alden Sr. of Duxbury, cooper, deed to my two sons Jonathan and David Alden: 5 acres of salt marsh at Duxbury, and my whole proportion in the Major's Purchase commonly so called being the 35th part of said purchase. (MD 9:145, PCo LR 4:65)

Major Josiah Winslow had bought the Major's or Five Men's Purchase of Sachem Tispequin in 1663 and consisted of a narrow tract on the east side of Nemasket river between the upper and lower Indian paths to Plymouth, extending to the Carver line. (Weston, Middleboro, 600)

⁸⁶⁴ Eugene Aubrey Stratton, *Plymouth Colony, it's history & people, 1620-1691*, 110, (Salt Lake City, Utah, Ancestry Pub. 1986), (books.google.com), 11/8/2020.

⁸⁶⁵ <http://www.langeonline.com/Heritage/jalden.htm>, 11/8/2020; Thomas Weston, *History of the Town of Middleboro, Massachusetts*, 621, (Boston, Houghton, Mifflin, 1906), (archive.org), 11/8/2020.

John Alden, who was reputedly a fine speaker, served in a number of important government positions:

- Assistant Governor (beginning 1631)
- Duxbury Deputy to the General Court of Plymouth
- Captain Myles Standish's Duxbury militia company
- A member of the Council of War, raising a force against the Indians
- Treasurer of Plymouth Colony, and Commissioner to Dartmouth
- A surveyor of highways
- On committees to revise laws, and trade with Kennebec.⁸⁶⁶

A man of great integrity Alden was distinguished for practical wisdom, integrity, and decision, and early acquired and retained a commanding influence over his associates. In every position he occupied, "he fulfilled his duties promptly and to the satisfaction of his employers." He was probably one of the seven well persons left at one time to care for the sick and dying in that terrible first winter."

John Alden was one of the first men who purchased the joint-stock company from its English shareholders in 1626 and was involved in the company's trading on the Kennebec River. His wife Priscilla inherited a substantial amount of company shares from her father.

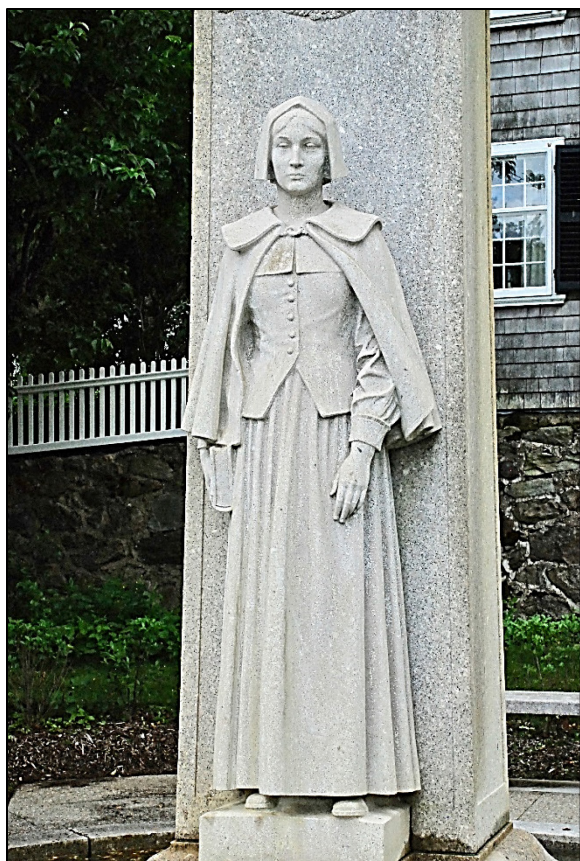
The Merchant Adventurers were the group of English investors whose capital funded the Pilgrims voyage on the *Mayflower*. The joint-stock company they invested in hoped to profit from the fur trade, from fishing, and from any other method they could invent. The number of investors was initially about fifty but began to drop substantially as various internal disputes arose. After many financial problems, the flailing company reorganized in 1628, with a few original members, and leading Plymouth colonists, buying out the remaining shareholders.

<https://fee.org/articles/who-paid-for-the-mayflower/>
<https://www.businessinsider.com.au/corporate-history-of-the-pilgrims-2013-11> 6/8/2022

Priscilla (Mullins) Alden, died in Duxbury between 1651 and her husband's death in 1687. A 19th century account published by John A. Goodwin in *The Pilgrim Republic* in 1888 describes the mourners at the funeral of Governor Josiah Winslow 1680 including "the venerable John Alden, with Priscilla still on his arm."⁸⁶⁷ Sadly, neither the birth, the marriage, nor the death date for one of America's most famous women is known.

⁸⁶⁶ Dates of service can be found on americanancestors.org, and in *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations: Vol 16, Part 1, The Family of John Alden*.

⁸⁶⁷ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 51: 429, (americanancestors.org), 11/8/2020.



Author's photo June 2019

The Pilgrim Mother Fountain - The DAR commissioned Carl Paul Jennewein to sculpt The Pilgrim Mother Fountain on Water Street in Plymouth, Massachusetts. "The statue depicts a Pilgrim woman of mature age. The figure is strong, yet modest; is sweet and gentle, but also vigorous, and has a spiritual quality such as the heroic women of the Mayflower must have had. It expresses faith, devotion and strength of endurance in a great cause and for a great principle. It is clothed in the usual Pilgrim costume, based on the models in the Metropolitan Museum of Art." The inscription reads: "They brought up their families in sturdy virtue and a living faith in God without which nations perish." There is also a listing of their names, Priscilla Mullins among them. One President of the DAR can be quoted saying, "While we recognize the myriad significant accomplishments of both the indigenous women who came before the Pilgrims and the generations of settlers who followed them, we believe that it is important to honor the nineteen women on the ship, three of whom were expecting children during the voyage!"

massmayflower.org

John Alden, died in Duxbury, on 12 Sept 1687 (old style) in his 89th year, one of the last surviving *Mayflower* passengers. Judge Sewell noted, "The ancient Magistrate of Plymouth, died." (Sewell diary, 150)

Two broadsides, predecessor of the newspaper, were printed to commemorate the passing of the Mayflower Compact's last surviving signer. These were later published in the Mayflower Descendant.

John Alden Sr. made no Will, having distributed the greater part of his estate among his children during his lifetime.

Upon the **DEATH** of that *Aged, Pious, Sincere-hearted* **CHRISTIAN,**
JOHN ALDEN *ESQ:*
Late MAGISTRATE of New-Plmouth Colony, who dyed Sept 22th, 1687,
being about eighty nine years of age.

The staffe of bread, and water eke the stay,
 From sinning Judah God will take away.
 The prudent Counsellour, the Honourable,
 Whom Grace and Holiness makes delectable,
 The Judge, the Prophet and the ancient Saint,
 The deaths of such cause sorrowful complaint.
 The Earth and its Inhabitants do fall,
 The aged Saint bears up its pillars all.
 The hoary head in way of Righteousness
 A crown of glory is. Who can express
 Th' abundant blessings by Disciples old!
 In very deed they're more than can be told.
 The wife 'tis of a wanton generation
 To wish the aged soon might quit their station,
 Tho' truth it be, The Lord our God does from
 When aged Saints dy death do tumble down.
 What tho' there be not such Activity,
 Yet in their Prayers there's such Fervency
 As doth great mercy for a place obtain,
 And gracious presence of the Lord maintain.
 Tho' Nature's strength in old age doth decay,
 Yet th' *inner* *renew'd* *day* *by day*
 The very presence of a Saint in years
 Who lifts his soul to God with pray'rs & tears
 Is a rich blessing unto any place
 Who have that mercy to behold his face:
 When sin is ripe and calls for desolation (on
 God will call home old Saints from such a nest)
 Let sinners then of th' Aged weary be.
 God give us grace to mourn most heartily
 For death of this dear servant of the Lord,
 Whose life God did to us so long afford:
 God lent his life to greatest length of dayes;
 In which he liv'd to his Redeemer's praise.
 In youthful time he made *Moses* his choice,
 His soul obeying great *JEHOVAH's* voice,
 Freely forsook the world for sake of GOD,
 In His House with His Saints to have abode.
 He followed GOD into this Wilderness;
 Thereby to all the world he did profess,
 Affliction with the Saints a better part
 And more delightful to his holy heart
 Than sinful pleasures, lasting but a season:
 Thus said his Faith, so faith not carnal Reason.
 He came one of the first into this Land,
 And here was kept by God's most gracious hand
 Years sixty seven, which time he did behold
 To poor New-England mercies manifold:
 All God's great works to this His Israel
 From first implanting what to them befel:
 Of them he made a serious Observation,
 And could of them present a large Narration.

His walk was holy, humble, and sincere,
 His heart was filled with *JEHOVAH's* Fear.
 He honour'd GOD with much integrity,
 God therefore did him truly magnify.
 The hearts of Saints intirely did him love,
 His Uprightness so highly did approve,
 That whilst to choose they had their liberty
 Within the Limits of this Colony
 Their Civil Leaders, him they ever chose.
 His Faithfulness made hearts with him to close,
 With all the Governours he did Assist;
 His Name recorded is within the List
 Of *Plimouth's* Pillars to his dying day.
 His Name is precious to eternal Ay.
 He set his Love on God and knew His Name,
 God therefore gives him everlasting Fame.
 So good and heav'nly was his Conversation,
 God gave long life, and shew'd him His Salvation.
 (His work now finished upon this earth;
 Seeing the death of what he saw the birth)
 His gracious Lord from heaven calls him home,
 And bids him *Adieu* *unto* *his* *home*
 Thou hast done good, been faithful unto Ate,
 Now shalt thou live in bliss **ETERNALTY**.
 On dying bed his Ailes were very great,
 Yet verily his heart on GOD was set.
 He bare his griefs with Faith and Patience,
 And did maintain his lively confidence:
 Saying to some; The work which God begun,
 He would preserve to its perfection.
 His mouth was full of blessings till his death
 To Ministers and Christians all: His breath
 Was very sweet by many a precious word
 He utter'd from the Spirit of his Lord.
 He liv'd in Christ; in Jesus now he sleeps;
 And his blest soul the Lord in safety keeps.

JOHN ALDEN. Anagram *End at on bi*.
 Death puts an End to all this world enjoys,
 And frees the Saint from all that here annoys.
 This blessed Saint hath freed us end of all
 Wordly perfections. Now his Lord does call
 Him to ascend from earth to heaven high,
 Where he is blest to all Eternity.
 Who walk with God as he, shall so blest,
 And evermore in Christ His arms shall rest.

Lord, spare thy remnant, do not us forsake,
 From us do not thy Holy Spirit take.
 Thy Cause, thy Int'rest in this low *World* *is* *our* *own*;
 Thy gracious presence ay let be our Crown.
 J. C.

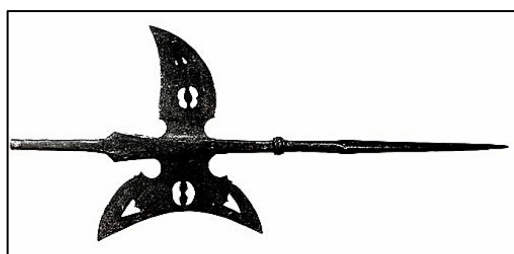
Boston Athenaeum

Broadside commemorating the death of John Alden
 by Rev. John Cotton
 Reprinted courtesy of the Boston Athenaeum

**The Inventory of his estate was taken 31 October 1687
and totaled 49£,17s, 6d, all moveables.**

	£	s	d	
Neate Cattell sheep Swine & one horse		13	0	0
One Table forme one Carpit one Cubert & coubert Cloth	0	15	0	
2 Chaires	0	3	0	
Bedsteds, Chests & boxes	0	15	0	
Pots Tongs one quart kettle	0	10	0	
By 1 ads 1s 6d & saws 7s	0	8	6	
By Augurs and Chisells		0	5	0
By Wedges 5s to coupers tooles 1£ 2s		1	7	0
One Carpenters Joyenters	0	1	6	
Cart boults Cleavie Exseta	0	13	0	
Dripping pan & gridirons	0	5	0	
By puter ware 1 pound 12s by old Iron 3s	11	5	0	
By 2 old guns	0	11	0	
By Table linen & other linen	11	2	0	
To beding	5	12	0	
One Spitt 1s 6d & bags 2s	0	3	6	
One mortising axe	0	1	0	
Marking Iron a case of trenchers with other things	0	7	0	
Hamen and winsh exse		0	2	6
By one goune and a bitt of linnin cloth		0	7	0
By one horse bride and Saddle livery and Cash				
And weareing Clothes	18	9	0	
By other old lumber	0	15	0	

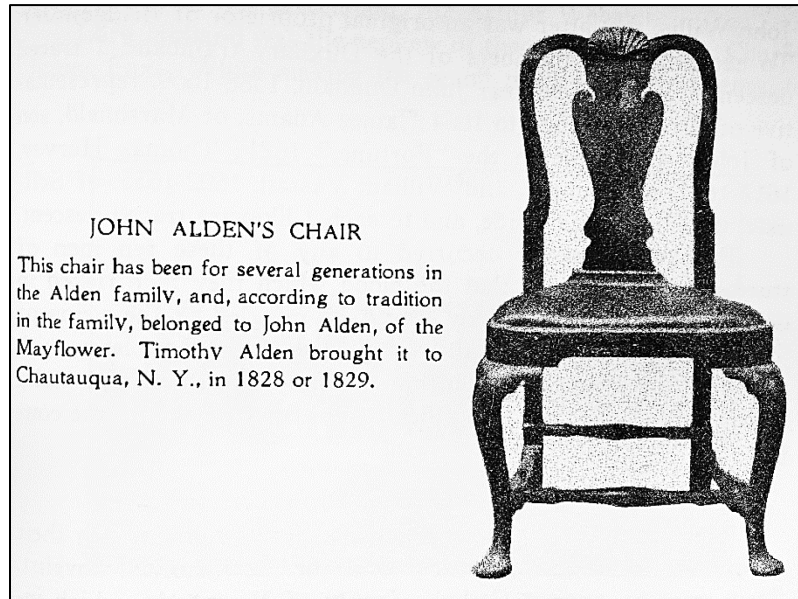
His Inventory also included “coopers tools” valued at 12 pounds sterling.



This Halberd was said to have been found in the cellar of the (second) Alden house in Duxbury. It was a weapon that John Alden and Myles Standish would have wielded, at least ceremonially, in the early days of the Plymouth Colony.

Wickedlocal.com for more information.

John Alden's Chair
Image from *The Memorial of
Captain Thomas Abbey*, 97.



On 13 June 1688, the heirs of John Alden Sr., of Duxbury signed a release in favor of Jonathan Alden stating that they had received their portion of the estate; those signed were Alexander Standish (in the right of his wife Sarah, deceased) , John Bass (in the right of his wife Ruth, deceased), Mary Alden, Thomas Delano, John Alden Jr., Joseph Alden Sr., David Alden, Priscilla Alden and William Pabodie.

Priscilla (Mullins) Alden, and then John Alden, were buried in the Myles Standish Burial Ground, (Old Burying Ground) located next to Duxbury's first meeting house and south of where they settled in the town of Duxbury on their 169 acre farm. The approximate locations of their graves were marked with memorial stones in the 1950's.

Her marker reads:

"In Memory of Mrs. Priscilla Alden, wife of John Alden, who died in Duxbury."
Erected by the Alden Kindred of America, 1930.

The inscription on his marker reads:

Near here lyes the body of Mr John Alden,
who died in Duxbury, Sept 12, 1687,
aged near 88 yrs.⁸⁶⁸

⁸⁶⁸ U.S., *Find a Grave*, Priscilla: Memorial #749, U.S., *Find a Grave*, John: Memorial #15, (ancestry.com), 11/8/2020.

Images from *Find A Grave*

Visiting the Alden House Historic Site



Author's photo, June 2019

The Alden House Historic Site (AHHS), and the property upon which it rests, are part of the original land grant given to John and Priscilla Alden in 1627. Designated a National Historic Landmark in 2009, the house is an essential piece of American history that provides visitors with an intimate look at one of America's founding families. The core of the present house is said to have been built between 1653 – 1672 by Jonathan Alden for his family and perhaps for his parents John and Priscilla to live out their later years. The 30 x 40-foot home has ten large rooms and faces south as was the pilgrim custom.

Over the next three centuries, the Alden family would occupy and in time preserve the home so that future generations can engage with the story of one of America's founding families. Today, the Alden House, with its two and a half acres of land, has the distinction of being the unique instance of still belonging to the same family to which it was issued originally in the land division of 1627.



Author's photo, June 2019



In 1907, it was purchased by the Alden Kindred as an historic site and museum. It has operated as such since 1960 and continues to welcome worldwide visitors. Membership in the Alden Kindred is open to all descendants and for a fee, lineage can be certified. (I have not yet submitted my application.)

For more information on the house:
<http://alden.org/content/aldenhistory2.pdf>

I arrived 105 Alden Street in Duxbury, Massachusetts on a sunny day in June 2019 and took the tour with a very knowledgeable docent. I also ventured through the wooded path to the First Site home, pictured earlier in this chapter. Another visitor wrote in the guest book: "The Alden House Homestead is a conglomerate of a couple of centuries of history. This is not a house preserved in time, rather a narrative regarding how a family homestead dating from the pilgrims and going forward was forged and maintained. I loved learning the history and encourage the curators to develop the Alden House narrative." I agree and encourage you to visit.

See also, *The Story of the Alden House* by Marguerite H. Alden (29 pages on familysearch.org).

These are some of the photos taken during my visit:





Child's tea set and stone marbles

Photo of doll by Ellie S, 2018

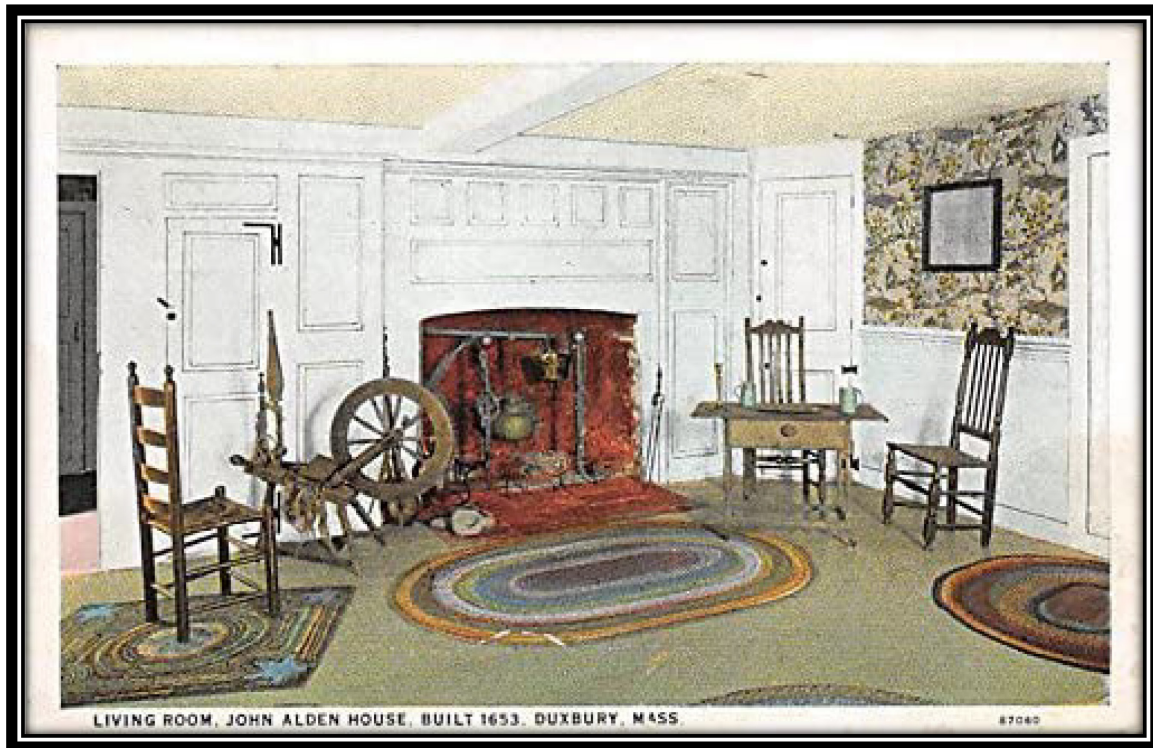




Abacus and
school books



A Bed Key (top left), a tool for tightening the ropes holding the mattress (top right)
– origin of the saying, “sleep tight.”



Alden House - Living Room
 Tichnor Brothers Postcard Collection, Boston Public Library
digitalcommonwealth.org,
 public domain

Mullins Family Ancestry

The **Mullins** surname is of English and Irish origins and is an occupational name from Old French *Molineux* - 'miller' (see Molyneux), or "moulin", meaning "mill", and denoting one who was resident or worked at such a place. The Coat of Arms for this surname includes a gold cross moline on a blue field. The first recorded spelling of the family name is shown to be that of Joseph Moline, which was dated 16 November 1658, a witness at Derry Cathedral, during the reign of Richard Cromwell, known as "The Lord Protector", 1658 - 1659.

Priscilla Mullins was the daughter of William Mullins, b. abt. 1572 England; d. Plymouth Colony, New England abt. 21 Feb 1621, the date he made his nuncupative Will.⁸⁶⁹ He was the

⁸⁶⁹ *Mayflower Increaseings*, William Mullins, 84, <online database>, (ancestry.com), 11/8/2020; *New England, The Great Migration, The Great Migration Begins*, Vol 2, G - O, 1315, has 2 Apr 1621 (ancestry.com), 11/8/2020; Yawkey,

son of John Mullins and Joan/Joane Bridger of Dorking parish which is located 21 miles south of London.⁸⁷⁰

John Mullins, d. Feb 1583/4. *The Dorking Register* shows baptism, marriages and burials of persons with the name of "Mullyns" between 1571 - 1585, then a gap of 25 years until more family names appear. Though there is nothing about "our" William, the parish registers do show:

8 July 1571 - John Mullyn, m. Joane Bridger.

4 February 1583/4 - John Mullyn, "shoomaker," d. age 66. (William was about 12 when his father died.)

Most likely, William Mullins was apprenticed at his time, presumably to another shoemaker, possibly Richard Bachelor of Dorking. Bachelor appeared in a manorial court roll with William's father, John Mullins. Bachelor also has a connection with Stoke-near-Guildford.

His mother, Joane (Bridger) Mullins, m. (2) 1 Nov. 1585 Vincent Benham.

The first mention of William Mullins in Dorking records is 4 October 1595; age 23, making his year of birth about 1572. He was fined 2p by the manorial court for non-attendance at that year's session. The record states he was then residing in the Chippingborough district of Dorking.

William Mullins, with trade or family ties, soon moves to Stoke Surrey, about 10 miles from Dorking, England.⁸⁷¹ Records place William Mullins on a 1596 muster list for Stoke-near-Guildford, Surry. While in Guildford, it is believed Mullins married for the first time, wife unknown. The parish registers for the period before 1662 have been lost. It is also believed that his first wife gave birth to at least one daughter, Elizabeth, with baptism recorded at Holy Trinity Church, Guildford 11 December 1598. Elizabeth may have died young, and there may have been other children born to this marriage.

I found a reference to biographer Caleb Johnson whose research appeared in the March 2012 *Mayflower Quarterly*.⁸⁷² I purchased a copy. Mr. Johnson reviewed hundreds of pages of material on the Mullins family in England, in particular about the two wives of William Mullins. He writes in his concluding hypothesis, after outlining and discussing six exhaustive techniques:

Richardson and allied families: a genealogical study with biographical notes, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), 213-214, 11/8/2020.

⁸⁷⁰ *The Mayflower Quarterly*, Vol 78, No. 1, March 2012, 44-57, Caleb H. Johnson, "An Investigation into the Origins of Alice, the wife of William Mullins," 46, (I purchased a copy from the General Society of Mayflower Descendants in the Fall of 2020. It is also available at the NEGHS library. Much of this section comes from this resource.)

⁸⁷¹ *Ibid.*, 47.

⁸⁷² *The Mayflower Quarterly*, Vol 78, No. 1, March 2012, 44-57, Caleb H. Johnson, "An Investigation into the Origins of Alice, the wife of William Mullins," 55.

William Mullins, could have m. (1) Elizabeth Wood in Stoke, near Guildford, co. Surrey, England sometime prior to December 1598, possibly in the early 1590s. She was the daughter of John and Joan (Taylor) Wood. She died prior to 1604.

Children, according to the article:

- i. WILLIAM MULLINS JR., named for his father, b. ca. 1593 England; d. 1674 New England, arriving sometime after his father's death. Records for the 1643 "Able to Bear Arms List" for "Duxborrow" (Duxbury). Note: a "Wm Mullens was of that marriage, as were daughters Sarah, Priscilla, and the Elizabeth named above."
- ii. ELIZABETH MULLINS, named after her mother, bapt. Holy Trinity Church, Guildford 11 Dec 1598.
- iii. SARAH MULLINS, named after Elizabeth Wood's sister Sarah; m. Stockdale Coddington, immigrant to New England.
- iv. **PRISCILLA MULLINS**, b. abt. 1603, named perhaps in honor of Priscilla (Dendy) Wood, sister-in-law to Elizabeth Wood who died suddenly and was bur. Nov 1603; d. South Duxbury, 1685; m. abt. 1623 **John Alden Sr.**
- v. JOSEPH MULLINS, possibly the son of William's second wife Alice (surname unknown, m. ca 1605.) Johnson suggests she may have been the widow of two possible men with the surname Browne, both from Dorking.

William Mullins returns to Dorking about 1604. One theory is that he may have returned to help his widowed mother as her husband, Vincent Benham, had died and was buried in Dorking, 12 June 1604. The other theory, proposed by Johnson in the *Mayflower Quarterly* article, is that William's wife, Elizabeth (Wood) Mullins died about that time and William returned to Dorking in late 1604 with several motherless children. Note: Elizabeth (Wood) Mullins did die before 1612, as she is not named in her father's Will, though as son-in-law, William Mullins witnessed his Will.

We do know that William Mullins, m. (2) Alice (___); d. Plymouth winter of 1621 or aft. 2 April 1621 when a copy of her husband's Will was made and mentions, "to my wife Alice halfe my goods." There are older claims she was Alice Atwood, daughter of Nichol Wood-Atwood and Olive Harman, but later chronological evidence disproved this connection. Longstanding claims that her maiden name is Atwood, or Poretiers, are without basis.⁸⁷³

Recent research in Dorking records has suggested that Alice is more likely to have come from the Browne, Gardinar, Dendy, Hammon or Wood families, perhaps even related to *Mayflower* passenger Peter Browne from Dorking.

⁸⁷³ *U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900*, Source #803.0, gives her name as Alice Atwood, b. 1574, (this is a compiled database through ancestry.com, drawing from sourced and unsourced materials), (ancestry.com), 11/8/2020; *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700, Third Torrey Supplement*, 190, William Mullins (c.1572-1621), m. Alice ___ (not Atwood, not Poretiers), m. by 1600 Plymouth, (ancestry.com), 11/8/2020.

Johnson's research tells us that Peter Browne's sister Jane was married to John Hammon, the son of widow Jane Hammon, which Johnson says could explain the relationship that prompted the widow to list William Mullins as an overseer of her estate. Widow Jane Hammon's other child, Jane (Hammon) Bothell, was married to Ephriam Bothell, who would purchase William Mullins property in 1619, shortly before Mullins departed on the Mayflower. Lastly, Peter Browne, named one of his own daughters Priscilla, an uncommon name in co. Surrey at that time.

Because there is no marriage date for William and Alice, and no baptismal dates for the children, other than Elizabeth, it cannot be proved that Alice was the mother of any of his children. In the absence of other evidence, it has been widely assumed that she was the mother of all the children, though according to biographer Johnson, perhaps only Joseph Mullins, born ca. 1606, was her son.

Children of William Mullins:

- i. WILLIAM MULLINS JR., b. England ca. 1593; d. Duxbury, New England 1674, arriving by 1637; m. (1) unknown, had daughter, who married 3 times, no children; m. (2) Ann (___) Bell, widow of Thomas Bell. William Mullins Jr. is listed in the 1643 "Able to Bear Arms List" for "Duxborrow" (Duxbury).
- ii. ELIZABETH MULLINS, bapt. Holy Trinity Church, Guildford 11 Dec 1598.
- iii. SARAH MULLINS, b. abt. 1598/9; m. by 1622 ___ Blunden (stayed in England), named Sare Blunden in her father's 1621 Will. (This in contrast to Johnson who indicates Sarah, m. Stockdale Coddington, immigrant to New England.)
- iv. **PRISCILLA MULLINS**, b. ca 1603; d. South Duxbury, 1685; no birth or baptismal record exists and no recorded age has been found for Priscilla; m. abt. 1623 **John Alden Sr.**
- v. JOSEPH MULLINS, b. ca. 1606; d. Plymouth aft. 2 Apr 1621, when his father's Will was written.

Records in Dorking on 5 October 1604, name William Mullins, residing in the Eastborough district as head of a *frankpledge*, ten families bonded to the King for their good behavior. This was a clever 16th century method of ensuring you watched your neighbors closely and kept them honest.⁸⁷⁴ On 19 September 1606, Mullins and his frankpledge were fined for an unknown transgression.

William Mullins witnessed the Will of John Wood on 30 April 1612. He signed with an "X," indicating he had not learned to write. (See William Mullins' Will for mention of Goodman Wood, who might be this same man.)

⁸⁷⁴ *The Mayflower Quarterly*, Vol 78, No. 1, March 2012, 44-57, Caleb H. Johnson, "An Investigation into the Origins of Alice, the wife of William Mullins," 45.



On 28 December 1612, Mullins purchased a tenement on West Street in Dorking from John Jetter, for 122£. This “Manor of Dorking” still exists as a row of four storefronts and is a stopping place for tourists.

Pictured left: the “Manor of Dorking” once owned by William Mullins. The house, now known as Nos 58-61 West Street, Dorking, was built ca. 1590, and dominated the commercial heart of the town.⁸⁷⁵

Mullins was named as overseer of the estate of Jane Hammon on 30 December 1612. His occupation is listed as shoemaker.

In August 1616, William Mullins is called before the Lordships of the Privy Counsel and held for an unknown reason for some time. On 1 May 1616, he appears before the Privy Council and continued in their custody. The reason may have involved matters of a religious nature, forcing Mullins to consider emigration.⁸⁷⁶

In May 1619, Mullins sold his Dorking Manor holdings to Ephraim Bothell/Bothall, for 180£, perhaps in preparation for the *Mayflower* voyage. As a successful shoemaker, his was one of the larger investments in the Merchant Adventurer Group, led by Thomas Weston. His Will states he had nine shares of stock, along with a large inventory of boots and shoes. William Bradford called him, “Mr. William Mullins,” possibly affording the title, Mullins was somewhat more prosperous than many of the original settlers.⁸⁷⁷

When William Mullins boarded the *Mayflower*, he was about 50 years of age. He and his family were part of the London contingent, and not pilgrims from Leydin. “William Mullines, 1620, arrived Plymouth, Massachusetts.” William is the primary immigrant, family members: wife (no name), child: Priscilla, Joseph.⁸⁷⁸ He was a signatory to the Mayflower Compact.

⁸⁷⁵ http://www.exploringsurreyspast.org.uk/themes/plac...illiam_mullins_house, 8/9/2021.

⁸⁷⁶ Charles Edward Banks, *The English ancestry and homes of the Pilgrim Fathers who came to Plymouth on the “Mayflower” in 1620, the “Fortune” in 1621, and the “Anne” and the “Little James” in 1623*, (Baltimore, Genealogical Pub. Co., 1962) 73-74, (babel.hathitrust.org), 11/8/2020; *New England, The Great Migration, The Great Migration Begins, Vol 2, G - O*, 1315-1316, (ancestry.com), 11/8/2020.

⁸⁷⁷ Stratton, *Plymouth Colony: Its History and People, 1620-1691*, 331 – 332, 406 – 410, (books.google.com), 11/8/2020; [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Mullins_\(Mayflower_passenger\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Mullins_(Mayflower_passenger)), 11/8/2020.

⁸⁷⁸ *US and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500's - 1900's*, Plymouth, Massachusetts, 1620, referencing William Bradford, *Passengers of the Mayflower*, Vol 2: 397-412, John Goodwin, *The Pilgrim Republic...*, George F. Willison, *Saints and Strangers ...*, & Michael Tepper (ed), *New World Immigrants ... Vol 1*, (ancestry.com), 11/8/2020.

The Will of William Mullins was the first one written in New England. It was written for him on his deathbed by Governor John Carver and witnessed by Dr. Giles Heale, the *Mayflower's* surgeon and its captain, Christopher Jones. His is the only known Will of a *Mayflower* passenger who died that winter, with it being taken back to England on the *Mayflower's* return trip.

Administration of the estate of William Mullins was granted on 23 July 1621 to "Sare Blunden, alias Mullins, natural and legitimate daughter of said deceased." In his Will dated 2 April 1621 and proved July 1621, William Mullins directed that from the 40£ in the hand of Goodman Woods:

In the name of God, Amen: I comit my soule to God that gave it and my bodie to the earth from whence it came. Also I give my goodes as followeth: I give my wife 10£, my son Joseph 10£ and my daughter Priscilla 10£, and my eldest son 10£, also I give to my eldest son all my debts, bond, bills (only that excepted 40£ in the hands of Goodman Wood)... with all the stock in his own hands; to my eldest daughter I give 10s to be paid out of my son's stock, the goods I have in Virginia as follows then, to my wife Alice half my goods & to Joseph and Priscilla the other half equally divided. I have twenty-one dozen of shoes and thirteen pairs of boots which I give into the Company hands for 40£ at seven years... or as my overseers shall think good, and if they like them at that rate at the dividend I shall have nine shares whereof I give as followeth: two to my wife, two to my son William, two to my son Joseph, two to my daughter Priscilla and one to the Company. If my son William will come to Virginia, I give him my share of land. To my two overseers Mr. John Carver and Mr. Williamson, 20s apiece to see this my will preformed desiring them that he would have an eye over my wife and children to be as fathers and friends to them, also to have a special eye to my man Robert which hath not so much approved himself as I would he should have done.

The probate record of his Will has the Latin annotation "nuper de Dorking defunctus in partibus transmarinis" indicating he formerly resided in Dorking, co. Surrey. The original still survives today.

In the survey of the Dorking Manor 1622, William Mullins appears holding a tenement, with barn, garden, year and other features about 1 ½ acres between West Street and Back Lane. As mentioned earlier, the property was sold in 1619 to Ephriam Bothell with a charge unspecified still upon it for 280£. Just which party made the shrewd deal is a question unanswered, but William had apparently sold this holding just before sailing in the *Mayflower* for the Colonies, with his wife and son Joseph.⁸⁷⁹

Robert Carter was an apprentice or manservant of William Mullins. He did not sign the *Mayflower Compact* in November 1620, and is believed to have been under age 21 at the time, probably in his late teens. Since he was traveling in the company of the Mullins family of Dorking, Surrey, it can be speculated that Carter came from this area as well, although his ancestry is uncertain. Robert Carter died soon after his master's death.⁸⁸⁰

William Mullins was buried in Coles Hill Burial Ground, Plymouth. *Find a Grave*, Memorial 28971892 has the following information:

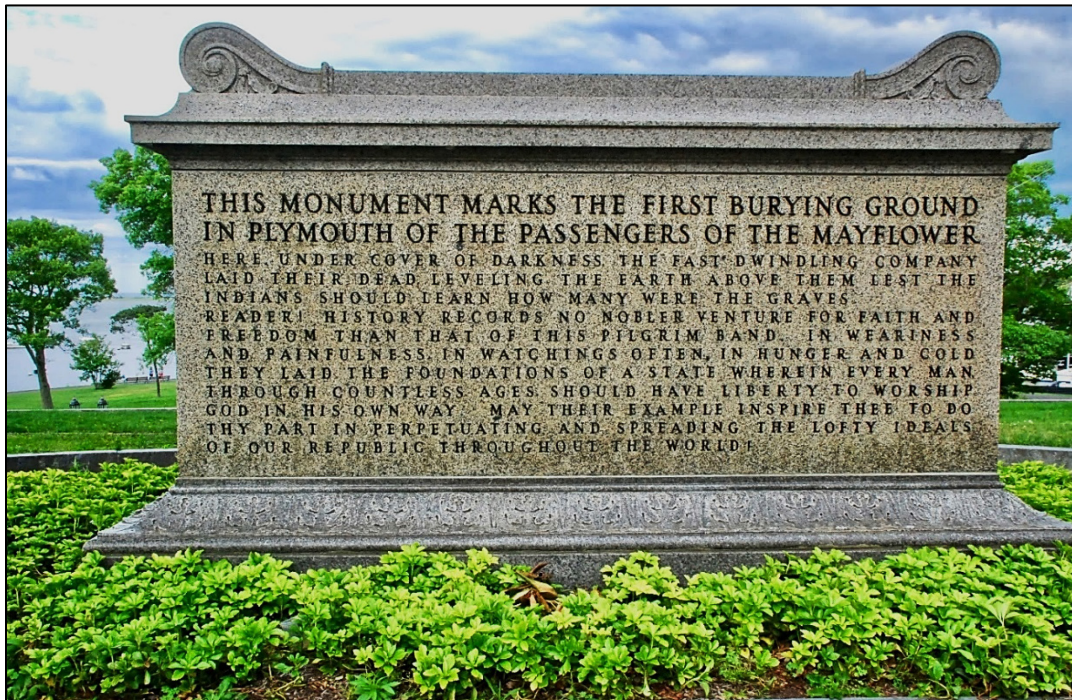
⁸⁷⁹ *History and genealogy of the Mayflower planters and first comers to ye Olde Colonie*, <online database>, (Provo, UT., Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), Vol II, *The early Britain of our forefathers*, 213 – 215, 1/20/2021.

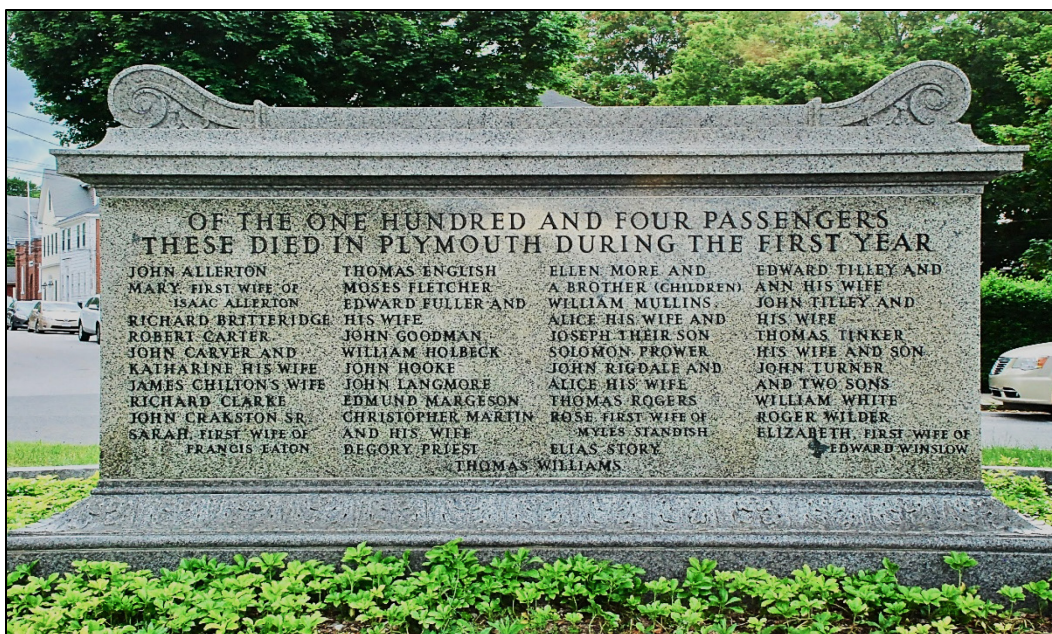
⁸⁸⁰ Stratton, *Plymouth Colony: Its History and People, 1620-1691*, 259, (books.google.com), 11/8/2020.

He is buried on the hillside above Water Street, just overlooking Plymouth Rock. A sarcophagus is situated there with many people that died the first winter. William, Alice, his wife, and their son are buried in that memorial. The pilgrims buried their dead at night in shallow graves so that the Indians would not know how many of them had died that first winter. Later the monument was built and the remains of the first winter's dead were placed there on the hillside.

William Mullins' wife Alice and son Joseph are believed to have died sometime after the departure of the *Mayflower* for England 5 April 1621 and before the arrival of the ship the *Fortune* in mid-November 1621. They were also buried in Coles Hill Burial Ground. The family is memorialized on the Pilgrim Memorial Tomb, Coles Hill, as "William Mullins, Alice his wife and Joseph their son."

I visited Cole's Hill in Plymouth on a warm early summer evening. The gravesite commands a beautiful view of the ocean and highlands by which the bay is encircled. Even so, I felt a chill to think of what they endured, of all the losses suffered, as they settled in this new land.





Author's photos, June 2019



"When our hearts turn to our ancestors, something changes inside us. We feel part of something greater than ourselves. Our inborn yearnings for family connections are fulfilled when we are linked to our ancestors..." - Russell M. Nelson⁸⁸¹

"We are who we are because they were who they were. . ." - Unknown

⁸⁸¹ https://www.goodreads.com/author/show/655749_Russell_M_Nelson, 17th president and prophet of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints (LDS Church). Prior to his service as head of the Church, President Nelson served as president of the Quorum of the Twelve Apostles. He is also a retired American physician and cardiothoracic surgeon.



ENDING COMMENTS

To Be Continued...

As I come to the end of Volume Two and the myriad ancestors within, some with stories, others with only their names, I feel part of something far greater than myself. It has been an enormous undertaking, and one I will conclude in Volume Three of my Abbey ancestors. Volume Four will do the same for my Ashman ancestors, my father's family line. I hope you will join me.

I have DNA which links me to close relatives, and 5th cousins, and proves many of the ancestors named here. I also have traits and personality characteristics which I like to think I also "inherited" from my ancestors, these colonists and pioneers. They were adventurous and sometimes desperate spirits, curious and questioning, and willing to go to any length to make a better life for themselves and their families. I too can be stubborn and unyielding, determined to meet life on life's terms, even when the terms are harsh, and to survive. I am thankful for all that has been handed down in an abundance of grace. I leave these Volumes for my family, my grandchildren, and their grandchildren, and the generations to come.

Lineage Societies

Years ago, I applied for membership and was accepted into *The National Society Colonial Dames of the XVII Century*. Unfortunately, the Engraver, placed my qualifying ancestor John Abbe, of Wenham, Massachusetts, in Maryland. I never asked to have the certificate changed. Fast forward to 2020-2022 and the writing of *Abbey-Ashman: Two Colonial and Pioneering Families of North America; Volume One: The American Colonists* and now *Volume Two: The Alden Ancestors*. I wanted a corrected certificate as I was also applying to *The Mayflower Society* and *The Daughters of the American Revolution*; all three would need to carry my (new) married surname.

The application process for the Colonial Dames in 1993, was much simpler than either of the other lineage societies in 2020. Then, I simply submitted pages from the *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy, In Memory of John Abbe and His Descendants* by Cleveland Abbe and Josephine Genung Nichols, (Tuttle, Morehouse & Taylor Company, New Haven, CT, 1916) and voila – I was IN!

Albuquerque Genealogical Society members came to my aid. Carl Malone was the local registrar for *The Mayflower Society* and with his help, and documentation from the “Silver Books,” we traced my ancestry back to John Alden of the *Mayflower*. Fairly simple. Then came *The Daughters of the American Revolution*. Kathryn Yarborough was the DAR registrar volunteer for AGS and did a most thorough job of helping me find just the right documentation for each generation of my Abbe/Abbey ancestors back to Capt. Thomas Abbey, Revolutionary War Hero, memorialized in the statue which resides on the green in front of the Congregational Church in Enfield, Connecticut. The statue was erected by Cleveland Abbey, his mother and sisters in 1916. Once I was accepted as a member of the DAR, I was also accepted as an auxiliary member of the DAR Chapter in Enfield, which is named for Penelope (Terry) Abbey, the wife of Capt. Thomas Abbey.

Now to *The Colonial Dames*. I had to become re-instated into the Chapter I had joined in 1993 in Midland, Texas. I had to pay dues for the year (thankfully not for every year since 1993!), before I could apply for a new certificate. The National office had my old Midland address and sent the certificate there. After a second attempt, I was told I needed to update my address in their national online data base, and finally the new certificate arrived.

The first DAR meeting I attended, feature students who had won the DAR writing contest here in Albuquerque. They were presented and read their essays. I recalled winning the DAR writing contest when I was in the 5th grade, writing about Capt. Thomas Abbey! I hope to travel to Midland and attend the Dr. John Woodson chapter of *The Colonial Dames* and become reacquainted with the few members I knew back when. *The Mayflower Society* has a fall meeting here in New Mexico and I hope to attend.



General Society of Mayflower Descendants


This certifies that

Margaret Abbey Ashman Shannon

descendant of

John Alden

is a member of the General Society of Mayflower Descendants, founded 12 January 1897,
to perpetuate the memory of the Pilgrims, to maintain and defend their principles of civil and religious liberty,
and to honor their unflinching strength, undying courage and abiding faith, to which they committed their lives.


Governor General Jane Groves Riddell Hurt


Historian General Marjorie K. Hurtuk

GSMD Number	102164
Member Society	New Mexico
Number	535
Anno Domini	27 May 2022

Society of Mayflower Descendants

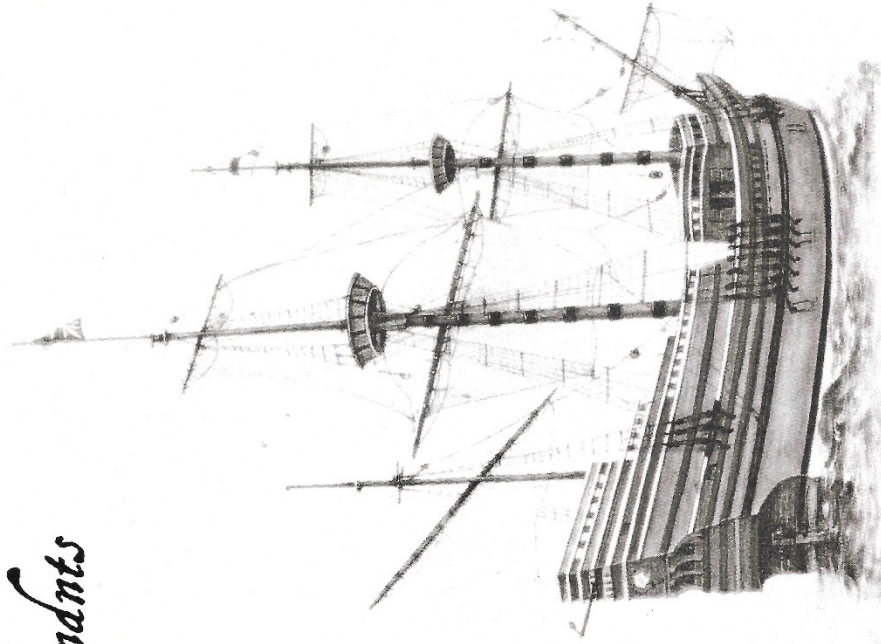
In the

State of New Mexico

Margaret Abbey Ashman Shannon

is a direct descendant of Mayflower Passenger

John Alden



New Mexico: 535

General Society: 102164

Governor: Janet Coryore

Historian: Carl P. W. M.

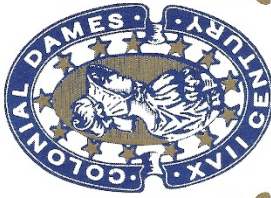
Elected:

27 May 2022

29139
National Number

1601

1701



The National Society Colonial Dames XVII Century

By virtue of the power bestowed upon us as National Officers:

We hereby declare

Margaret Abbey Ashman Shannon

A Member of THE COLONIAL DAMES XVII CENTURY

She is entered on the Books of the National Society as a descendant of

John Abbe of Massachusetts


Given under our hands and seal this 10th day of December 1993



Dorothy Thompson
President General

Christine Sturley
Registrar General

1776



1890

THE NATIONAL SOCIETY OF THE

Daughters of the American Revolution

MARGARET ABBEY ASHMAN SHANNON

is a regularly approved member of the National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, having been admitted by the National Board of Management by virtue of her descent from a patriot who with unfailing loyalty served as a sailor, soldier, civil officer, or rendered material aid to the cause of American Independence during the Revolutionary War


this fifth day of May 2022

National No. 1030306

Ancestor THOMAS ABBEY

State Connecticut

Admitted May 5, 2022



Deise Oring VanBuren

President General

Peggy Carney Jewell

Recording Secretary General

Patay R McTall

Registrar General

There are additional lineage societies for which I and other descendants can qualify. The following are but a few:

The Flagon and Trencher, based on Walter Fairfield's (Volume One) running of an "Ordinary."
The Jamestown Society, based on John Vassall's support of the colony of Jamestown.
Alden Kindred of America.

My sons, grandson, great nephews and other male descendants, can also become members of *The Sons of the American Revolution* and of *The Society of the Cincinnati*, descendants of Officers of the Continental Army.

I've included these copies of my certificates as reference for my grandchildren and any future descendants that are interesting in applying – the applications are on file with each organization. My DAR proof lineage, uses Thomas Abbey's son, Peter Abbey, the primary Abbey ancestor of this Volume Two, and in so doing, created a new pathway into the DAR.

Updates to Volume One – The American Colonists



Volume One – The American Colonists was the winner of the 2022 New Mexico Press Women's Communications Contest. It was then awarded Honorable Mention in the National Press Women's Communication Contest.



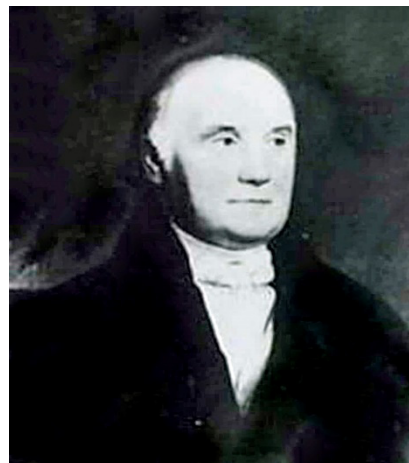
Tombstone of Dr. Ebenezer Terry, Enfield Street Cemetery. This image was missed as I put together Volume I. The top half is engraved with "In Memory of Doctor Ebenezer Terry who died August 2nd 1780 in the 85th Year of his age... The lower half is (at best) transcribed:

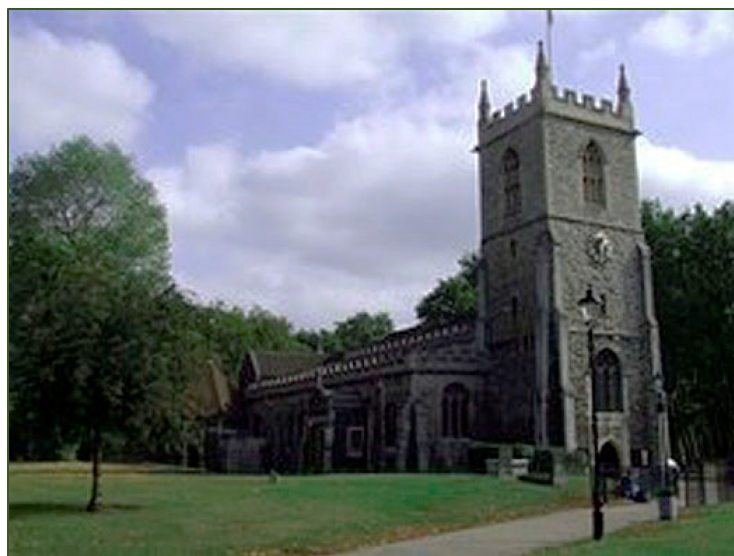
"Ye living men see here your end.
To Jesus' voice pray you attend.
Your days your years how swift...
Be warn'd... prepare to die."

Find A Grave, Memorial 25778118
added by Jack Jr. 2014

Captain Samuel Terry Jr., b. July 1661 Springfield, Massachusetts; d. 2 Jan 1731, Enfield, Connecticut, buried Enfield Street Cemetery; husband to Hannah Morgan.

Portrait added by Diana L. Terry to *Find a Grave*, Memorial 25777209





Picture of St. Dunstan, Stepney, London, England where many of our Vassall ancestors were baptized, married and buried.

The following documents are from:

Genealogical gleanings in England, Volumes 1 & 2, <database on-line>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2005); Original data: Henry F. Waters, [G]enealogical gleanings in England, (Boston, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1901.)

This source contains many Wills for this extended family line – that of George Kinge was featured in Volume One as was an abstract of the Will of John Vassall. If the reader wants to know more, it is easily accessed on Ancestry.com; 9/4/2022.

The Will of John Vassell Sr.

JOHN VASSELL of Ratcliffe in the parish of Stepney, Middlesex, mariner, 29 April 1625, proved 16 September 1625. To be buried in the parish church of Stepney where I am now a parishioner. To my wife Judith all my household stuff whatsoever, my plate only excepted. To my son Samuel my great gilt salt, to my son William my plain white silver salt and to my daughter Ann Jones my great white silver bowl. The rest of my plate to Judith my wife during her natural life, and after her decease it shall be divided amongst other five of my children, viz^t. Rachel the wife of Peter Andrewes, Stephen Vassell, Thomas Vassell, Mary the wife of Edward West and Elizabeth the wife of Henry Church, at the discretion of my said wife according as she shall dispose thereof in her life time. I give to the said William Vassell to his use forever all the wainscot, portals of wainscot, cupboards and benches of wainscot affixed and fastened in the house wherein I now dwell and all the dresser boards, shelves, iron backs for chimnies, locks and other ironworks upon the doors and windows now standing and being in and about my said dwelling house in Racliffe. I give him also the great table of walnut tree now standing in my great parlor. I give to my son Thomas Vassell my lease and term of years unexpired of the parsonage or rectory of Eastwood in the County of Essex, which I bought of John Coggen and Mary his wife, and all my messuages, lands, tenements &c. in Eastwood. To my daughter Mary wife of Edward West fifty pounds. To my daughter Rachel now wife of Peter Androse one hundred pounds. To Elizabeth my daughter, now wife of Henry Church one hundred pounds. Judith my daughter, the relict of John Freeborne late deceased, hath had and received divers and sundry large sums of money far surpassing and surmounting the portions of the rest of my daughters. I give her therefore only twenty shillings to buy her a ring. I give to Judith my wife for life, my messuages, lands, tenements &c. in Seething Lane, in the several parishes of All Sts Barking. in Tower Street. and St. Olaves. White Hart Street, London, and after her decease I give and bequeath them all to my son Stephen Vassell. I give all my lands, messuages &c. at Brookstreet in the parish of South Weale (Weald), Essex, unto Judith my wife and her heirs forever. I make and appoint the said Judith Vassell sole executrix. And to be overseers I do appoint my sons Samuel Vassall, William Vassell and my son in law John Jones.

On the 15th day of April 1686 commission issued to Stephen Vassall grandson (*nepoti ex filio*) of John Vassall lately of Ratcliffe &c. deceased to administer the goods &c. left unadministered by Judith Vassall the relict and executrix deceased.

Clarke, 99.

[The testator was of Ratcliffe, Stepney, and of Eastwood, Essex. He was an alderman of London and vestryman of the parish of Stepney, the ancestor of all of the name who afterwards figured in the history of New England. In 1588 he fitted out at his own expense, and commanded, two ships: the "Samuel" and "Little Toby," with which he joined the Royal Navy to oppose the Spanish Armada. His name and services are commemorated upon the memorial lately erected in Plymouth. He is said to have been son of another John Vassall who came to England from France, a member of an ancient family of Rinart, by Cany, in Normandy.*

The testator was three times married in St. Dunstan, Stepney: 1st, 25 Sept. 1569, to Anne Hewes, by whom no issue survived; 2d, 4 Sept. 1580, to Anna Russell, through whom the Ratcliffe estate came into the family, and who was the mother of *Judith*, b. 25 Mar. 1582, mar. John Freeborne, *Samuel*, b. 5 June 1586, the London M. P., and *William*, b. 27 Aug. 1592; she died 5 May 1593, and he mar. 3d, in 1594, *Judith*, widow of Thomas Scott, and daughter of Stephen Borough of Stepney, who became mother of *Anna*, b. 10 Jan. 1595,

mar. John Jones, *Rachel*, mar. Peter Andrews, *Stephen*, the head of the Essex branch, *Thomas*, b. 7 Apr. 1702, *Mary*, mar. Edward West, and *Elizabeth*, mar. Henry Church. *Judith*, the widow, died Jan. 1638-9, and her will follows.

Of the sons of John Vassall, Samuel, the eldest, was Member of Parliament for London 1640-1660, and was one of the original patentees of Massachusetts lands. In 1766 an elaborate monument to his memory was erected in King's Chapel, Boston, by Florentius Vassall, not a descendant as stated by me in REGISTER xvii., 56, but a great-grandson of his younger brother William. Samuel Vassall mar. Frances, dau. of Abraham Cartwright of London (see Cartwright wills in this group). He was of St. George, Southwark, and later of Bedale, Yorks, and died in 1667, with issue: *John*, b. 1619, d. 1664, of London and Bedale, whose will is the last of those of the Vassalls furnished by Mr. Waters for this number of the REGISTER, and who died apparently without issue surviving; *Francis*, living 1667 with issue; *William*, living 1664; *Henry*, d. s. p. probably in Carolina, and before 1667; *Samuel*, living 1667 with issue. None of the descendants of Samuel and Frances are known to have been in New England.

* I have in my possession an account of the French family of Vassall, prepared by Lieut H. Vassal of the French navy, in 1867, tracing the name back to the twelfth century.

—E. D. H.

William, the second son of John of the Armada will be noticed on a following page.

Stephen, the third son of John, became the Rector of Rayleigh, died in 1643, leaving an only son Stephen of Rochford, d. 1695, the father of Asser, d. 1728, the father of another Asser, d. 1762.

Of Thomas, the youngest son of John, I know but little. He mar. 1625, Anne Dickenson, was of St. Leonard, Eastcheap, a draper, and living in 1650.

E. D. HARRIS.



Map of Llandaff, Wales 1610, Wikipedia.com, credit to John Speed, cardiffparks.org.uk

Miles Morgan - Volume One, Chapter V, originated in Wales, in the city of Llandaff. I found the following:

The city of Llandaff is located at an ancient ford across the River Taff where a Roman road led to the fort at Cardiff. The settlement grew around Llandaff Cathedral, built by the Normans in 1120 to house the shrine of St Teilo who was traditionally said to have founded the site in 540. Medieval Llandaff had its own market and a castle where the Bishops of Llandaff resided. After the Reformation ended pilgrimages to Teilo's shrine, the Cathedral was partially ruined and Llandaff's importance decreased. The growth of Cardiff as a major coal port during the Industrial Revolution brought prosperity to the area and enabled the Cathedral to be restored between 1843 and 1869. The Victorians developed Llandaff as a genteel suburb with significant houses including Insole Court and Rookwood House. During the major bombing raid on Cardiff in January 1941, the Cathedral was devastated by a parachute mine and several buildings were destroyed. After World War II, Llandaff became more populous as suburbs were built on the Insole estate. The Cathedral was rebuilt in 1957 and BBC Wales's headquarters were established in Llantrisant Road from 1966 to 2020.

For more information on the history of Llandaff, Wales, the reader can access:

Ancestry.com. *Wales Topographical Dictionary*, 1844, <database on-line>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2004) Vol 2 L-Y, page 108 ff. 9/4/2022.

Original data: Samuel Lewis, *A Topographical Dictionary of Wales, Comprising the Several Counties, Cities, Boroughs, Corporate and Market Towns, Parishes, Chapelries, and Townships, with Historical and Statistical Descriptions*, Vol. I-II, (London, England: S. Lewis and Co., 1844).

A**Abbe**

John (Immigrant), 5, 17, 301
 Obadiah, 105
 Thomas, 5, 43, 61, 84, 101, 106, 119, 285, 300
 Abbey
 Althea, 19
 Arabella, 19
 Charles, 23
 Chauncey, 19
 Dorrephus, 19
 Fanny, 19
 Frances, 23
 Hannah (Alden), 5, 17, 19, 20, 21, 23, 26, 29, 31, 37, 43, 80, 104, 128
 Harriet A, 23, 24
 Henry Gilbert, 22, 24, 25
 Henry Jr., 19
 Mary Hannah (Minnie), 20
 Mercy (Hunt), 23, 24
 Penelope (Terry), 17, 84, 300
 Peter, 17, 20, 21, 23 - 26, 37, 84, 305
 Peter M (Morton), 23
 Seth Alden, 17, 19, 22 - 26
 Thomas (Capt.), 5, 17, 43, 84, 287, 300, 305
 William, 19

Abimeleck, 160**Abourn**

Sam & Moses, 92
 Sam Sr., 92

Adam

Fernando, 219

Adams

Ellen/Eleanor (Newton), 258
 Hannah (Bass), 272
 John, 258
 John (US President), 27, 30, 267, 272
 John Quincy (US President), 30, 272
 Mary, 61
 William, 61

Adey

Web, 243

Adkins

Arabella (Abbey), 24
 William Griffin (M.D.), 19

Alabaster

Margaret, 170
 Margaret (Blythe), 172

Alcock

Dr. John, 118
 George, 117
 Mary, 108, 118

Alden

Abigail, 195
 Abigail (Shaw), 199
 Abraham, 194
 Amos (Col.), 17, 23, 37, 39 - 41, 84, 137, 139, 140, 142, 197
 Amos (Maj.), 38
 Amos Jr., 37
 Azubah, 138
 Benjamin, 272, 273
 Caleb, 138, 195
 Daniel, 196, 198, 237, 238
 Daniel & Abigail, 196, 198
 David, 195, 196, 259, 260, 272, 273, 279, 280, 285
 Ebenezer (sic) Eleazar, 196
 Eleazar Jr., 139, 194, 196, 197
 Eleazar Sr., 139, 196 - 198, 236
 Elizabeth/Elisabeth, 251, 270
 Experience, 138
 Experience (Hayward), 37, 137, 140
 Ezra, 139, 195, 196
 Hannah, 17, 23, 26, 37, 41, 80, 237, 238
 Hannah (Bush), 37, 41, 84, 137
 Hannah (Dunham), 236, 267 - 241, 244, 252
 Hayward/Howard, 138
 Hopestill, 252
 Huldah, 138
 Isaac, 155, 199, 252
 John, 137, 252
 John & Priscilla (Mullins), 17, 157, 236, 250, 268, 270, 285, 293
 John Jr., 271, 185
 John Sr., 17, 157, 236, 251, 252, 255, 256, 262, 263, 266 - 268, 270, 273, 276 - 285, 293, 294

Jonathan Sr. (Capt.), 137, 139 - 141, 195, 197, 198, 253, 271, 280, 285
 Jonathan Jr., 137, 139
 Joseph III, 237
 Joseph IV, 237
 Joseph Jr. (Deacon), 194, 195, 234, 237 - 241, 252
 Joseph Sr., 157, 161, 236, 248, 251 - 257, 263, 271, 280, 285
 Joshua, 139, 195, 197
 Lovice (Lovisie), 38
 Martha (Shaw), 137, 192, 196, 197
 Mary, 37, 138, 238, 253, 272, 285
 Mary (Carver), 196
 Mary (Simmons), 253
 Mehitable, 238
 Mercy, 252
 Oliver, 138, 139
 Priscilla, 271
 Priscilla (Mullins), 5, 17, 256, 271, 285, 287, 293
 Rebecca, 272
 Rev. Timothy, 196, 270
 Ruth, 272
 Samuel, 238, 273
 Sarah, 157, 197, 252, 272
 Seth, 38
 Seth Jr., 38
 Seth Sr. (Capt.), 38, 138, 196, 238
 Timothy, 195, 270
 Zephaniah, 139

Aldrich

Sarah, 179

Alger

Israel, 179

Allen

Edward, 221
 Francis Olcott, 87
 Hervey, 201
 John, 188
 Mehitable, 252
 Ralph, 189
 Rev. John, 214

Allerton

Isaac, 236

Allin

Samuel Jr., 253

Ames

Elizabeth (Hayward), 183
 John, 169, 181, 182, 184, 185, 187
 John & Elizabeth, 185
 Millicent, 156, 166, 170, 187
 Sarah, 183, 184

Ames/Eames

Anthony & Margery (Pierce),
 169

Andrews

Elizabeth, 143 - 145, 147
 Henry Jr., 147, 153
 Henry Sr., 144 - 147
 John Jr. (Capt.) & Alice, 211, 212
 John Sr., 211

Andros

Gov., 61

Appleton

Samuel (Maj.), 61

Appleyard

Alice, 232
 John, 232
 Sybil (Mason) (Shaw), 232

Arnold

Patron Saint of Beer Brewing, 79

Ashley

John (Col.), 139

Ashman

Richard Turner, 29

Ashwell

William, 247
 Atwater
 E.C., 24, 25

Atwood

Alice, 293
 Stephen, 243, 244

Augur

Patience, 183, 184

Austin

John, 89

Averill

Ebenezer, 45
 Nathaniel, 47

Awnsell/Ansell

Alice, 78
 John, 78

Aylett

Elizabeth, 121, 122
 William & Margaret (___), 122

B**Bachelor**

Richard, 292

Bacon

Mary, 167

Bailey

Guido, 180

Baillou

Abigail, 241, 242, 246
 Anna, 242, 248
 Mary, 248
 Thomas, 241, 248

Baine

Christopher, 79

Bairestow /Barestow

John, 222

Baldwin

Samuel, 198

Bangs

Edward, 274

Barbor

Elizabeth, 179

Barnes

John, 244, 245

Barr

John, 24

Barrett

Grace, 106
 John, 128

Barstow

Patience, 257
 William, 257

Bartholomew

Henry, 94

Bartlett

Robert, 245

Bass

Hannah, 272
 John, 272
 John & Ruth (Alden), 285
 Samuel, 272

Bassett

Joseph, 161

Bates

Increase, 202
 John, 203
 Mary, 228

Batter

Edmond, 99

Baxter

Daniel, 90

Bayley

Christian, 202
 Goodman, 180, 254

Beecher

Catherine E., 30

Bell

Elizabeth, 157
 Thomas & Ann (___), 294

Bellington

Helin, 244

Bement

John Jr., 105
 John Sr., 105
 Pima, 37

Benedict

Cornelia, 23
 Laura L./Loura, 23

Benet

Rose, 76

Benham

Vincent, 292, 293

Bentley

Richard, 231
 Wendy, 96

Benton

Phoebe, 59, 60

Bery

John, 101

Best

Bridget, 217, 221, 223, 224, 227,
 229
 Daughter, 224
 Henry, (Henrici), 217, 218, 222 -
 225, 229
 Henry & Grace (Boithes), 223,
 225
 Isabella, 225
 Johanna/Joan or Jane (___), 225
 John, 224
 Margaret/ Margaret
 (Maud/Mawd/Mawde), 225,
 226
 Mary/Maria/Marie, 224, 225
 Michael, 224
 Richard, 225

- Betts**
Peter (Elder & Younger), 171
- Bicknell**
Hannah, 211
John, 211, 218
Zachariah, 218
- Bird**
Rebecca, 108
- Birdsall**
Anne, 97
Henry, 92, 96 - 99
Henry & Agnes (___), (Kempe?)
96, 97
Judith, 86, 91 93, 96 - 97
Nathan, 97
Thomas, 96, 99
- Birdsall/Birshall**
Henry & Ann (Griffin), 96
- Bishop**
Alicia, 245
Martha, 245
- Blackwell**
Elizabeth (M.D.), 31
- Blanchard**
John Sr., 213
Mary, 199
- Blanford**
Sarah, 56
- Bliss**
John, 105
Lawrence, 109, 115
Samuel, 105
- Bluette**
John, 62
- Blunden**
Sarah (Mullins), 294, 296
- Blythe**
Margaret, 172,
Thomas, 172
Boithes
Grace, 223 - 225
John & Isabella (Swift), 224, 225
- Bolton**
John, 155, 239
John Jr., 141
Sarah (Chesebrough), 155
- Bond**
Elizabeth, 147
- Bonde**
John, 76
- Boone**
Daniel, 26
- Booth**
Symon, 128
- Bothell**
Ephriam, 294 - 296
Jane (Hammon), 294
- Bradford**
William Sr. (Esq., Maj., Gov.),
153, 236, 254, 256, 268, 295
- Braind**
William, 279
- Brand**
Rose, 73
William, 74
- Brandon**
William, 215
- Brett**
Alice, 186
Barbara, 128
Elihu, 184
Nathaniel, 155
William Sr., 180, 189
- Brewer**
Daniel & Joanna (___), 166
Elizabeth, 166, 169
Nathaniel, 166, 169
- Brewster**
William (Elder), 236, 244, 264
- Bridger**
Joan/Joane, 292
- Bridges**
Hackaliah, 61
- Briggs**
Experience (___), 148
Jonathan Jr., 148
Jonathan Sr., 148
- Brocke**
Henry, 220
- Bronde**
John, 73
Susan, 73
- Brooke**
Anne, 224
- Brooks**
Gilbert, 156
Hannah, 156
- William, 109
- Brown**
Mary, 86
Rebecca, 252
- Browne**
Lydia, 63
Peter, 294
Priscilla, 294
- Buckminster**
Elizabeth (Clark), 118
- Bullock**
Alice, 92
Henry, 92
JT & Linda, 9
- Burchie**
Capt. of the Alexander, 123
- Burrill**
John, 252
- Bush**
Aaron, 45, 81, 138
Abiah, 106
Abiel, 41
Alis (French), 138
Anna, 129
Caleb, 81, 104
Daniel, 104
David, 42
Deborah, 124
Ebenezer, 104
Edward, 124
Eli, 41, 42
Elizabeth, 81
Experience, 42
Experience (French), 42
George, 124
George Herbert Walker (US President), 132, 134
George Walker & Laura (Welch) (US President & First Lady), 134
Grace (Sanders/Saunders), 126
Hannah, 37, 41, 84, 137
James, 124
John, 104, 122 - 126, 129, 133
John & Grace (___) / (Saunders),
106, 123 - 125
John I, 129
John II, 129
John Jr., 123, 126
Jonathan, 42, 105, 106, 123
Jonathan III, 80

- Jonathan Jr., 80, 81, 83, 86, 88, 104
 Jonathan Sr., 80, 104 - 106, 122, 124
 Jonathan Sr. & Sarah (____), 80, 104
 Joseph, 104
 Joseph N., 105
 Joshua, 41, 43, 44, 80, 81
 Joshua Jr., 41, 42
 Judith (____), 129
 Mary, 81
 Miriam, 45, 81
 Moses (Capt.), 80, 81
 Prescott, 132
 Rachel, 45, 81
 Rachel (Kibbe), 83, 85, 86
 Reynold Jr., 129, 132
 Reynold Sr., 122, 129, 130, 131
 Reynold Sr. & Isabella Hall, 122, 123, 129
 Reynold Sr. & Judith (____), 123, 129
 Rufus, 138
 Ruth, 105
 Samuel, 123, 124
 Sarah, 104
 Timothy, 133
 William, 129
- Buswell**
 Samuel, 56, 58, 60
- Buxstone**
 Elizabeth, 91
- Bygg**
 Alice, 76
- Byley**
 James, 118
 Byram
 Experience, 182
 Nicholas, 218, 221, 258
- Byrd**
 Joseph, 170
- C**
- Canady**
 Daniel, 91
 Carter
 Robert, 267, 296, 297
- Carver**
 David, 201
- John, 236
 John (Gov.), 296
 Mary, 196
 Mehitable, 238
- Case**
 Anna, 157
- Chamber**
 Thomas, 171
- Chandler**
 Benjamin, 260
 Roger, 257
 Sarah, 257
- Chapin**
 Catherine, 112
 Cicely (Penny), 112
 David, 112
 Henry, 112
 Joanna/Joane, 109, 111, 112
 John, 111, 112
 Josiah, 112
 Margaret, 112
 Nathaniel, 106
 Phillip, 111
 Phillipe, 112
 Samuel, 111, 112
 Samuel (Deacon), 110, 112, 113
 Sarah, 112
 Thomas, 111, 112
 Thomas & Bridget, 112
- Chapman**
 John, aka Johnny Appleseed, 27
- Chase**
 William, 117
- Cheeseborough**
 Samuel & Priscilla (Alden), 272
- Chubb**
 William, 171
 Church
 Agnes, 74
 Benjamin, 183
- Clark**
 Agnes, 151
 Catherine, 19
 Elizabeth, 118
- Clarke**
 John, 62
 Walter, 178
 Cleaves
 George, 125
- Clench**
 Elizabeth, 123, 129
- Cliffe**
 Joan, 112
 John, 112
- Cobb**
 Harvey, 149
 Mary, 243
- Coddington**
 Stockdale, 293, 294
- Cole**
 Robert, 117
- Coleman**
 Joseph Sr., 259
- Collier**
 Elizabeth, 272
 Joan, 144
- Collins**
 John, 101
- Colton**
 George (Q.M.), 110
- Comey**
 Mary, 100
- Cook**
 Eliza, 91
 Hannah, 91, 93
 Henry Jr., 91, 93
 Isaac, 91, 93, 94
 John, 91, 93, 94
 Judith, 91, 93, 94
 Judith (Birdsall), 91, 93, 94, 96
 Martha & Mary (twins), 91, 93, 94
 Rachel, 86, 91, 100, 101
 Samuel, 91, 94, 96
- Cook/e**
 Henry, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 95
 Henry & Judith (Birdsall), 86, 98
- Cooke**
 Edmund or Edward & Elizabeth (Nicholls), 90
 Francis, 245, 258
 Rachel, 101
 Cooles
 Joseph, 128
- Cooper**
 Humility, 241
 Rachel, 171
 Robert, 242

- Thomas, 169
 Thomas III, 166
Copeland
 John, 279
Copp
 Martha, 148
 William, 148
Cotton
 John, 245, 246
Craft/s
 Griffin, 61, 69
Crosse
 Lawrence (Sir), 178
 Nicholas, 178
 Phillip, 178
 Crosse (Continued)
 Thomas, 178
Crossman
 Eleazer, 157
 Elizabeth, 141, 154, 156, 157, 179
 Isabel (___), 156
 John, 156 - 158, 160, 176 - 179
 John & Isabel (Moses), 156
 John (Gent.), 178
 Joseph, 251
 Joseph Sr., 157
 Martha (Billington) (Eaton), 162
 Mercy, 157
 Nathaniel, 157
 Native American, 161
 Robert Jr., 156, 157, 162
 Robert Sr., 156, 158 - 163, 166, 169, 176
 Robert Sr. & Sarah (Kingsbury), 156, 159, 160, 163, 167, 179
 Samuel, 157
 Sarah, 156
 Sarah (Kingsbury), 39, 156, 160, 162, 164
 Susanna, 157
 Thomas, 157
Crowther
 Agnes, 229
 John, 221
Crumwell
 Phillip, 90
Cudworth
 James, 279
 James (Capt.), 244
Curtis
 Elizabeth, 141
 Rebecca, 237
Cushman
 Robert, 235
 Thomas, 244, 245
D
Dalton
 Philemon, 214
Darby
 Hannah, 80
Davenport
 Richard, 210, 211
 Richard & Abigail (___), 211
De la Noy
 Philipe. See Delano, Phillip, 257
de Venables
 Roger, 79
 Sir Roger, 79
 Sir William, 79
Delano
 Mary, 242
 Phillip Sr. aka Philippe (De la Noye), 257, 274
 Thomas (De la Noye), 252, 253, 259, 272, 285
Denison
Dennison
 Daniel, 63
Derby
 Christopher, 145
 Richard, 145
Dewsbury
 Hester, 272
Dicke/Dike
 Richard, 207
Dobson
 Abraham, 221
 Donier
 Mary, 166
 Doty
 Desire, 272
 Edward (Pilgrim), 272
Dunbar
 David, 196
 Elisha, 155
Dunham
 Abigail, 243
 Abigail (Baillou), 246
 Agnes, 248
 Anne, 247
 Benjamin/Benajah, 244, 245
 Daniel, 237, 240, 241, 244, 245
 Daniel & Hannah (___), 237, 244
 Elizabeth/Elsabehe, 247
 Hannah, 237, 238, 240, 241, 244
 Humility, 242, 243
 John Jr., 243, 245
 John Sr. (Deacon), 242, 244 - 246
 John Sr. & Abigail (Baillou), 246
 Jonathan, 243, 245
 Joseph, 243
 Mehitabel, 240, 241
 Persis, 244
 Rev. Jonathan, 243
 Richard Jr., 247
 Richard, 242, 246 - 248
 Samuel, 243
 Thomas, 243
 William, 247
Dutton
 John, 247
Dwelly
 Elizabeth (Simmons), 257
 Richard, 257
Dyer
 Thomas Jr., 216
Dynes
 Thomas, 72
E
Eastman
 Dean, 36
Easton
 Henry/Henrie, 112
 John, 178
 Phillipa, 112
Eastwick
 Edward & Hester, 124
Eaton
 Barnabas, 238
 Martha (Billington), 156, 162
 Seth, 238
Ebourne
 Samuel, 92
 Edson
 Abiah, 238
 Elizabeth, 213
 Jonathan, 139
 Joseph, 155

- Josiah (Esq.), 155, 200
 Timothy, 238
- Eliot
 Rev. John, 117, 118
- Emerson
 Joseph & Mary (Lyon), 30
- Everill
 Abiel, 271
 Elizabeth (Phillips), 271
- F**
- Fairfield
 John, 228
 John Sedgley, 228
 Walter, 90, 143, 305
- Fairman
 James, 47
- Falloway
 Martha (Beal), 243
- Fargison
 John, 61
- Fearing
 Elizabeth, 44
 Israel, 44
- Felton
 Nathaniel, 94
- Fenne
 Peter, 76
 Ferrand
 Sarah, 230
- Ferry
 Charles, 109
- Field
 John, 155
- Fisher
 Anthony Sr., 159
 John, 79
 William, 79
- Fitch
 James (Capt.), 87
 Fletcher
 Sheth, 128
- Flewelline/Flewellen, 125
- Foster
 Stephen, 248
- Fowler
 Joseph, 90
 Phillip, 71
- Fox
 Susan, 23
- Franklin
 Benjamin, 26
- Frary
 John, 220
- French
 Alice, 61, 69
 Alice/Ellice, 45, 81
 Amee/Amy, 44, 61
 Anne, 61, 69
 Dorcas, 69
 Elizabeth, 41, 44, 46, 77
 Elizabeth (___), 44
 Ephraim, 43 - 45, 47, 61, 64
 Experience, 41, 43, 44, 80
 Hepzibah, 45
 Hepzibah (Phebea), 47
 Jacob, 68, 69, 77, 79
 Jacob & Susan (Warren), 68
 James, 171
 John, 69, 71
 John & Rachel (Bush), 81
 John & Sarah (Kingsbury), 170
 John Jr., 47, 48, 50
 John Sr., 43, 45, 46, 48 - 50, 56, 60
 Lidiah (Lydia), 47, 50
 Margaret, 69
 Martha, 46, 50
 Mary, 46, 61, 64, 69
 Mary (___), 64
 Patience, 47, 50
 Phoebe, 44, 46
 Phoebe (Keyes), 49
 Richard Sr., 43, 35 - 37, 50
 Richard & Elizabeth, 44
 Richard Jr., 45, 50, 81
 Richard Jr. & Miriam (Bush), 81
 Richard (1625), 69
 Robert, 77
 Samuel, 61, 63 - 65
 Sarah, 46, 50, 61
 Stephen, 203, 209
 Susan, 69, 71, 77
 Susan (Riddlesdale), 61, 68, 70
 - 72
 Susan (Warren), 72, 78
 Thomas (Father of Thomas Sr.),
 66, 68, 69, 77
- Thomas III, 61, 63, 64
 Thomas Jr., (Sgt.) (Ens.) 60 - 64,
 67, 68, 139
 Thomas Jr. (Ens.) & Mary (___),
 60, 64
 French (Cont.)
 Thomas Sr., 61, 68, 70, 77
 Thomas Sr. & Susan
 (Riddlesdale), 61, 70
 William, 66, 68, 77, 115
- Frost
 Elizabeth (Bush), 124
- Fuller
 Elizabeth, 166
 Samuel, 236
 Sarah, 137
- Fulton
 Robert, 27
- Furber
 Michael, 224
- G**
- Gage
 Benjamin, 56
 John, 57, 60
 Sarah (___) (Swett) (Keyes), 58,
 60
- Gains
 Benoni, 89
- Gallop
 John (Jno), 62
 Samuel (Capt.), 160
- Garment
 Alice, 204
 Richard, 204
- Garrison
 William Lloyd, 31
- Geer
 Thomas, 105
 Geoffrey
 Gregory, 125
- Gibson
 Jenett, 232
- Gilbert
 Henry, 22
 Prudence, 17
- Ginsburg
 Ruth Bader, 31

Goffe

Elizabeth, 103, 104
Ellen, 83, 104

Gold/Gould

John, 156

Goodenow

Mary, 124

Goodman

John, 242

Goodwin

John A., 281
Mary (Lyons), 19

Goodyear

Charles, 29

Gostlin

Thomas, 62
Gould
John, 46, 50, 156
John & Phebe (French), 50
Gostlin (Continued)
Mary (Crossman), 156

Gowdy

Abiah, 41
Graham
Rev. Sylvester, 27

Grant

Frances, 56
Zilpah P., 30

Grimke

Angelina, 31
Sarah, 31

Grisling

Winifred, 122

Gryme

Euestis, 171
John & Faith (___), 72
Marke, 72

Grymes

Richard, 73

Gulliver

Mary (Sawyer), 157

Gurdon

Brampton (Esq.), 70, 175
John, 69
John (Esq.), 69, 72, 175
Robert, 72

Guy

Nicholas, 57

H**Hadlock**

Rebecca, 86

Hale

Sarah, 33
Thomas, 81

Hall

Isabella, 122, 123, 129
Susannah (Lovett), 124
William & Rose (___), 129

Hallett

Abigail, 271
Benjamin (Esq.), 271

Halley/Hawley

Thomas, 108

Hammon

Jane, 294, 295
John & Jane (Browne), 294

Hannaford

Bridget, 111, 112

Harding,

John, 202 - 204, 206 - 209
Sarah, 210, 206

Harman

Elizabeth, 109
Olive, 293

Harris

Isaac, 199, 200
Isaac & Elizabeth, 196, 199

Harvey

Abigail, 149
Daughter, 146
Ebenezer, 143
Elizabeth (Andrews), 146, 153
Elizabeth (Willis), 183, 184
Experience, 141 - 144, 148, 149, 179
Experience (Harvey), 144
James, 146
John, 143, 145
Jonathan, 149
Joseph, 149
Martha (Copp), 148
Mary, 141 - 143, 148, 154
Nathaniel, 143
Thomas, 149
Thomas I, 144, 146, 147
Thomas Sr. (II), 144 - 147, 149
Thomas III, 142 - 144, 148

Thomas III & Experience (___), 142

Thomas IV, 143

Turner, 142, 147

William, 143 - 146, 148, 149, 151 - 153, 160

William & Joane (Hucker), 143, 149, 151

William (Dr.), 142, 147

William of Boston, 149

Harwood

Sarah (Ruggles), 196

Hawley

Thomas, 108, 114, 118, 121

Hayward

Benjamin, 179, 239
Bethia, 155
Dorcas, 141
Elisha, 143, 179, 186, 190
Elizabeth, 154, 162, 185, 191
Elizabeth (Betty), 141
Elizabeth (Crossman), 141, 154, 162
Experience, 37, 137, 140 - 142, 195
Hannah, 154, 179, 183, 184, 240
Hannah (Willis), 179, 183, 184
Isaac, 142, 154
Jael (Peterson), 238
John, 179, 181
John "of the Plain", 180, 185
Joseph, 186, 189, 190, 238, 241, 253, 254
Joseph & Mehitabel (Dunham), 238, 240
Joseph Jr., 189
Josiah, 154
Martha, 186
Mary, 141, 155, 186
Mary (Harvey), 137, 142
Mehitable, 240, 241
Mercy, 155
Moses, 138
Nathaniel Jr. (Nathan), 140 - 142, 154, 155, 179
Nathaniel III, 140 - 143, 154
Nathaniel IV, 141
Nathaniel Sr., 179 - 182, 185, 186, 190
Patience, 179
Samuel, 179
Sarah, 154, 179

- Silence/Susanna, 141
 Simeon, 141
 Susan/Susanna, 186
 Susanna (Towne), 190, 191
 Thomas, 180
 Thomas Jr. 185, 189
 Thomas Sr., 169, 181, 183 - 187,
 189, 190, 240
 Timothy, 154
- Headley/Headye**
 William, 247
- Heale**
 Dr. Giles, 296
- Heath**
 Isaac, 116
- Hedge**
 Elizabeth, 196
- Henryson**
 Goodwife, 109
- Hicks**
 Robert, 258
- Higham**
 John, 74
- Hill**
 Thankful, 108
- Hodgkins**
 Elizabeth, 181, 182, 184, 185
- Hodgman**
 Mary (Kibbe), 102
 Thomas, 100
- Hogge**
 Joane, 170
- Holbrook/e**
 John, 205, 209
 Sarah, 205
 Thomas, 207
- Holmes**
 John, 183
- Hopkins**
 Stephen, 244
- Houlden**
 Randall, 98
- House**
 Deborah, 133
- How**
 John, 47
- Howard**
 John, 189, 216
- Howard/Haward**
 John, 186, 214
- Howes**
 Thomas, 188
- Howland**
 Arthur, 245
 John, 245, 273, 277
 Zoe, 245
- Howlett**
 Thomas (Sgt.), 61, 63, 69
- Hucker**
 Joane/Joanne/Joanna, 143, 148,
 149
- Huguenin**
 John C., 20
 Mary A. (Minnie), 24
- Hull**
 Rev. Joseph, 202, 204, 205
- Humphrey**
 Jonas, 214, 216
- Hunt**
 Mercy, 19
- I**
- Illingworth**
 Grace, 229, 233
 John, 224, 229
 William, 223, 229
- Ingersoll**
 Hannah, 23
 John, 23
- Ingle**
 Margaret, 225
- Ingoldsby**
 John, 101
- Ingram**
 Edward, 91
- J**
- Jackson**
 Edmund, 101
- Jefferson**
 Thomas (US President), 27
- Jenkine**
 Edward, 188
- Jenney**
 John, 244
- Jennings**
 Ephraim (Capt.), 139
- Jetter**
 John, 295
- Jewson**
 Elizabeth, 210, 212, 215, 216
 Richard & Elizabeth (Kipping),
 212, 216
- Jies (Giles)**
 Agnes, 99
- Johnson**
 Col. Robert, 27
 Joan, 75
 John, 116
 Susanna, 80
- Jones**
 Christopher, 296
 Joseph, 157
 Mary (___), 157
 Robert, 197
 Timothy, 197
- Judson**
 Esther, 166
 Judith, 166
- K**
- Kaino**
 Susan/Susannah, 242
 Thomas, 242
- Keble**
 Richard, 76
- Kelsey**
 Hannah, 86
- Kempe**
 Agnes, 96, 99, 100
 William, 99, 100
- Kenyston**
 Mr., 90
- Key**
 Francis Scott, 27
- Keyes**
 Elias, 56
 Mary, 56
 Peter, 56
 Phoebe, 43, 46, 56, 61
 Phoebe (Mary), 56
 Rebecca, 56
 Robert, 56 - 61

- Robert & Sarah (Swett), 56, 58, 59, 60
 Sarah, 56
 Solomon, 56, 59
- Kibbe**
 Deborah, 100
 Edward, 86, 88, 100, 104
 Edward & Debora (___), 100, 103
 Edward & Mary (Partridge), 85, 100 - 103
 Edward II, 103
 Edward Jr., 100 - 102
 Elisha, 84 - 88, 91, 100, 101, 104, 105
 Elisha Jr., 86
 Elisha & Rachel (Cook/e), 86 - 89
 Elisha III (Lieut.), 87
 Elizabeth, 100
 Hannah, 100
 Isaac, 86, 88, 89, 101
 Isaac Jr., 84
 Isaac Sr., 84
 Jacob, 104
 James, 86, 88, 100
 James Allen, 84
 John, 86, 88, 89, 100, 105
 Joshua, 100
 Mary, 86, 100, 101
 Mary (___), 102
 Mary (Partridge), 85, 103
 Rachel, 83, 86 - 88, 101
 Rachel (Kibbe) Cook, 91, 100
 Rachel (Kibbe) Bush, 82
 Rebecca, 100
- Kibbe (Continued)**
 Rueben, 100
 Thomas, 86
- Kibby**
 Edward, 83, 103
- Killam**
 Lot, 105
 Jemima, 41, 42
 Lot & Jemima, 42
 Patience, 42
- King**
 Dorothy, 215
 Experience (Phillips), 216
 Hezekiah, 211
 John, 214
 Mary (Shaw), 212
 Samuel, 213
- King Philip**, 61, 119, 160, 161, 180, 182, 202, 211, 213, 279
- King/e**
 George, 106, 181
- Kingman**
 David, 155
 Elizabeth (Edson), 213
- Kingsbury**
 Abraham, 171
 Alyce, 170
 Anne, 170
 Bridget, 171
 Eleazer, 166
 Elizabeth, 39, 166, 170, 171
 Frederick John, 165, 174
 Henry/Henrie, 172
 Henry, 165, 172, 174
 Henry (age 15), 172
 James, 170, 171, 172, 173
 James I, 173
 James II, 169, 170, 173
 James II & Anne (Francis), 169, 171
 James III, 171
 James Jr., 170, 171
 John, 166, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173
 John & Elyn, 173
 John & Margaret (___), 160, 172
 Joseph II, 169
 Joseph & Millicent (Ames), 156, 166, 170, 187
 Joseph Jr., 166
 Joseph Sr., 39, 156, 158, 159, 166 - 173, 187, 214
 Lemuel, 39
 Margaret, 160
 Mary, 166, 172
 Millicent (Ames), 169, 187
 Nathaniel, 167
 Noah, 167
 Sara, 170, 171
 Sarah, 156, 159, 164, 166, 171, 172, 176, 187
 Thomas, 170, 171, 172
 William, 173, 220
- Kingsbury (de)**
 John, 173
- Kingsley**
 Freedom, 69
 John & Elizabeth (___), 69
- Kinsley**
 Sarah, 154
- Kipping**
 Elizabeth, 214, 216
 John & (___), 216
- Knight**
 Walter, 145, 208
- L**
- Lamb/e**
 Abel, 115
 Abiel, 118, 119
 Abigail, 108
 Benjamin, 115
 Caleb, 118
 Daniel, 108
 Decline, 115
 Dorothy (Harbitle/Harbottle), 118
 Elizabeth (___), 106, 118
 Harbottle, 118
 Joanna, 108
 Joanna (___), 111
 Joanna (Chapin), 109
 John, 106 - 110, 113, 115, 122
 John (of Maine), 107, 108
 John Jr., 107
 Jonathan, 110, 111
 Joshua, 108, 117, 118
 Joshua (Col.), 117
 Lydia (Wright) (Bliss) (Norton), 109, 110
 Mary, 108, 118
 Samuel, 108, 115
 Sarah, 104, 106, 108, 124
 Susanna, 115
 Thomas, 108, 121, 122
 Thomas Jr., 107, 114
 Thomas Sr., 104, 107, 108, 114 - 118, 120 - 122
 Thomas Sr. & Elizabeth (___), 113 - 115, 118, 122
- Lambe**
 Edward, 122
 Henry, 122
 John, 122
 Richard, 122
- Langworthy**
 Althea (Abbey), 24, 25
 William Andrews, 19

Larkham

Job, 81

Job & Mary (Bush), 81

Latham

Joseph & Sarah (Hayward), 142

Joseph Sr., 154

Lathrop

Mark, 238

Lawton

James, 108

Lechford

Thomas, 221

Lee

Abigail, 124

Legh

Piers III, 79

Leonard

John, 180, 253, 256

Samuel, 180

Solomon, 257

Solomon Jr. & Mary (___), 154

Thomas & James, 144

Thomas, 153

Lewis

James, 109

Lewis & Clark, 27**Libby**

Roger, 139

Lincoln

Abraham (US President), 27

LincolnElizabeth (Andrews) (Harvey)
(Street), 145, 146

Thomas, 145, 146

Thomas Sr., 160

Loker

Henry, 77

Lombard

John, 109

Lomme

John, 219

LongbothamBrian & Alice
(Maud/Mawd/Mawde), 230

Brian (Brianus), 230

Brian Jr., 230

Edward, 230

Elizabeth, 227, 229 - 231

George, 230

Gilbert (Gilebertus), 233

John, 229, 230

Richard, 229

Robert, 228, 230

Samuel, 222

Thomas, 230

Lord

Robert, 71

Lovett

Susanna, 123, 124

Lowden

Sarah (Stephenson), 100

Lucas

Samuel, 238

Lyons

Mary, 19, 30

M**MacCoone**

John, 124

Macey

George (Lt.), 146, 153, 161

Mallory

Mary, 91

Mann

Horace, 30

Mason

Agnes, 232

Alice, 232

Elizabeth, 232

Isabelle, 232

James, 232

Joan, 213

Margaret, 232

Margerie, 232

Robert, 222

Sybil, 231, 232

Thomas & Jenet (___), 231

William, 232

William & Anne (___), 232

Massasoit, 149, 152, 176**Mather**

Richard, 72

Maud/Mawd/Mawde

Alice, 226, 230

Christopher, 230

Elizabeth, 226

John, 226, 230

Margaret/Margarita, 226

Maule

Thomas, 94

Mayor

Launcelott, 74

McKinley

William, 28

Meacham

Isaac, 105, 106

Israel, 87

John (Lt.), 45, 82, 83, 86

Rachel, 85

Rachel (Kibbe), 80

Rachel (Kibbe) (Bush), 85

Merrill

John, 137

Mary, 137, 138

Metcalf

Ebenezer, 37

Michael, 166, 220

Milborne

Peter (Capt.), 115

Mirack

Thomas, 108

Mitchell

Edward, 155, 186

Experience, 185, 186, 189, 274

Hannah, 186

Mary, 190

Sarah, 185

Moore

Elizabeth (Longbotham)

(Shaw), 228

Grace, 223, 228, 229

John, 223, 229

Joseph, 223, 229

Richard, 125, 227 - 229

Morgan

Isaac, 105

Miles (Sgt.), 17, 43, 109, 311

Miles (Sgt.) & Prudence
(Gilbert), 17**Moses**

Isabel, 156

Mott

Lucretia, 31, 32

Moulton

Robert, 91, 96

Mountegue

Griffine, 128

Mullins

Alice (____), 293, 296, 297
 Elizabeth, 293, 294
 Elizabeth (Wood), 293
 Joane (Bridger), 292
 John, 292
 Joseph, 293, 294, 296, 297
 Priscilla, 17, 157, 236, 250, 260, 262, 266, 268, 270, 281, 282, 285, 291, 293, 294, 296
 Sarah, 293, 294, 296
 William & Alice (____), 268, 297
 William Jr., 293, 294, 296
 William Sr., 270, 291 - 297

Mussell

Thomas, 125

Muzzey

Robert, 63

Mychell

John, 232

N**Narracot**

James, 112
 Nash
 James, 257, 260
 Sarah (Simmons), 257, 260

Newell

Goody, 57
 Nichols
 William, 94

Norton

John, 109, 115
 Lydia (Wright) (Bliss), 107, 109, 110, 115
 Mercy, 243
 Nathaniel, 243

Nunn

Ann, 122

O**Odo I, 79****Oliver**

Goody, 98
 Mary, 90

Osborn

Thomas, 76

P**Pabodie/Paybody**

John, 270
 Mercy, 257
 William & Elisabeth (Alden), 257, 270
 William (Hon.), 182, 253, 257, 270, 285

Packard

Daile, 200
 Mary, 213
 Sarah, 200

Paddoc

Judah & Alice (Alden), 272

Paddy

William, 244

Palmer

Elizabeth (Hodgkins), 182, 185
 Rebecca, 185
 Richard, 123, 126
 William Jr., 182, 185
 William Sr., 184, 185

Parker

Elisha, 88
 Hope, 91
 John, 86, 88, 89
 Mary (Kibbe), 88
 Thomas, 100

Parson

Nicholas, 125

Partridge

James, 103
 John & Jane (Hogg), 103
 Mary, 85, 100, 103
 Ralph, 103

Patrick

Ebenezer, 38

Patten

Elizabeth, 75

Patten/Patthey

Robert, 76

Paulden

William, 232

Peake

Christopher, 61, 69

Pearson

Mary (French), 50
 Rowley Stephen, 46

Pease

Agnes, 18
 Ebenezer, 81
 Ephriam (Capt.), 18
 Isaac Jr., 44
 Jacob, 81
 James, 106
 John Jr., 105, 106
 John Sr. (Capt.), 105, 158
 Jonathan, 105
 Martha, 82
 Robert, 105
 Sybil, 18

Peecke

Mr., 171

Pendelton

Bryan, 128

Penny

Cicely, 112
 Henry, 112

Pepe the Fat, 79**Perkins**

Jonathan, 155
 Martha (Leonard), 154
 Nathan, 154
 Rev. William, 207
 William, 47, 48

Peterson

Jael, 154, 238

Petty

Joseph, 203

Phelps

Dorothy, 86
 Hannah, 86
 Henry, 94

Phillips

Abigail, 213, 216
 Alice, 210, 212, 213, 215, 218
 Benjamin, 213, 216
 Caleb, 213, 215
 Elizabeth, 213
 Elizabeth (Jewson), 210, 215
 Experience, 213
 Hannah, 213
 Henry, 212, 215, 216
 Joshua, 213, 216
 Martin, 212, 214, 215
 Nicholas & Abigail (Sewell), 212
 Nicholas & Elizabeth (Jewson/Jenson), 210

- Nicholas (Deacon), 167, 210, 212
- 215, 218
Richard, 213, 216
Sarah, 143
William, 271
- Phipps**
Sir William, 157, 160
- Pickman/Pitman**
Elizabeth (Eastwick), 124
- Pierpont**
Rev. John, 30
- Pitkin**
Elisha (Esq.), 39
Elizabeth, 37
Elizabeth (Kingsbury), 39
George (Lt. Col.), 87
- Pittee**
Joseph, 202
- Pointing**
Elizabeth, 178
- Pollard**
William, 170
- Pomeroy**
Rebecca (___), 44
- Poole**
Edward, 211
John, 153
Joseph, 211, 212
Joseph & Elizabeth (Shaw), 211, 212
- Pope**
Thomas, 245
- Potter**
Rev. Elam, 18
- Potum**
Charles, 128
- Powers**
William, 139
- Pratt**
Benajah, 244
Hannah, 211
Joshua, 244, 274
- Prence**
Thomas (Gov.), 279
- Price**
Benjamin, 141
Walter, 92, 94
- Prince**
Thomas, 145
- Prudden**
Rev. Nehemiah, 17, 18
- Pryer**
Sarah, 154
- Pudney**
John, 91, 96
- Purdy**
Jafrey, 76
- Q**
Queen Elizabeth I, 106
Queen Victoria, 28
- R**
- Ramsdale**
Jacob, 138
- Randall**
Abraham, 100
Azubah, 138
- Ransome**
Col. Leander, 22
- Rawlings**
Thomas, 117
- Rea**
Joshua, 93
- Redenbaugh**
Margaret, 225
- Reed**
Hannah, 204, 205
Mary, 200
Samuel, 154
William, 205
- Revet**
Thomas, 76
- Reynolds**
William, 244
- Richards**
Bethsheba, 202
Josiah, 198
William, 218
- Richardson**
Miriam, 196
- Richmond**
John, 186
- Rickard**
Giles Jr., 244
- Riddlesdale/Rydysdale**
Amy, 74, 76
Dorcas, 68, 70, 72, 73
Elizabeth, 73, 74, 76
Grace, 74, 76
Harry, 76
Henry Jr., 73
Henry Sr., 71 - 74
Henry Sr. & Joan (___), 71, 73
Jane, 74, 76
Jasper, 74 - 76
Japser & Elizabeth (___), 74, 76
Joan, 72, 73
John, 71 - 73, 75, 76
John & Dorcas (___), 72
Julyan, 73
Peter, 74, 76
Richard, 72 - 74, 76
Robert, 73, 74, 76
Robert Edward, 75
Rose (Brand), 73
Sarah, 72
Susan, 68, 71, 72, 77
Thomas, 72 - 74, 76
William, 75, 76
- Roberts**
Dorothy, 39
- Robinson**
Increase, 153
Rev. John, 259
- Rogers**
Rev. Nathaniel, 70
- Ropes**
George, 90
- Rudland**
Wylliam, 76
- Rumford**
Benjamin, 27
- Russell**
Cassie, 19
George, 188
- Ryvet/Ryvett**
Thomas, 75 - 77
- S**
- Sachem Tispequin**, 280
- Salter**
Hannah, 212

Saltonstall

Sir Richard, 57

Samway

Alice, 173

Sanders/Saunders

Ann (____), 123, 127, 128

Elizabeth, 127

Grace, 123, 124, 126, 127

John Jr., 128

John Sr. (Lt.), 123, 125 - 128

John Sr. (Lt.) & Ann (____), 123, 127, 128

Sarah, 127

Thomas, 128

Sanderson

James, 139

Sawnfurthe

John, 233

Scott

Thomas, 63

Sever

Christopher, 198

Shapin

David & Hephsibah (French), 50

Shapley/Shaplin

David, 47

Shaw/e

Abigail, 199, 211, 238

Abraham, 211, 213, 217 - 224, 227 - 230, 234

Alice, 199, 211, 216, 233

Alice (Phillips), 216

Ann, 231

Benjamin, 211

Bridget (Best), 217, 218

Christopher, 227, 233, 234

Ebenezer, 200, 211

Elizabeth, 199, 211, 212, 216, 222, 230

Elizabeth (Longbottom), 230

Grace, 218, 231

Hannah, 200, 211

Isabell, 233

James, 233

Janet or Jenet, 221

John, 197, 200, 218, 233

John & Alice (Phillips), 202

John Jr., 211

Rev. John, 195

John Sr. (Lieut.), 210 - 213, 217, 218, 221, 233, 234

Jonas, 222, 223, 228, 233

Joseph, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 228

Joseph & Judith (Whitmarsh), 194, 197, 202, 211

Joseph Jr., 196, 199

Joseph Sr., 197, 199 - 203, 210, 211, 214, 215

Judith, 197, 199, 203

Margaret, 233

Maria/Mary, 218

Martha, 196, 199, 201, 218, 221 - 223, 228, 229, 238

Mary, 211, 218, 228

Nicholas, 211

Ruth, 199

Sarah, 222, 223, 227 - 229

Susan/ Susannah, 222, 223, 228, 229

Sybil, 231

Thomas Jr., 219, 221, 222, 227, 228, 231, 234

Thomas Jr. & Elizabeth (Longbotham), 222, 227 - 231

Thomas Sr., 222, 227 - 234

Zachariah (Deacon), 200

Zacchaeus/Zechus, 197

Sheldrake

George, 170

John & Joan, 72

Martha, 72

Shermin

Rev. Jacob, 138

Shipman

C.M., 19

Shirlife/Shurtleff

William, 245

Shurtleff

Mary Ann, 41

Siday

William, 77

Simmons

Aaron, 257 - 260

Elizabeth, 257, 259, 260

John, 257, 259, 260

Simmons (Cont.)

Mary, 157, 237, 254, 257, 259, 271

Mary Rebecca, 251, 252

Moses Jr., 257, 259

Moses Sr. (Esq.), 183, 252, 257-260, 271

Patience (Barstow), 257, 259

Rebecca, 257, 259

Sarah, 257, 260

Sarah (____), 258, 259

Simms

Amelia, 26

Simonzoen/Symonson

William, 259

Skinner

Thomas, 20, 198

Slafflin

Michele, 92

Slawson

George, 187

Slocum

Anthony, 146, 153

Small

John, 94

Smith

Agnes, 227, 231

Dorothy, 86

Francis, 215

George, 69

Henry S., 24

John (Capt.), 126

Mary (French), 64

Pallatiah, 254

Rebecca (____), 69

Robert, 61

Stephen, 115

Thomas, 69

William, 56, 58, 60

Smythe

Bridget, 73

Symond, 73

Symond & Alice (____), 73

Snow

Benjamin, 252

Bethia, 179

Eleazer, 197

Elizabeth, 252

Hannah, 196, 197

Isaac, 196, 200

James, 196

Jonathan, 244

Joseph, 199, 252, 253, 256

Ruth, 196

William, 252

Sosowen Sagamore, 125

Soule

George, 257

John, 257, 259

Souther

Mary, 218

Nathan, 244

Nathaniel, 218

Southward

Edward, 260

Southworth

Constant (Ens.), 258, 272, 280

Mary, 272

Thomas, 245, 246, 279

Speght

Alicia/Anne, 230

Spendler

Alice, 99

Sprague

James, 44

Samuel, 254, 256, 260

William, 169

Stacy

Susanna, 61

Stanbye

John, 73

Standish

Alexander, 181, 272

Alexander & Sarah (Alden),
272, 285

Miles (Capt.), 268, 270, 272, 278,
284, 285

Staniford

John, 101

Stanton

Elizabeth Cady, 32

Stebbins

Miss ___, 107, 113

Samuel Wright, 108

Steele

Orlo, 19

Stockbridge

John, 244

Stone

Moses, 138

Simeon (Deacon), 138

Strange

John, 231

Stratton

John, 62

Street

Elizabeth (Andrews) (Harvey),
145

Francis, 145

Mary, 145

Sutton

Benjamin, 104

Richard, 259

Swan

Thomas, 118

Swayne

Robert, 224

Swett

Benjamin, 59

Dorcas, 59

John, 58 - 60

John Jr., 59

Joseph, 59

Phebe, 59

Phoebe (Benton), 59, 60

Sara/Sarah, 59, 60

Stephen, 59

Swift

Alexander, 225

Isabella, 224, 225

Richard, 225

William, 225

Symons

Moses, 183, 258, 259

Symonson

Moyses. See Simmons, Moses

Sr. (Esq.)

T

Tailor

Michell, 223

Talbey

Henry, 92

Terry

Ebenezer Dr., 307

Ephraim, 89

Hannah (Morgan), 308

Nathaniel (Maj.), 87

Roxa, 41

Samuel (Capt.), 308

Samuel Jr., 105

Samuel Sr., 105, 106

Tewksbury

Henry, 148

Martha (Copp) (Harvey), 148

Thacher

Rev. Thomas, 215

Thayer

Joanna, 156

Nathaniel, 149

Thomas

Lucy, 196

Noah, 196

Rowland, 109

Thompson

Edmund, 91

Thrasher

John, 157

Thresher

Mercy (Crossman), 162

Tibbit/Tibbot

Walter, 207, 208

Widow Jone (Hill), 206, 207

Tilley

Edward, 242

John, 242

Tilson

Elizabeth, 244

Tirrell

Gideon, 211

Gideon & Hannah (___), 211,
212

William, 211

Tisdal

John, 244

Titticut

Peter, 189

Tomson

Jacob, 141

John, 280

Thomas, 76

Tompson

Anthony, 76

Torrey

William (Capt.), 202, 216

Towne

Peter, 190, 191

Susanna, 185, 190

Thomas, 46, 50, 190, 191

Thomas & Sarah (French), 46, 50

- William, 190, 191
 William & Joanna (Blessing), 191
- Tracey
 Charles E., 24
- Trusler
 Thomas, 99
- Tucker
 Robert, 207, 208
- Turbutt
 Peter, 125
- U
- Underwood
 Ellen, 247
- V
- Vassall
 John, 305, 308
- Verne
 Hilliard, 94
- Vigorus
 John, 72
- Vinson
 Thomas, 218
- W
- Wade
 Jonathan, 65
- Wakeman
 Samuel, 117
- Walker
 David Davis, 132
 George Herbert Jr. (Herbie), 132
 Dorothy, 132
 George Herbert Jr. "Bert", 132
 Nathaniel, 248
- Waller
 Agnes, 173
- Walton
 Joan, 73
 Richard, 73
 William, 73
- Warner
 Daniel, 139, 197
 John, 44
- Warren
 John, 73, 78, 79
 Julyan, 78, 79
 Katherine, 77, 78
 Lucy, 80
 Nathaniel, 245
 Susan, 77, 78
 Thomas, 78, 79
 William, 77, 78
 William & Katherine (____), 77, 78
- Washburn
 Eleazer, 197
 Hannah, 197
 John, 180
 Noah, 197, 199
 Rebecca, 238
- Washington
 George (US President), 22, 26, 27, 80
- Watson
 George, 245
- Webster
 Nicholas, 232
 Noah, 27
- Weissmuller
 Edward, 24
- Weld
 Rev. Habijah, 196
 Sarah, 196
- Wells
 David (Col.), 139
- Wendall
 Richard, 73
 Thomas & Susan (____), 73
- Weston
 Thomas, 236, 295
- Wheeler
 Randall, 138
 Zena (Capt.), 139
- Wheelock
 Jean, 225
- Whipple
 John, 65
- Whisson
 Margaret, 170
- White
 Ebenezer, 213
 Hannah, 252
 Hannah (Phillips), 216
- Lambert, 24
 Nicholas, 153
 Samuel, 209
- Whitman
 Benjamin, 197
 David, 155
 Nicholas, 195, 197
 Sarah, 195
 Susanna, 182
 Zachary, 239
- Whitmarsh
 Alice, 204
 Alice (Garment), 204
 Deborah, 202, 211
 Ebenezer (Deacon), 202, 203
 Ezra, 202, 203
 Hannah, 211
 Hannah (Washburn), 197
 James, 202, 203
 Jane, 202, 204
 John III/Increase, 202, 203
 John Jr., 201 - 206, 209, 211
 John Jr. & Sarah (Harding), 201, 203, 204, 209
 John Sr., 203 - 206
 Judith, 199, 201, 202, 211
 Mary, 202, 203
 Nicholas, 205, 211
 Onesiphorus, 204, 205
 Richard, 203 - 205
 Ruth, 202, 203
 Sarah, 202, 203, 211
 Sarah (Harding), 201, 203
 Simon, 202, 205
 Simon Jr., 205
 Zachariah, 202, 203
- Whitney
 Eli, 26
- Wild
 John, 47
- Wiley
 Elizabeth, 145
- Willard
 Emma, 30
 Rev. Samuel, 271
- Willet
 Mr., 161
- Willett
 Thomas, 244

Willis

Benjamin, 182, 183, 184
 Comfort, 180, 182 - 184
 Elizabeth, 149, 182
 Elkanah, 183
 Francis, 183
 Hannah, 179, 181 - 184, 186
 John Jr., 181, 182, 184
 John Sr. (Deacon), 179, 181 - 186
 Jonathan, 182 - 184
 Joseph (Sr.), 182 - 184
 Joseph Jr., 183, 184
 Lawrence, 183
 Nathanael, 183, 184
 Nathaniel, 182 - 184
 Sarah, 179, 182

Williston

Consider (Capt.), 138
 Rhoda, 138

Wilson

Anne, 224

Winslow

Edward (Gov.), 156, 186, 236,
 258, 274

Edward Jr., 198

John, 258

Gilbert, 258

Isaac (Judge), 155

Josiah (Esq.)(Gov.), 161, 253,
 258, 280, 281

Josiah (Maj.), 280

Kenelm, 258

Winterflod

John, 74

Winthrop

John Jr., 62, 63, 69

John Sr. (Gov.), 66, 69, 70, 104,
 106, 114, 116, 150, 165,
 172, 173, 175

Wise

Mary, 118

Wood

Elizabeth, 293

John, 295

John & Joan (Taylor), 293

Jonas, 244

Priscilla (Dendy), 293

Sarah, 293

Stephen, 246

Wood-Atwood

Nichol, 293

Woodward

John, 156

Sarah (Crossman), 162

Woodworth

Mary, 257

Walter, 257

Wormwall

Esther/ Hester, 243

Wright

Lydia, 107, 109, 110, 115

Samuel, 109, 115

Wyatt

John, 72

